

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2101 – 2200**

### **Magma Emperor Sword - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2101 - Magma Emperor Sword**

#### **Chapter 2101 - Magma Emperor Sword**

“Even if you all refuse to believe me, it remains the truth. Qing Xuantian is a through and through despicable and vile individual. He is a hypocrite that has done all sorts of evil behind people’s backs.”

“Our world and this world is separated by a boundary energy. Under normal circumstances, it would simply have been impossible for me to come to this world. Do you all know how I managed to get here? It was precisely Qing Xuantian that helped me get here.”

“You all must be wondering why Qing Xuantian would help me come to this world, right? Actually, the reason is very simple. It’s because the Divine Body that he wanted was sealed in our world. And I, I was able to help him obtain it.”

“I handed over the sealed Divine Body to Qing Xuantian, and he helped me get into the Holy Land of Martialism so that I could become its ruler. That was the condition of the exchange between Qing Xuantian and I.”

“However, never would I have imagined that Qing Xuantian was such a despicable man. He actually decided to go back on our agreement, and started to attack me after obtaining the special constitution from me. He is truly despicable to the extreme.”

“Yet, you all still deem him to be a hero. Pah! He is nothing more than a hypocrite!!!” The Magma Emperor shouted furiously.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that the Four Great Divine Beasts had all grown silent upon hearing what the Magma Emperor said.

Their beast faces were growing more and more ugly. Complicated and distressed expressions filled their gazes. In fact, even their enormous bodies were trembling. They had truly believed what the Magma Emperor said.

“A bunch of nonsense. Senior Qing Xuantian is not someone that you can slander.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng smashed his fist into the Magma Emperor. Then, continuous fists began to land onto the Magma Emperor’s body.

“Damned brat, you’re planning to eliminate this Emperor after hearing what you wanted to hear, is that it?”

“Sure enough, you are the same as that Qing Xuantian. You humans are the most despicable creatures.”

“To make you all slaves is an act of charity to you all. You should all be killed. All you humans should be erased from this world.”

“Hey! Four Symbols Divine Body, why are you all still standing there? Quickly, come and help me; help me eliminate this brat. Could it be that you all are still not tired of being taken advantage of by Qing Xuantian, and want this brat to take advantage of you too?” The Magma Emperor snarled repeatedly.

However, the Four Great Divine Beasts refused to answer it. They were completely silent. It was as if they had experienced an enormous shock.

“Fools. You all are truly foolish. Go and die. With how foolish you all are, only death awaits you.”

“You all will not be able to live for much longer. You were originally a Divine Body, and not actual lives. You all are merely a part of Qing Xuantian that he abandoned. How could you possibly be able to live for long?”

“You all think that you’ve become Divine Beasts? A bunch of bullshit! You all are inferior to monstrous beasts, ferocious beasts and even the lowliest animals.”

“You all will not be able to live for much longer. If you refuse to work with me, I will not tell you all the method to extend your lifespans. Soon, you all will die,” Seeing that the Four Great Divine Beasts were ignoring it, the Magma Emperor started to insult them.

“Shut your mouth,” Chu Feng’s fists grew more and more heavy. His punches bombarded the Magma Emperor’s body of flame into disintegration.

Finally, the Magma Emperor's enormous body was finally completely destroyed. The dispersed flames returned to that Incomplete Ancestral Armament sword.

Chu Feng grabbed at that Incomplete Ancestral Armament sword.

“Boom~~~”

Upon holding the sword, the sky started to change color, and an explosion sounded.

“Rumble~~~”

Following that, a pillar of flame shot toward the sky from the sword Chu Feng held. It pierced through the clouds and straight into the endless skies.

Soon, the clouds were evaporated. Even the vast and boundless sky was burned blazing red.

“This is...” At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts that were feeling very depressed were also attracted by that scene. They opened their mouths and said, “Forced submission.”

That's right. Chu Feng was forcibly making that Incomplete Ancestral Armament submit to him. When a weapon was unwilling to submit, a cultivator could, if he or she possessed sufficient strength, use their power to force the weapon to surrender to them.

It was an invisible battle, a battle that bystanders could not see. However, Chu Feng was actually using his powers to teach the Magma Emperor within the Incomplete Ancestral Armament. He was forcing it into submission.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, loud explosions sounded from the skies nonstop. Turning toward the sky, the Four Great Divine Beasts discovered that the flames that were shot into the sky were flowing back down with extremely rapid speed.

Finally, the flames gathered in one place and turned into a pillar of flame again. The pillar of flame struck down from the heavenly dome and poured into the Incomplete Ancestral Armament Chu Feng held in his hand.

Afterwards, the sky suddenly became tranquil. Even the Four Great Divine Beasts held their breaths.

The reason for that was because that extremely ferocious Incomplete Ancestral Armament, although still emitting the Magma Emperor's fiery flames, did not possess any trace of hostility toward Chu Feng.

"Splash~~~"

After a while, loud rumbling sounds began to be heard in that tranquil region. The rumbling noise grew louder and louder.

It was the sound of water!!!

It was the waves. Whilst the seawater in the area had been evaporated, the seawater in the surrounding region had not. At that moment, they were crashing toward that empty region with a might seemingly capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng brandished the Incomplete Ancestral Armament he held in his hand. His body subsequently began to rotate.

"Rumble~~~"

In the blink of an eye, a blade ray covered in flames was shot into the surroundings like a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses.

That blade ray was so powerful that it evaporated the massive incoming waves and beat back the following waves.

"Chu Feng, it's a success? You've actually managed to subdue that Incomplete Ancestral Armament?" The Four Great Divine Beasts landed beside Chu Feng. They were still all looking at the Incomplete Ancestral Armament with gazes filled with disbelief. At that moment, it was as if they had forgotten all the unpleasantness from earlier.

"Mn. However, it remains that this Incomplete Ancestral Armament is controlled by the Magma Emperor. As such, I am only able to forcibly subdue it and make it recognize me as its master, but cannot make it enter absolute submission," Chu Feng said.

“In that case, not only did you manage to subdue that Incomplete Ancestral Armament, you also managed to subdue the Magma Emperor?” Hearing those words, the Four Great Divine Beasts revealed even more marvelous gazes.

“No, it cannot be considered submitted. It is unwilling to serve me. It is merely being suppressed by my power,” Chu Feng said.

“How could it not be considered to be the case? It is going to be used by you. Thus, it is yours now,” The White Tiger said excitedly, “Chu Feng, you should name that Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“I’ve already thought of a name. It’ll be called the Magma Emperor Sword,” Chu Feng looked to the Four Great Divine Beasts and said, “Seniors, what do you all think about the name?”

“Magma Emperor Sword?!”

The Four Great Divine Beasts were all startled to hear that name. After all, the Magma Emperor possessed a special significance to them.

However, when they saw the Magma Emperor Sword that was emitting fiery flames acting so obediently in Chu Feng’s hands, they smiled at ease and replied in unison, “That is a great name.”

“It’s decided then,” Chu Feng put the Magma Emperor Sword away.

“Chu Feng, I had originally thought that I knew you extremely well. However, never did I expect that I still do not know you well enough. Boy, you have truly astonished us,” The Azure Dragon said. The other three Divine Beasts also nodded their heads.

“Seniors, if you all are to praise me like this, I will grow conceited,” At that moment, Chu Feng was also very happy and smiling brightly.

However, he was secretly using his Heaven’s Eyes to carefully examine the Four Great Divine Beasts’ bodies.

Chu Feng did not consider the words spoken by the Magma Emperor earlier to be complete nonsense. Actually... Chu Feng trusted the Magma Emperor’s words slightly.

Actually, the reason why Chu Feng had allowed the Magma Emperor to finish saying those things was precisely because he wanted to know about those things.

The reason for that was because he was also very curious as to why Qing Xuantian had decided to separate the Four Great Divine Beasts from his body.

After all, Divine Powers were powers that countless people yearned for in their dreams. If one could gain great control over one's Divine Power, it would become an extremely strong assisting power.

Over the years, Chu Feng had seen many Divine Bodies. However, he felt that Qing Xuantian's Four Symbols Divine Body was the strongest he had ever seen.

The reason for that was because the Divine Bodies of other people were generally only a single sort of power. However, the Four Symbols Divine Body should possess four different powers; being respectively strength, speed, defense and healing. Those four powers could simply be said to be perfect.

There shouldn't be a reason for Qing Xuantian to renounce such a powerful Divine Power.

Unless... what the Magma Emperor said was the truth.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2102 - Moon Immortal Vs. Hall Master**

If what the Magma Emperor said was the truth, then, as the Four Great Divine Beasts were born so long ago, they should be near the end of their lifespans too.

That was precisely what Chu Feng wanted to determine with his Heaven's Eyes.

However... after Chu Feng examined them with his Heaven's Eyes, he did not discover any abnormalities; he did not discover any issues with the bodies of the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Thus, Chu Feng was bewildered; he didn't know whether what the Magma Emperor had declared was the truth or not. Thus, he was unable to ascertain whether Qing Xuantian had deceived the Four Great Divine Beasts, nor could he be certain that it was Qing Xuantian that had released the Magma Emperor.

The truth was unable to be determined.

“Chu Feng.”

“Although your actual cultivation is that of a rank seven Martial Emperor, the current you is capable of fighting against rank two Half Martial Ancestors.”

“On top of that... with that Magma Emperor Sword, the Dark Hall's Hall Master is definitely not going to be a match for you.”

“Thus, it is time for you to return to the Holy Land of Martialism to settle everything,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said to Chu Feng.

They were very happy, and had forgotten about what the Magma Emperor had declared. They had managed to completely break free from their depressed state of mind.

Although the delight that they revealed originated from their hearts, Chu Feng felt that they were deliberately hiding their sadness from earlier.

Actually, Chu Feng was capable of understanding it. As they were a Divine Body, they also knew that Qing Xuantian should be inseparable from them. Yet, Qing Xuantian had decided to separate from them.

Furthermore, even though it would be very difficult for the Four Great Divine Beasts to live after losing their physical bodies to seal the Magma Emperor, Qing Xuantian was totally capable of bringing them away with him after turning them into Secret Skills.

After all, he was capable of creating bodies for them before. Thus, he would most definitely be able to recreate bodies for the Four Great Divine Beasts. There was no reason for him to seal them into various locations.

In short, if Qing Xuantian had truly wanted to bring the Four Great Divine Beasts away with him, he would have been totally capable of doing so.

However, he had left them behind. This meant that there must have been a reason for him to do so.

The Four Great Divine Beasts were no fools. Thus, they had naturally also managed to guess why Qing Xuantian wanted to abandon them.

Merely... Qing Xuantian was the person that they trusted the most. As such, they did not wish to raise doubts about Qing Xuantian.

The reason for that was because they would still be willing to serve Qing Xuantian should they be able to return to his side. To them, Qing Xuantian was their true master.

Thus, this matter was rather complicated.

Seeing that the Four Great Divine Beasts did not mention the matter, Chu Feng did not bother to ask about it either. Instead, with a smile on his face, he said, "In that case, I will return to the Holy Land of Martialism with seniors."

After the matter was decided, Chu Feng entered the spatial crack together with the Four Great Divine Beasts to return to the Holy Land of Martialism.

At the beginning, Chu Feng was worried for the Four Great Divine Beasts' enormous bodies. After all, they were simply too big. In the spatial crack, they would have to avoid the dangers to survive. If one's body was too big, it would not be beneficial toward one's travel through a spatial crack.

However, after reaching the spatial crack, the Four Great Divine Beasts' bodies all began to shrink in size. They Shrank to a size similar to Chu Feng's.

After they were able to easily control their bodies to dodge the dangers, the frightening spatial crack was simply nothing to fear for them. After all, with the strength of the Four Great Divine Beasts, it was extremely easy for them to dodge the lightning and violent winds in the spatial crack.

As for Chu Feng... he was able to pass through the spatial crack when he was a rank four Martial Emperor. And now, he was a rank seven Martial Emperor. Passing through the spatial crack had naturally become even easier for him.

Although the frightening spatial crack was no longer a problem for Chu Feng, there were still many worries in Chu Feng's heart.



For example, he was worried about where Zi Ling was, and whether or not she was safe.

For example, he was worried about whether the Moon Immortal was capable of defeating the Dark Hall's Hall Master, and whether or not she would be captured and refined should she not be able to defeat the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

If the Moon Immortal were to die, it would naturally be a pity. However, if the Moon Immortal were to die, Su Rou and Su Mei would also end up dying. That was something Chu Feng would not be able to accept.

However, what Chu Feng was most worried about was that, while he had gained the strength to confront the Dark Hall's Hall Master, everything would be of no use should he fail to find the Transmogrification Gate.

After all, the Transmogrification Gate was always on the move, and Chu Feng had given the key to the Transmogrification Gate to the Compass Immortal.

Even though Chu Feng had left an imprint on the Transmogrification Gate before leaving, he had discovered when he left that the further away he was from the Transmogrification Gate, the weaker his perception of the imprint would be. When Chu Feng arrived at the spatial crack and met the Compass Immortal, he was simply unable to sense the imprint at all.

Thus, the only way for Chu Feng to find the Transmogrification Gate was to quickly return to the place where the Transmogrification Gate had been before he left, and search for the Transmogrification Gate there.

Merely... he did not know how fast the Transmogrification Gate would move. Thus, he was uncertain whether he would be able to sense the Transmogrification Gate's location from the place where he had left that day.

.....

Somewhere in the Holy Land of Martialism. The earth was shattering, and mountains were subsiding. Many energy ripples were sweeping across the land, causing dust and thick smoke to rise.

Filling the sky were thick and solid lightning bolts, surging violent winds and black clouds that covered an area of tens of thousands of miles.

That place no longer looked like a world of humans. Instead, it looked more like a purgatory. That place... was a battlefield.

A battlefield between Half Martial Ancestors.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, you’ve taken so many innocent lives. Today, I will absolutely make you pay for your crimes.”

Su Rou and Su Mei stood in the sky and were staring down below with their sharp gazes.

As their clothes fluttered in the wind, their surroundings became very frightening. However, the two beauties were completely unphased by their frightening surroundings. At that moment, they were like celestial fairies within purgatory.

To be exact, they were not Su Rou and Su Mei. Rather, they were the Moon Immortal.

The Moon Immortal’s aura was deep and resounding. She was a true rank one Half Martial Ancestor and Boundless Ancestral-level martial power covered her.

“Moon Immortal, you should first determine the situation before speaking such boasting words. The current you is unable to even save yourself. Yet, you actually still dare to threaten me?”

An ice-cold voice sounded. Suddenly, the black clouds down below started to disperse. As the earth reappeared, six huge monsters appeared together.

It was the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Merely, this time around, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had turned into six huge monsters.

To be exact, only one of them was the actual body. It was the one that had spoken earlier. As for the other five, they were merely clones. However, they also emitted the aura of rank one Half Martial Ancestors.

“It is only your battle power that has managed to reach the Half Martial Ancestor level. You have yet to become an actual Half Martial Ancestor. Even if you’ve used your demonic technique to disguise your aura to that of a Half Martial Ancestor, you remain only a Martial Emperor, and are still incapable of

controlling Ancestral-level martial power. Thus, you can stop trying to deceive yourself.”

“To Half Martial Ancestors, Martial Emperors will collapse at the first blow. You want to rely on your numbers to defeat me? You are simply daydreaming,” The Moon Immortal mocked.

“Is that so? In that case, let me experience exactly how powerful you, an actual Half Martial Ancestor, are.”

Suddenly, coldness flashed through the Dark Hall’s Hall master’s sinister eyes. Then, his five clones all soared into the sky and began to unleash attacks at the Moon Immortal.

“Humph.”

The Moon Immortal was not afraid in the slightest. She snorted coldly, then waved her sleeves. Boundless Ancestral-level martial power surged forth, forming ferocious giant beasts that confronted the five clones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Fiery blazes filled the sky and the region was covered in destruction once again.

The five clones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master were all enormous in size. Furthermore, they all emitted the aura of rank one Half Martial Ancestors. However, they did not possess Ancestral-level martial power. Instead, they were using Emperor-level martial power.

As for the Moon Immortal, even though she was faced with many enemies by herself, she remained an actual rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Regardless of how powerful Emperor-level martial power might be, it would still be no match for Ancestral-level martial power. Thus, not only was the Moon Immortal not at a disadvantage, she was even slightly holding the upper hand in the battle.

“Hehe...”

However, even though his clones were clearly at a disadvantage, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master not only did not show any concern, he even laughed strangely. Then, he closed his eyes, as if he were sleeping.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2103 - Two Hopes**

Darkness and light began to interweave with one another. A vortex of light and darkness was formed. The energy of the vortex began to wreak havoc through the world, destroying everything in its path.

The battle between the Moon Immortal and the Dark Hall's Hall Master was truly infinitely close to being able to cause the destruction of the entire world.

To the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, something like this was simply unprecedented.

Logically, no one should be able to approach the battlefield. However, there were several hundreds of millions of people observing the battle.

The Elf King, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Xian Miaomiao and the others were all here. Even the Compass Immortal was here.

The reason why they were able to observe the battle at such a close range and not be affected by it was because they were in the Transmogrification Gate.

In fact, it was not a coincidence that the Dark Hall's Hall Master and the Moon Immortal were fighting in this place. Although it was very unimaginable, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had discovered the Transmogrification Gate through special means.

Most frighteningly, not only did the Dark Hall's Hall Master find the Transmogrification Gate, he also possessed the means to breach the Transmogrification Gate.

His five clones all contained special power that could break the indestructable and undiscoverable Transmogrification Gate.

Fortunately, the Moon Immortal had made a timely arrival. Else, the Transmogrification Gate would've definitely been breached by the Dark Hall's Hall Master. At that time, the several hundred million people that were hiding

in the Transmogrification Gate would definitely have been killed by the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Is that the legendary Moon Immortal? That Moon Immortal that has been hidden in the Moonlight Maze the entire time? Never would I have expected the Moon Immortal to be two beautiful young women."

"Fool! That is Lady Moon Immortal! Don't you spout such blasphemy!"

"Yes, yes, yes."

"Lady Moon Immortal is so powerful. As expected from a Half Martial Ancestor-level expert. The Dark Hall's Hall Master will not be able to escape from this. We are saved."

Practically no one among the hundreds of millions of people were able to clearly see the battle between the Dark Hall's Hall Master and the Moon Immortal.

Thus, they could only speculate in their excitement, and determine how powerful the two fighters were from the energy ripples wreaking havoc through their surroundings.

At that moment, it was the Moon Immortal with her Ancestral-level martial power that held the upper hand. The Ancestral-level martial power that she controlled was radiating bright light all around. It was like a sword of justice that cut down the darkness in this area, bringing hope and light to the crowd.

However, the Elf King was frowning. Contained within his deep gaze was unease.

His uneasy gaze was not locked onto the battle in the sky, the battle between the Moon Immortal and the Dark Hall's Hall Master's five clones.

Instead, his uneasy gaze was locked onto the Dark Hall's Hall Master that was sitting on the ground with his eyes closed like he had fallen into a deep sleep.

"So you've also noticed it," The Heaven Reaching Immortal arrived beside the Elf King.

"The Dark Hall's Hall Master is extremely confident in himself. I keep feeling that something is amiss. Yet, I am unable to make out much of anything."

You're a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, are you able to determine anything from this?"

"Although I do not wish to admit it, the Dark Hall's Hall Master's world spirit techniques surpass my own. I am unable to determine anything either," The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

"How could that be?" Hearing those words, the Elf King's frown grew even more tense. After all, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was the number one world spiritist in the Holy Land of Martialism. If even he could not make anything of the Dark Hall's Hall Master's actions, then the Dark Hall's Hall Master would truly be too powerful.

"It is precisely because I am unable to see through anything that it's fishy," The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

"What do you mean by that?" The Elf King asked.

The Heaven Reaching Immortal did not speak of what he had in mind, and instead asked the Elf King, "Those five clones of his were not formed with spirit power. Instead, they contain some sort of special power, a power that could break my Transmogrification Gate."

"Although I do not know where he obtained that power, it remains that he obtained that power."

"However... his actual body is covered with a layer of spirit formations that even I cannot see through."

"Why would he cover his body with a layer of spirit formations for no reason?"

"There must be a secret that he's trying to hide," The Elf King said.

"That's right. He is deliberately hiding something. Unfortunately, even if we managed to discover it, there is nothing that we can do."

"Right now, we can only resign ourselves to fate, and place all of our hopes on the Moon Immortal," The Heaven Reaching Immortal sighed.

They were existences standing at the apex of the Holy Land of Martialism. However, in this battle that concerned the future of the Holy Land of

Martialism, they were unable to do anything. Naturally, they would feel very depressed.

“No, we still have another hope,” The Elf King said.

“You’re talking about Chu Feng?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked.

“Mn,” The Elf King nodded.

“I’ve heard from that Compass Immortal that the spatial crack Chu Feng went through was a vicious type that contained all sorts of danger. The possibility of Chu Feng being able to pass through that spatial crack is extremely small.”  
(Overleaf 1)

“Even if he really managed to pass through it, he might not necessarily be able to obtain Qing Xuantian’s inheritance. After all, none of us know what the remnant Qing Xuantian left behind is like.”

“Furthermore, even if Chu Feng really managed to obtain Qing Xuantian’s inheritance, he might not necessarily be able to take care of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.”

“Although we can still place a trace of hope in Chu Feng, it must remain only a trace of hope. Compared to the Moon Immortal, our hope in Chu Feng is truly too uncertain.”

“Unless a miracle is to happen...” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“Heh...” The Elf King laughed lightly. He then said, “It seems that you do not know Chu Feng well.”

“Oh?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal looked to the Elf King. There was a trace of curiosity in his eyes.

“The way I see it, that boy Chu Feng is precisely someone who makes miracles,” The Elf King said confidently.

His confidence was not baseless. Although he could not be said to have known Chu Feng for a very long time, it was not a short time either. He had personally seen Chu Feng accomplishing many impossible things.

“Let’s hope that to be the case,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal smiled. As matters stood, they had reached the moment of a life and death crisis. How could he not wish for there to be someone to save them like Qing Xuantian did back then?

If it were possible, he also wished for that person to be Chu Feng.

Merely... he truly felt that it was already too late.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the rumbling from the sky grew more and more ear-piercing. Even though everyone was in the Transmogrification Gate, they were still able to sense how frightening the outside was.

Not to mention others, even the strongest people in the Transmogrification Gate, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal, would only be courting death should they try to enter that battle.

After fighting for some time, the Moon Immortal unleashed her Imperial Armament. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s five clones had also unleashed their Imperial Armaments; the five of them each held an Imperial Armament in their hands.

Although the Moon Immortal was fighting one against five, she still remained extremely calm and unphased. With the assistance of her Imperial Armament, she maintained absolute superiority in their battle.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Imperial Armament the Moon Immortal held let out a ray of light. Like a flash of lightning, it shot toward one of the five clones.

“Roar~~~”

Everything happened too quickly. That clone simply did not have time to dodge. It let out a frightening snarl, and then its body shattered into pieces.

The Moon Immortal had killed that clone with a single strike!!!

“Not bad.”



Seemingly sensing that one of his clones had been destroyed, the Dark Hall's Hall Master, who had appeared to be sleeping the entire time, abruptly opened his eyes and looked to the Moon Immortal up above him.

Merely, even though he clearly knew that one of his clones had been destroyed, there was no worry in his gaze. Instead, his gaze emitted a different sort of implication.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2104 - Heaven-defying Battle Power**

Sensing the gaze of the Dark Hall's Hall Master, the Moon Immortal said coldly, "No need to worry, I'll come to take care of you right away."

"I know what you're thinking. You want to take care of my four remaining clones, and then come take care of me, isn't that right?"

"Unfortunately, I'm afraid that I cannot give you that chance. After all, I still need them to cut open that Transmogrification Gate," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said.

"It is not up to you to determine whether or not I have a chance. Instead, I am the one who shall seize that chance," The Moon Immortal said. The Imperial Armament she held in her hand grew even sharper, and her attacks grew more and more ferocious.

After verifying that those clones were crucial to breaching the Transmogrification Gate, she became even more determined to eliminate those clones.

"Is that so?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master smiled lightly. Then, his smile suddenly disappeared, and his gaze became ice-cold.

"Boom~~~"

A loud explosion was heard. Immediately, the ground split open. The enormous body of the Dark Hall's Hall master turned into a ray of black light as it soared into the sky. With an unbelievable speed, he charged toward the Moon Immortal.

“Boom~~~”

Everything happened too quickly. Other than an ear-piercing explosion and surging energy ripples, no one in the Transmogrification Gate was able to see what had happened outside.

All they knew was that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had created a ferocious energy ripple after flying into the sky. That energy ripple instantly covered everything in their line of sight.

At that moment, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal revealed even more unease in their eyes.

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

Suddenly, violent wind started to blow. The wind seemed to want to disperse everything. The violent wind forcibly blew the black energy ripples away.

At that moment, the crowd in the Transmogrification Gate discovered that the outside that was originally pitch black had returned to normal.

Even though the surface was filled with desolation, as if from the aftermath of a disaster, a blue sky and white clouds appeared in the sky once again.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

Four explosions sounded. The ground started to quake as four huge monsters fell to the surface. They were the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s four clones.

Although the four clones had fallen to the ground, the crowd’s gazes were still focused on the sky. They were searching for the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and the Moon Immortal.

After searching the vast white clouds, the Elf King and the others all revealed expressions of shock.

There was no longer any huge monster in the sky. Instead, there were three silhouettes.

One among them was the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Not only had he returned to the appearance of a human, he was also covered with his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. With his body covered in lightning, his aura was no longer that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, it had decreased to that of a rank nine Martial Emperor.

Although his aura had grown weaker, the Dark Hall's Hall Master did not panic. Instead, he had a complacent smile on his face. In his hands were his two Imperial Armaments. He was fiddling with them.

As for the other two silhouettes, they were Su Rou and Su Mei. To be exact, it was the Moon Immortal.

However, a bloody wound had appeared on both of their bodies. Blood was flowing from their wounds.

The Moon Immortal... had actually been injured!!!

"Oh no!"

At that moment, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal were unable to contain themselves, and blurted out 'oh no.' What they did not wish to happen the most had finally happened.

"How could this be?" At that moment, many experts noticed that the Moon Immortal had been injured by the Dark Hall's Hall Master. However, they were extremely confused.

After all, the Moon Immortal clearly possessed a much more powerful aura than the Dark Hall's Hall Master. As such, how could he possibly have injured her?

"Your Majesty, what is going on here?" Confused, the crowd turned to the Elf King.

The battle had already surpassed their ability to understand. For many people, they were simply unable to make sense of what they were looking at. As such, they could only ask the Elf King for guidance.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s rank one Half Martial Ancestor’s aura is a disguise. His actual cultivation is not that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. It is merely his battle power that has reached the rank one Half Martial Ancestor level.”

“However, the current aura that he is emitting right now really does belong to him. Like Chu Feng, not only does he possess the means to increase his cultivation, he also possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.”

“Thus, while his cultivation is only that of a rank nine Martial Emperor now, and might appear to be inferior to the Moon Immortal, his battle power has already reached rank two Half Martial Ancestor level”.

“At this moment, even the Moon Immortal is no match for him,” The Elf King explained.

The Elf King had fought against the Dark Hall’s Hall Master many times. Thus, he knew about his abilities.

Thus, he knew that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was an existence on par with Chu Feng in all aspects. He was truly a genius from the Outer World.

“Heavens!” Hearing the explanation provided by the Elf King, the crowd’s complexions all turned ashen. In fact, some among them were so frightened that they fell onto their butts powerlessly. They were stunned by the news.

“How could this be?” At that moment, the gaze of the Moon Immortal in the sky was also flickering nonstop. She had naturally discovered the heaven-defying battle power that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed. Merely, she was unable to accept it.

“Moon Immortal, what sort of expression is that?”

“Oh, I got it. You’re feeling extremely unreconciled because you, a grand rank one Half Martial Ancestor, was defeated by me, a mere Martial Emperor, right?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master mocked.

“You refused to fight earlier because you were increasing your cultivation?” The Moon Immortal asked.

The Moon Immortal knew that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was not this powerful before. Else, he would not have been hiding from her the entire time.

His current cultivation must have been obtained not long ago. It was very likely that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had not fought alongside clones earlier because he had been increasing his cultivation.

"Did you think that I would be so foolish as to expose myself to you without absolute certainty of victory?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master answered with a question of his own.

"You're saying that you'd already obtained this cultivation before you came here?" The Moon Immortal asked with a frown.

"I am never someone that does something without certainty. Since I dared to show myself, it means that I have certainty of victory."

After saying those words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master started to attack again. He pointed forward with the Imperial Armament in his hand. Although he was only able to control Emperor-level martial power, his oppressive might caused the Moon Immortal's expression to change.

The Moon Immortal waved her sleeves and formed a defensive wall before her with her Ancestral-level martial power.

Logically, as Emperor-level martial power and Ancestral-level martial power belonged to two completely different levels, it would absolutely be the Ancestral-level martial power that would come out on top should they collide with one another.

However, at that moment, the ferocious Emperor-level martial power collided directly with the wall formed with Ancestral-level martial power.

"Boom~~~~"

Rumbles sounded from the collision. For the first time ever, the Emperor-level martial power burst through the Ancestral-level martial power and toward the Moon Immortal.

Something that should have been impossible was happening. And this... was the so-called heaven-defying battle power.

“Damn it!”

Sensing that the situation was bad, the Moon Immortal’s body suddenly bloomed with a special light. Following that, the surrounding air started to tremble.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Su Rou and Su Mei who were being controlled by the Moon Immortal both disappeared into thin air.

“Don’t you think that you can escape just by entering the void. Before this grand world spiritist, you have nowhere to go.”

After a cold sneer, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master opened his arms. Immediately, giant vines began to form all around him.

Those vines were a meter thick, and several tens of thousands of meters long. As the vines spread in all directions with rapid speed, they formed an inescapable net in an instant.

“Mn?” After the vines sealed off the entire region, a surprised expression appeared on the previously confident face of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Then, his lips lifted into a surprised smile, “Seems like I have underestimated you. You actually possess such a strong escape technique.”

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, I know that you will, sooner or later, return to the Outer World. At that time, I will teach you a lesson,” The Moon Immortal’s voice sounded. However, that voice appeared to be from tens of thousands of miles away.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2105 - Precisely Chu Feng**

“Heh, the Outer World is my domain”.

“When you can’t even win against me here, how could you possibly win against me in the Outer World?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master laughed mockingly.

As he was someone from the Outer World, he felt that he possessed a certain level of power in the Outer World. For the Moon Immortal to threaten him with the Outer World, he felt it to be truly ridiculous.

“The Outer World is enormous, and possesses countless experts.”

“This Immortal will let you know that your bits of reliance in the Outer World are merely a bunch of ants,” The Moon Immortal’s voice sounded again.

“You are truly ignorant,” At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was tightly clenching his fists. He was angry.

He believed that the Moon Immortal would definitely not be able to contend against him in the Outer World. In fact, none of the people currently in the Holy Land of Martialism would be able to contend against him.

However, the Moon Immortal had declared that she would take care of him in the Outer World. That caused him to feel extremely displeased, causing him to feel that he had been looked down upon.

“Moon Immortal, did you think that this Hall Master was abandoned by the Outer World? Did you think that this Hall Master possesses no one to rely on in the Outer World, and that’s why I’ve come here to flaunt my strength?”

“Let me tell you, you are mistaken. This Palace Master is a genius even in the Outer World. I merely arrived in this place by accident.”

“When you finally reach the Outer World, you will come to discover how much power I possess in the Outer World.”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted those words out angrily. From those words, it could be seen that he seemed to deeply detest being looked down upon. He was truly infuriated by the Moon Immortal.

However, there was no reaction from the Moon Immortal. It seemed that the Moon Immortal had already left.

“Humph, nothing more than a coward that only knows how to boast.”

“Immortal? Bullshit!”

“You are nothing more than someone who believes in their own lies.”

“You are someone who only dared to chase after me to kill me when I was weaker than you. Now that I’ve become stronger, you ran away faster than even dogs.”

“With merely that bit of capability, you dare to boast about fighting me in the Outer World? Truly ridiculous!” Seeing that the Moon Immortal had left, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master began to mock and ridicule her. He was doing so to alleviate the displeasure in his heart.

It was only after he insulted the Moon Immortal and felt better that he turned his gaze to the distance.

There was clearly nothing in the location that he was looking at. However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s gaze narrowed slightly.

“Transmogrification Gate. Truly miraculous. However, unfortunately... you will not be able to escape.”

Right after the Dark Hall’s Hall Master said those words, his four clones that were standing on the ground all soared into the sky. In the end, they landed in the distance.

“Boom~~~ Boom~~~ Boom~~~ Boom~~~”

The four of them landed in different locations. Like four mountains, they sat there as if guarding something.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, the four clones let out ear-piercing snarls at the same time. Then, countless enormous and powerful black hands shot out to grab at the space that they had surrounded.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, the empty space started to transform and the Transmogrification Gate appeared.

After the Transmogrification Gate appeared, countless more enormous hands emerged from the four clones. Those hands formed fists and began to bombard the Transmogrification Gate.



The Transmogrification Gate was known to be indestructible. However, those fists seemed to contain some sort of special power, as even the Transmogrification Gate was unable to withstand it. At that moment, the indestructible Transmogrification Gate was shaking violently.

In fact, even the insides of the Transmogrification Gate was violently shaking. It was as if the world within the Transmogrification Gate was about to collapse.

“Nooo, this place is going to be destroyed, we will all be killed!!!”

At that moment, the people inside the Transmogrification Gate all possessed dejected expressions.

Despair. Endless despair. That sort of despair was something they had felt before. The reason for that was because the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been about to breach the Transmogrification Gate earlier.

Fortunately, the Moon Immortal had arrived at the right time. She was the one that had brought the crowd hope and allowed them to be reborn from despair.

However, even the Moon Immortal had been no match for the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Thus, they knew... that there was no one that could stop the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

In that moment, there was only one thing they could do -- wait for death!!!

Upon thinking that they would die, even many of the adults started to cry bitterly.

As for the kids, they did not know much about the current situation. However, when they saw that the adults were crying, they too began to cry.

At that moment, chaos and panic filled the vast Transmogrification Gate.

As matters stood, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal possessed no heart to concern themselves with the panicking crowd.

The reason for that was because they also knew what sort of situation they were in. Indeed, they were facing a great catastrophe. Even if they could calm everyone, they would still not be able to escape the fate of death that awaited them.

“Chu Feng, I know that you’re hiding in the Transmogrification Gate.”

“If my guess is correct, the Transmogrification Gate is most definitely filled with sounds of wailing. Regardless of whether it is you, that Elf King or that Heaven Reaching Immortal, none of you will be able to calm the crowd. The reason for that is because you all are also in despair.”

“Go ahead, continue with your despair. That is what this Hall Master wants. This is the consequence of going against this Hall Master.”

“It is precisely the goal of this Hall Master to make you all fall into despair,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was acting like a spectator as he looked at his four clones breaking that Transmogrification Gate that was said to be indestructible.

“Lord Hall Master, please stop, please stop, I don’t wish to die.”

“Please don’t do this, we have never gone against you. We are willing to submit to you. Please don’t kill us.”

At that moment, many people began to beg the Dark Hall’s Hall Master for forgiveness. Their begging was something that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master could not hear. Furthermore, even if he were to hear them, it would still be useless. However, when faced with death, they still ended up revealing their fatal weakness... cowardice!!!

“You bunch are absolutely disgraceful. All of you, shut up!”

“If I knew that you all were this lacking in dignity, I would have never offered shelter to you all!” Seeing how disgracefully the crowd was behaving, the Heaven Reaching Immortal flew into a rage and cursed out at them.

However, as matters stood, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was no longer imposing anymore. There was only a single person that the crowd feared -- the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Chu Feng, when that Transmogrification Gate is destroyed, I will let you know the true disparity between us,” Seeing that the Transmogrification Gate was soon to be breached, dense anticipation filled the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s eyes.

It was naturally the hundreds of millions of lives hiding inside the Transmogrification Gate that he was looking forward to seeing. After all, they were cultivation resources that could help him increase his cultivation.

However, even more than the people, he was looking forward to the timid gaze and expression of despair that Chu Feng would have.

He was determined to make Chu Feng know that, although they both possessed the same Inherited Bloodline, there was an enormous disparity between them.

However, right at that moment, a voice sounded. "Dark Hall's Hall Master, I trust that you have been well since we last met."

When that voice was heard, everyone's expressions turned sluggish. The reason for that was because they were all able to tell, that that voice sounded so very familiar.

Chu Feng, that was Chu Feng's voice.

"Chu Feng has returned! It's Chu Feng, he has returned!"

After verifying that it was Chu Feng, the crowd was immediately overjoyed. However, they were immediately disappointed.

While Chu Feng was very powerful, he would only be powerful when compared to them. When compared to the Elf King and the others, Chu Feng was still weaker than them.

And now, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had fought back even the Moon Immortal. Even if Chu Feng was to return, what could he possibly do? At the very most, he would only die together with them.

"Idiot! Why did you return at a time like this?! Quickly, run away!" Xian Miaomiao and some others started to shout hysterically. None of them wished for Chu Feng to throw his life away in vain.

Merely, as they were in the Transmogrification Gate, Chu Feng simply could not hear them.

"Sigh~~~"

Seeing that even Xian Miaomiao and the others were shouting for Chu Feng to escape, the rest of the people became even more certain that Chu Feng's return was useless. As such, sighs began to fill the Transmogrification Gate.

"Chu Feng?!" Compared to the crowd within the Transmogrification Gate, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had an emotional expression.

He had thought that Chu Feng was hiding inside the Transmogrification Gate the entire time. However, Chu Feng's voice had clearly sounded from outside.

Merely, even he was unable to determine where Chu Feng's voice had sounded from. That made him realize that something was amiss.

"Chu Feng, where are you? Get the hell out here, this Hall Master is telling you to come out," The Dark Hall's Hall Master snarled furiously. *no 17 ε(Lb/1n*

"Since you wish to see me so much, I shall grant you your desire."

"Buzz~~~"

Right after Chu Feng's voice sounded, dazzling golden light blossomed above the Transmogrification Gate. Then, four rays of light descend from the sky. Like four lightning bolts, they struck the four clones of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Boom~~~"

"Boom~~~"

"Boom~~~"

"Boom~~~"

When the four lightning strikes landed, four explosions sounded, and the ground was shattered.

"What's going on?!"

The scene that suddenly happened shocked the panicking crowd. When they looked outside, they were even more stunned.

At that moment, four huge monsters had appeared. Those four huge monsters had landed on the Dark Hall's Hall Master's four clones.

Being attacked by the four huge monsters, the four clones were letting out anguished wailings nonstop. They had lost all fighting ability.

“Heavens, those are?!!!!”

When the Elf King and the others saw the four huge monsters, their expressions changed enormously.

The reason for that was because the four huge monsters that were suppressing the four clones were:

The Azure Dragon.

The White Tiger.

The Vermilion Bird.

The Black Tortoise.

The Four Great Divine Beasts!!!

Most importantly, a man was standing on the Azure Dragon’s head.

Like the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, that man’s body was also covered with Thunder Armor. A pair of enormous Thunder Wings also extended from his back.

His arms were folded before his chest. Standing atop the Azure Dragon’s head, he gave off an extraordinary aura.

It was the domineering aura of an absolute ruler.

When the crowd saw the appearance of that man, they were all stunned, and their hearts started to tremble.

That man was none other than Chu Feng!!!

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

**Chapter 2106 - Absolute Suppression**

“Chu Feng! Everyone, look, it’s Chu Feng!”

“Chu Feng has returned to save us! Lord Chu Feng has returned to save us!”

After seeing that it was Chu Feng, the people in the Transmogrification Gate burst into an uproar.

Their low spirits were completely swept away. Their faces were no longer covered with despair. Instead, they were now wild with joy.

Even though many people were unable to determine Chu Feng’s cultivation, they were able to sense that the aura that Chu Feng was emitting right now seemed to not be inferior to that of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master at all.

“Those... those four Divine Beasts, aren’t they Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts?”

After seeing the Four Great Divine Beasts, astonishment filled the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s face. Not only had he been alive in Qing Xuantian’s era, he had also personally seen Qing Xuantian before. Thus, he knew very well that the four Divine Beasts before him were undoubtedly Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts.

“What? Those four powerful existences are actually Lord Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts?”

“Why would Lord Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts appear together with Lord Chu Feng?”

Because the Heaven Reaching Immortal said those words with a very loud voice, practically all of the people in the Transmogrification Gate heard it.

After hearing that piece of news, the crowd were all filled with astonishment.

After all, Qing Xuantian was the most powerful expert since the Ancient Era. He was the strongest of the Five Emperors, the Five Overlords.

There were simply too many legends regarding Qing Xuantian. His various accomplishments were well-known throughout the entire Holy Land of Martialism. To practically everyone, the name ‘Qing Xuantian’ possessed a special significance.

“It is not only those four Divine Beasts, little friend Chu Feng’s current aura is not at all inferior to that of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. It would seem that his true cultivation is the same as the Dark Hall’s Hall Master; he has become a rank seven Martial Emperor.”

“Little friend Chu Feng should have obtained Qing Xuantian’s inheritance,” The Elf King was wild with joy and filled with excitement.

“Lord Chu Feng is actually Lord Qing Xuantian’s successor?!”

“Heavens! It’s no wonder Lord Chu Feng is that powerful. It would seem that we will be saved today! We will be saved today!!!”

The crowd was even more astonished upon hearing what the Elf King said. Originally, they were confused as to why Chu Feng would appear together with Qing Xuantian’s four legendary guardian beasts.

However, the Elf King’s words provided the crowd with a reasonable explanation. It turned out that Chu Feng was actually Qing Xuantian’s successor. Although there were people that had made this guess in their minds before, it was now verified.

“Chu Feng, your cultivation actually increased so much?” At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was extremely surprised. He swept his eyes over the Four Great Divine Beasts. Then, he said, “Those four fellows, they seem to resemble Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts.”

“I understand. You obtained Qing Xuantian’s inheritance. That’s why your cultivation has increased,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

Chu Feng did not bother to pay attention to what the Dark Hall’s Hall Master said. Instead, he directly declared, “Dark Hall’s Hall Master, for the sake of your own selfish desires, you have taken countless innocent lives. Are you prepared to receive your death?”

“My, are you implying that you plan to kill me?”

“Hahahaha, what a joke. You are even more ridiculous than that Moon Immortal.”

“Did you really think that just because you possess the same cultivation, the same Inherited Bloodline and the same heaven-defying battle power as me, you’ll be able to contend against me?”

“Chu Feng, I have said it already. Today, I will let you know how enormous the disparity between us is.”

As the Dark Hall’s Hall Master spoke, he put away the two Imperial Armament he was holding in his hands.

Disdain. His actions were absolutely an act of disdain toward Chu Feng. It was as if he was declaring to everyone that there was simply no need for him to use Imperial Armaments when fighting against Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Faced with the contempt shown to him by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, Chu Feng only laughed lightly and smiled. He was smiling like he was looking at a clown.

“Continue to smile. You will soon be unable to smile.”

“Rumble~~~”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master began to attack. Surging martial power with might capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas began to assault Chu Feng from all directions.

Although that attack appeared to be invisible and formless, it was actually a kind of martial skill, a formless martial skill.

Ordinary people were simply unable to see the attack within that martial skill. They were only capable of hearing the rumbles that sounded from all directions. noʋε(Lb/1n

“Humph.”

However, how could such an attack possibly baffle Chu Feng? Chu Feng snorted coldly and smiled. His body trembled, and the surrounding martial power was controlled by him. Like an invisible army of ferocious beasts, that martial power surged outward to attack.

“Boom~~~”



The two streams of martial power collided with one another. Immediately, heaven and earth started to shake. It was as if the end of the world had arrived.

However, both Chu Feng and the Dark Hall's Hall Master remained standing where they were. Their expressions remained the same. They were both completely unflustered.

"Interesting. However, I'll make you enter a state of absolute inferiority later," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said. Then, his body shifted, and he began to fly toward Chu Feng.

"Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise."

"Seniors, I'll be leaving those four clones to you all."

After Chu Feng said those words, he soared into the sky and collided with the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"No problem."

The Four Great Divine Beasts used their various body parts, such as the Azure Dragon with its tail or the White Tiger with its claw, to ferociously attack the huge monsters they had pinned down.

The clones of the Dark Hall's Hall Master had already lost their fighting capability after being attacked so suddenly. As such, how could they possibly withstand the ferocious attacks that the Four Great Divine Beasts were assaulting them with?

Soon, they were all destroyed. They were all killed; completely eliminated.

"Amazing! As expected of the legendary guardian beasts!!!"

Seeing the Four Great Divine Beasts effortlessly killing the four clones of the Dark Hall's Hall Master, the crowd began to cheer excitedly.

After all, those four clones were existences that had threatened their safety before. Now that the greatest danger to them had been eliminated, they would naturally be extremely happy.

Right at that moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal shouted, "Quiet!" Then, with a very serious expression, he said to the crowd, "This battle has only just begun."

Hearing those words, the crowd uniformly turned their gazes to the sky.

Black clouds densely covered the sky. Lightning flashed and thunder rolled in succession as violent energy ripples swept through the surroundings like diffusing light.

That was... the battlefield between Chu Feng and the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~"

The confrontation between the two men grew more and more intense. The energy ripples created by their martial skills seemed to be planning to rip apart the entire vast sky.

The battle was extremely fierce. For many people, they were simply unable to tell which one of the fighters was Chu Feng, and which was the Dark Hall's Hall Master. They could only understand what was happening from the explanations provided by the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

After finding out about the situation of the battle, everyone started to frown. The reason for that was because... it was Chu Feng that was being suppressed by the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

The two men had both grasped extremely powerful martial skills. However, Chu Feng would always be suppressed in every confrontation.

"This battle is not hopeful."

At that moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was frowning extremely deeply. Although there was an enormous difference in strength between him and Chu Feng and the Dark Hall's Hall Master, he was able to determine the situation of the battle as an observer. Seeing that Chu Feng was being suppressed ever since the actual battle began, he felt extremely uneasy.

Even though the four clones capable of breaching the Transmogrification Gate had been killed, as long as the Dark Hall's Hall Master won, they, the people in the Transmogrification Gate, would sooner or later be killed by him.

However, at the moment when the Heaven Reaching Immortal had a worried frown on his face, he was surprised to discover that the Elf King standing beside him was smiling. Not only was he not worried, he seemed to be very happy too.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2107 - Turning The Situation Around**

“Are you not worried for little friend Chu Feng?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked the Elf King.

“Heaven Reaching Immortal, this should be the first time that you have seen little friend Chu Feng fighting someone, right?” The Elf King asked.

“Mn,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal nodded his head.

“Then, you should continue to watch it. You will come to understand soon,” The Elf King said with a smile.

“What do you mean by that?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked.

“I have fought against the Dark Hall’s Hall Master many times, and seen little friend Chu Feng battle others several times too.”

“Thus, I have quite an understanding of the two of them.”

“Although their strength is on par with one another, I believe that little friend Chu Feng is superior,” The Elf King said.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, although the Heaven Reaching Immortal was very confused, he still turned his gaze toward the battle between Chu Feng and the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Roar~~~”

Another ear-piercing roar was heard. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master had unleashed another Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. That Earthen Taboo Martial Skill turned the Dark Hall’s Hall Master into a gigantic eagle several thousands of meters tall.

At that moment, that ferocious giant eagle brandished its sharp talons as it pounced at Chu Feng. It was planning to rip Chu Feng to pieces.

However, Chu Feng revealed no fear of the incoming giant eagle. Instead, a sharpness flashed through his eyes.

“Reckless fool, I’ll rip you to pieces now,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was infuriated by Chu Feng’s gaze. Thus, he unleashed all of his martial power to increase the strength of his attack.

In merely the blink of an eye, the Earthen Taboo Martial Skill unleashed by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master reached a distance less than a hundred meters away from Chu Feng. The powerful might it emitted shattered even the space surrounding Chu Feng.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s eyes grew sharper. Then, he flipped his palm.

“Clank~~~”

A ray of cold light immediately appeared. It was a slash. Like a silvery crescent, that slash appeared out of thin air and rapidly increased in size as it collided with the enormous eagle the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had turned into.

“Crap!”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was greatly surprised by the silver slash that had suddenly appeared out of nowhere. The reason for that was because that slash appeared less than ten meters from him, and possessed an extremely fast speed. In that sort of situation, he was unable to dodge the slash.

“Rumble~~~”

A loud rumble was heard. Surging energy ripples immediately covered the entire sky.

However, right after the energy ripples began to spread, a burst of violent wind immediately swept forth and forcibly blew the energy ripples away.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master appeared again. Merely, when his appearance was revealed, the crowd, other than the Elf King, all revealed expressions of disbelief.

For some unknown reason, the Dark Hall's Hall Master that was fighting Chu Feng at a very close range had distanced himself far away from Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was still standing in his original location. It was only the Dark Hall's Hall Master whose location had changed. In other words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been forced far back.

To the crowd's surprise, a bloody wound had appeared on the Dark Hall's Hall Master, who had clearly been suppressing Chu Feng the entire time earlier.

No, it was not only the bloody wound, his left arm had also disappeared. It had been sliced off by Chu Feng's slash earlier.

"Despicable bastard, you actually used your Imperial Armament!"

With merely a thought, the Dark Hall's Hall Master reformed his lost left arm. However, his gaze was fixed onto Chu Feng's Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader the entire time. His eyes were filled with fury.

He had realized that Chu Feng's attack earlier was an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. However, how could he possibly be injured by ordinary Earthen Taboo Martial Skills?

Chu Feng was able to break through his Earthen Taboo Martial Skill and successfully injure him precisely because he had used his Imperial Armament, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader.

"Who was it that decided that we could not use Imperial Armaments in this battle?"

"Imperial Armaments are weapons. They are an indispensable assistance to martial cultivators. There is nothing wrong with me using my Imperial Armament."

"As for why you're injured, you can only blame it on yourself for being too arrogant and conceited. It was you who felt that you could kill me without using your Imperial Armaments."

"Don't forget, you were holding your Imperial Armaments earlier. It was you who put them away," Chu Feng mocked.

“You!!!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master grew even more furious.

What Chu Feng said was correct. He had originally been holding his Imperial Armaments. It was because he looked down upon Chu Feng that he decided to put his Imperial Armaments away. However, never had he expected that Chu Feng would insult him with that.

“I understand.”

However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master wasn’t a fool. Although he was furious, he realized that he had been able to obtain superiority over Chu Feng earlier not because he possessed absolute strength. Instead, it seemed that Chu Feng had deliberately egged him on.

Chu Feng had deliberately made him feel that he was stronger than him so that he would be overly confident.

Chu Feng had grasped the opportunity of him being overly confident to mount a surprise attack against him. That was how he came to be injured.

“Chu Feng, I have not wrongly accused you. You are truly despicable!!!” After realizing what had happened, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master became even more furious.

He was someone that never did anything that he possessed no certainty in. Regardless of what sort of opponent he faced, he would always plan strategies beforehand so that he could seize the certainty of victory.

However, today, he had fallen for Chu Feng’s scheme, someone that he had looked down upon the entire time. Naturally, he would feel extremely furious.

“Despicable? Is someone like you worthy of calling me despicable?” Chu Feng coldly laughed, “I, Chu Feng, am someone who will never scheme against those that are good and honest.”

“However, against despicable bastards like you who have done all sorts of evil, I, Chu Feng, am someone who will use all kinds of schemes. That is what you call “giving someone a taste of their own medicine.”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted, “Shut your mouth!!!” Then, he flipped his hands, and his two Imperial Armaments appeared in his hands.

“Yoh, so you’re finally willing to use your Imperial Armaments? But... they will not help you,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Bullshit!!!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted. Following that, he brandished the Imperial Armaments in his hands. Immediately, martial power began to gather as he unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

The Heaven Taboo Martial Skill turned into many blade rays that shot forth to slice at Chu Feng. Like a massive army sent forth to behead a person, they swept across the void and toward Chu Feng.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was planning to get revenge by giving Chu Feng a taste of his own medicine. Chu Feng had injured him with a slash. As such, he planned to kill Chu Feng with his own slash.

“Heaven Taboo: Heaven Devouring Wind.”

With the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in hand, Chu Feng hacked down directly in front of him. Immediately, a violent wind was sent forth from the Imperial Armament.

As the violent wind spun, space itself started to twist. Like flowing water, the distorted space began to pour into the violent wind.

Under that situation, the violent wind grew larger and larger. Soon, it covered all of heaven and earth. It truly looked as if the sky had been devoured by the wind.

When the slashes sent forth by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master arrived, they too were devoured by that violent wind.  $n \rightarrow O((v/-e)-\ell(-b..l)/n)$

It was as if a myriad of meteors were falling from the sky, only to land in the deep, bottomless sea.

“Go.”

“Roar~~~”

Then, Chu Feng pointed at the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, and that violent wind began to move. It turned into an enormous wind dragon that pierced through the sky as it moved to suppress the Dark Hall’s Hall Master with overwhelming might.

Chu Feng had suppressed the Dark Hall's Hall Master's Heaven Taboo Martial Skill with his own Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

"What a profound martial skill," At that moment, the Elf King and the others all exclaimed in admiration repeatedly. They were all stunned by the Heaven Taboo Martial Skill Chu Feng had unleashed.

"That is Qing Xuantian's martial skill. I saw him use it before."

"Actually, that martial skill is not that profound. It is merely that when little friend Chu Feng used it, it is even more powerful," The Heaven Reaching Immortal explained. Then, he looked to the Elf King and said, "What you said is correct. Little friend Chu Feng's strength is indeed above that of the Dark Hall's Hall Master."

After hearing those words, the bystanders all discovered that the Heaven Taboo: Heaven Devouring Wind that Chu Feng had unleashed was still spiraling in the sky.

It was only when the Dark Hall's Hall Master unleashed three Heaven Taboo Martial Skills in succession that he managed to neutralize Chu Feng's Heaven Taboo: Heaven Devouring Wind.

However, after the Dark Hall's Hall Master neutralized it, he was already panting and in a very sorry state.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2108 - Greatly Expanding One's Horizons**

"Heaven Taboo: Ten Thousand Lightning Strikes"

Right at that moment, Chu Feng unleashed another Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

It was another Heaven Taboo Martial Skill he had obtained from Qing Xuantian's inheritance. That Heaven Taboo Martial Skill possessed extremely ferocious might.

In the blink of an eye, many enormous lightning strikes began to strike down from the skies.



The lightning strikes were all several tens of meters thick, and dazzling blue in color. Each and every lightning strike contained extremely powerful might.

At that moment, over ten thousand such lightning strikes were descending from the sky. Furthermore, they were all targeting the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Damn it!"

In that sort of situation, the Dark Hall's Hall Master hurriedly turned around to escape. As he began to flee, he unleashed Heaven Taboo Martial Skills to defend against the incoming lightning strikes.

"That Dark Hall's Hall Master is most definitely extremely furious," The Elf King said with a smile.

"Royal Father, what do you mean by that?" Xian Miaomiao and her older sister ran over and asked with extremely curious expressions.

"To a greater or lesser extent, I understand the character of the Dark Hall's Hall Master. He is different from little friend Chu Feng. Although little friend Chu Feng possesses outstanding strength, he also possesses a humble character. He is neither conceited nor arrogant."

"However, that Dark Hall's Hall Master is different. He is extremely conceited, excessively conceited even. When he fought against me, even though I was suppressing him, he still spoke words that showed that he clearly did not place me in his eyes."

"It was as if he was certain that he would one day turn the situation around and suppress me instead. Of course, he managed to accomplish precisely that," When mentioning that matter, the Elf King smiled in shame.

"However, little friend Chu Feng is different. Little friend Chu Feng is stronger than the Dark Hall's Hall Master. However, in the Dark Hall's Hall Master's eyes, little friend Chu Feng is the same as me, someone inferior to him." n-  
.o)(v).e/.l/)b-.l.-n

"He felt that suppressing little friend Chu Feng before was only natural. He felt that as little friend Chu Feng was inferior to him, him suppressing little friend Chu Feng was only a matter of course."

“Thus, when he was suddenly injured by little friend Chu Feng’s slash, he became extremely furious.”

“As he feels that little friend Chu Feng is inferior to him, he was determined that little friend Chu Feng was only able to injure him by relying on tricks.”

“However now, little friend Chu Feng is no longer going easy on him, nor is he using any tricks. Instead, he is fighting the Dark Hall’s Hall Master head-on with his own abilities.”

“However, the result is that even though the two of them possess the same cultivation, the same Inherited Bloodline, the same level of techniques and the same battle power, little friend Chu Feng is still absolutely dominating the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.”

“This means that little friend Chu Feng’s strength surpasses that of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.”

“This conclusion is definitely something that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master cannot accept. As such, he will naturally be extremely furious,” The Elf King explained.

“Humph, Chu Feng was stronger than him to begin with. Even if he refuses to accept it, it remains the truth.”

“Back then, he was only able to bully Chu Feng by relying on the fact that he had cultivated longer than Chu Feng and possessed a higher cultivation than Chu Feng.”

“Now that Chu Feng’s cultivation is the same as his, he is no longer a match for Chu Feng. Serves him right. Someone like him is a true spineless coward,” Xian Miaomiao said angrily.

Back then, she had personally seen the scene of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and the World Devastator Immortal humiliating Chu Feng at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. It was not only Chu Feng who became extremely furious, even she was extremely furious by what had happened.

And now, Chu Feng was not only able to suppress the Dark hall’s Hall Master, he was even making the Dark Hall’s Hall Master flee in disarray. To Xian Miaomiao, this not only alleviated her anger, more than that, she... felt happy for Chu Feng.

Back then, Chu Feng's honor was trampled upon.

Today, he was finally able to seize it back himself.

“Hey hey hey, stop running away. Earlier, you spoke so boastfully. Yet now, what is this appearance? It seems that you're letting down those boasting words you've spoken, no?” Seeing that the Dark Hall's Hall Master could only run in disarray from his attack, Chu Feng began to insult the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Chu Feng did this not only because he wanted to use this method to insult the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Most importantly, Chu Feng discovered that although the Dark Hall's Hall Master was very smart and powerful, he possessed a fatal weakness -- being too conceited.

Not only was he conceited, he refused to allow anyone to question his talent. It was precisely this weakness that Chu Feng wished to grasp and then deliver a punishing attack at so as to bring disorder upon his mind.

“Ignorant bastard, did you really think that you would be able to defeat this Hall Master with only those tricks of yours?”

“Chu Feng, today, this Hall Master shall let you know the disparity between us.”

“Also, you bunch of trash hiding in the Transmogrification Gate. All of you, look carefully.”

“Right now, this Hall Master shall broaden the horizons of you bunch of trash from the Lower Realm. I'll have you all experience strength that you have never seen before.”

The Dark Hall's Hall Master suddenly stopped running away. He raised the Imperial Armaments in his hand. Then, an extremely mighty power began to emit from his body.

That power swept toward all directions and forcibly dispersed Chu Feng's Heaven Taboo: Ten Thousand Lightning Strikes.

Most importantly, the sky was distorting. Soon, an enormous figure appeared in the sky.

It was a giant beast. This giant beast resembled a bear. However, it possessed neither arms or legs. Yet, it possessed an enormous mouth.

When not mentioning that mouth, this giant beast's body was so huge that no end could be seen. Its body covered the entire blue sky. It was as if the giant beast had replaced the sky.

After that enormous beast appeared, an extremely frightening aura began to emit from it, enveloping the entire earth.

The void started to tremble nonstop. The earth was trembling nonstop.

It was the sensation of the descent of doomsday.

“Heavens! What is that?!”

At that moment, many of the people in the Transmogrification Gate were so scared that their faces turned green. They were shivering from head to toe. In fact, some people even fainted on the spot.

Originally, as they were hidden in the Transmogrification Gate, they would not be threatened regardless of what might happen outside.

However, when that giant beast appeared, all of them were able to sense how frightening that giant beast was. The aura which that giant beast emitted was something that not even the Transmogrification Gate could resist.

“That seems to be a martial skill. However, it is impossible for Heaven Taboo Martial Skills to possess such a frightening power.”

“Could that be a legendary Divine Taboo Martial Skill?” At that moment, even the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal were frowning deeply. It was as the Dark Hall's Hall Master had said, none of them had ever seen such a frightening technique.

At that moment, they involuntarily turned their gazes to Chu Feng again.

However, at that moment, their expressions changed once again.

Although they felt how frightening that enormous beast was, as they were hidden in the Transmogrification Gate, the strength of the enormous beast that they felt was most definitely only the tip of the iceberg. Being outside, what Chu Feng was feeling should be the actual terrifying oppression.

However, Chu Feng's expression actually remained unchanged. He revealed absolutely no fear. This sort of reaction surpassed everyone's Expectations.

Could it be that Chu Feng possessed a method to withstand that huge beast?

Although they felt it to be extremely inconceivable, the crowd still involuntarily thought of that possibility.

In truth, Chu Feng was indeed not afraid of that martial skill. Although it was also the first time Chu Feng had seen such a powerful martial skill, he did possess the means to take it on.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that the martial skill the Dark Hall's Hall Master had unleashed was actually... an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2109 - Incomplete Ancestral Armament**

"Trash, why aren't you saying anything? Are you scared speechless by my martial skill?"

"I might as well tell you. This is an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill."

"I bet a country bumpkin like you has never heard of Emperor Taboo Martial Skills before, right?"

"That's no problem. Today, I shall show you great kindness, and teach you some knowledge."

"Emperor Taboo Martial Skills are martial skills that Martial Emperors cannot use. As its name implies, Emperor Taboo Martial Skill are a taboo for Martial Emperors."

“Thus, only actual Half Martial Ancestors are capable of learning Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.”

“However, this Hall Master is a genius. Although I am still only a Martial Emperor, I have already mastered this Emperor Taboo Martial Skill that is a taboo for Martial Emperors,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master spoke in an immensely proud manner to Chu Feng. His tone was filled with a sense of superiority.

“You should have only just grasped that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, right?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was startled. His gaze turned complicated. Cautiously, he asked, “What is it that you’re trying to say?”

“I’m trying to say that your Emperor Taboo Martial Skill should be extremely powerful. However, it seems that you have yet to completely grasp it.”

“Look at it. That huge beast the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill creates should be extremely domineering and mighty. It should give off the sensation of the descent of a ruler upon appearing.”

“But, look at it. It doesn’t even have arms or legs. All it has is a single mouth. It looks like an utter joke. It gives off absolutely no sense of dominance at all.”

“Thus... it is truly a pity for that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill to be defiled by you,” Chu Feng said.

“Bastard! Are you mocking me?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master asked furiously.

“You’re right, I am,” Chu Feng said with a laugh.

“Snap~~~”

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master immediately clenched his fists angrily. His furious gaze seemed to be capable of shooting out flames. He was truly infuriated by Chu Feng.

However, his anger lasted only a moment. After that moment, he started to laugh strangely. He said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, I’m changing my plans.

Today, I will not kill you. Instead, I will make you wish that you were dead. I will make you beg me, kneel before me and beg me to kill you.”

“You’re thinking too much of yourself. You are incapable of doing that,” Chu Feng said mockingly.

“You will soon know whether or not I am capable,” After the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s words left his mouth, the huge beast in the sky suddenly opened its mouth. Immediately, a violent suction began to suck Chu Feng into its mouth.

“Crap! If Chu Feng is to be sucked into that giant beast’s mouth, it will definitely be disastrous!” Seeing that scene, the Elf King, Xian Miaomiao and the others were all deeply frightened.

“Your struggle is useless. Right now... you are nothing more than a puppet. I will be able to toy with you however I wish,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master laughed mockingly.

“That guy.”

However, his laughter suddenly froze. The reason for that was because he was shocked to discover that Chu Feng was not struggling against that suction power at all. Just like that, he allowed himself to be sucked into that giant beast’s mouth.

Although Chu Feng was confident, the people that were concerned about his safety were nearly driven mad. For example, Xian Miaomiao and some other girls were crying already.

“Heeaahh!!!”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly shouted explosively. Then, he raised one hand up and shot an explosive fist toward the giant beast in the sky.

“Snap~~~”

A loud sound was heard. The sound of something shattering actually sounded from the sky covered by that huge beast.

“Snap~~~ Snap~~~ Snap~~~”

Soon, the shattering sounds grew more and more numerous. At that moment, the crowd discovered that countless giant cracks had appeared on that enormous beast's vast body. Those cracks were rapidly extending and interweaving with one another.

“Rumble~~~”

Soon, a loud sound that was never before heard sounded. Then, that beast shattered into pieces. Like countless meteorites, its shattered body began to fall from the sky.

Merely, as its body was formed with martial power, it did not land on the ground. Instead, they turned into streams of martial power that assimilated into the void. nDVE-lb)1n

Although the sky was extremely frightening before, it was very beautiful now.

Most importantly, although the giant beast that covered the sky had been destroyed, a special sort of power was still hovering in the sky. Merely, no one had discovered that power.

“Heavens, Chu Feng, he... he actually managed to destroy the Dark Hall's Hall Master's Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.”

At that moment, even the Elf King and the others were stunned. To them, it seemed as if Chu Feng had only shot a punch toward the beast. How could a single punch possess such power?

[1. Xima: Bee, Chu Feng is not One-punch Man;  
[https://d2kmm3vx031a1h.cloudfront.net/HmWDsHkfTFyShq7GqbE1\\_b01.png](https://d2kmm3vx031a1h.cloudfront.net/HmWDsHkfTFyShq7GqbE1_b01.png)]

Their astonishment was understandable. After all, they did not know that Chu Feng had learned many Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, and even an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill from Qing Xuantian's inheritance.

Chu Feng's fist strike earlier was no ordinary fist strike. Instead, it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

“Impossible, this is impossible!!!”

“You, trash that grew up in this land, how could you have possibly grasped an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill?”



At that moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master reacted as if he had received an enormous shock. Although others were unable to tell, he was able to tell that Chu Feng had used an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill earlier.

However, that was something that he was unwilling to admit, something that he could not accept. He had spent great difficulty in order to learn that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. Yet, Chu Feng actually knew an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill too.

Most importantly, Chu Feng's mastery of his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was actually much more skillful than his own. Chu Feng had managed to easily destroy his own Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

"Rumble, rumble~~~"

Right at that moment, rumbles began to sound from the sky. Turning their heads toward the sky, the crowd was all stunned and felt utter disbelief.

At that moment, many rays of light appeared in the sky. Those lights were interweaving with one another and covering the entire sky.

Most importantly, those lights emitted an aura even more frightening than the aura emitted by that huge beast earlier.

"This is the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation."

"In this Lower Realm that you look down upon, this Martial Skill was learned by someone ten thousand years ago," Chu Feng said mockingly.

"Heavens, so Chu Feng actually also grasped a legendary Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. No wonder, no wonder he was able to easily destroy the Dark Hall Hall Master's Emperor Taboo Martial Skill."

The crowd burst into an uproar. Seeing the light that filled the sky, the crowd reacted as if they had seen hope. They felt that regardless of how powerful the Dark Hall's Hall Master might be, he would still be defeated today.

Merely, before that, no one had expected that Chu Feng would make such an enormous improvement.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, what other tricks do you have? Feel free to use them. Else... I will be ending you,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh...”

“Hehehe....”

“Hahahaha...”

“Wahahahahaha...”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master burst into frantic laughter. His laughter was extremely frightening. It simply did not sound like the voice of a human.

“Chu Feng, I truly never expected that trash like you would be able to force this Hall Master into such a state.”

“However, that’s fine. I shall let you all know exactly how powerful the strength this Hall Master really has.”

After the Dark Hall’s Hall Master said those words, his wrist started to shine brightly. It was only at that moment that the crowd discovered he had a bracelet on his wrist.

That bracelet was emitting dazzling golden light. At that moment, that bracelet flew off of the wrist of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and began to float before him.

As that bracelet shone with brightness, an aura even more powerful than the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill swept forth.

“So that’s it,” Upon seeing that bracelet, Chu Feng’s eyes also shone.

He had already realized that that bracelet was an extraordinary item, and should be an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2110 - See Your Performance - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2110 - See Your Performance**

### **Chapter 2110 - See Your Performance**

“Roar~~~”

Once the Incomplete Ancestral Armament appeared, layers of golden gaseous flames were emitted from within the bracelet.

As the golden gaseous flames surged forth, the bracelet began to hover forward.

Soon, with the Incomplete Ancestral Armament as the center, the golden gaseous flames turned into a giant monster.

It was a golden giant. It was a thousand meters tall, and wore golden armor. Covered with dazzling golden light, it looked like a golden god of war.

Although its entire body was filled with light, the oppressive sensation that it emitted was much more frightening than that of the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill the Dark Hall's Hall Master used previously.

“Quickly, set up formation!”

In that sort of situation, even though the crowd were all hidden in the Transmogrification Gate, they still rushed to set up a defensive formation to withstand the oppressive might.

Else, merely that oppressive might would've been enough to slaughter them.

It was only with the combined efforts of the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal that they managed to block the oppressive might that had managed to enter the Transmogrification Gate. However, even though the two of them were working together, they were still placed under enormous pressure.

“What formidable power. Exactly what is that?”

At that moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was frowning. As the master of the gate, he knew how powerful the Transmogrification Gate was.

Even though the Transmogrification Gate was incapable of blocking all powers, it was capable of blocking the majority of them. As such, the people from the Transmogrification Gate should be safe from harm.

Yet, at that moment, the oppressive might that managed to invade the Transmogrification Gate was already enough to strangle the people in the Transmogrification Gate. If they had not set up formation immediately, there would likely have been a great amount of casualties.

They truly never expected that the Dark Hall's Hall Master would be so powerful. At that moment, they felt fear from the Dark Hall's Hall Master from the bottom of their hearts.

"Chu Feng, today... I will broaden your horizons and let you gain knowledge. I shall let you know exactly what that is," The Dark Hall's Hall Master pointed to his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and spoke proudly.

"Isn't that just an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?" Chu Feng interrupted him.

"You... you actually know what an Incomplete Ancestral Armament is?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master revealed an expression of shock.

"Not only do I know that it's an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, I also know that you should have just subdued that Incomplete Ancestral Armament," Chu Feng said.

"Your eyesight's pretty good. That's right... The reason why I sat motionless when my clones were fighting against the Moon Immortal was precisely because I was using my world spirit formations, as well as my other methods, to subdue this Incomplete Ancestral Armament."

"Logically, it is simply impossible for Martial Emperors to subdue Incomplete Ancestral Armaments."

"The reason for that is because subduing an Incomplete Ancestral Armament is much more difficult than learning an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said. He was immensely proud of himself as he said those words.

He had said all those things so that he could tell everyone that his talent was incomparable to ordinary people, that Chu Feng could not be placed on par with him.

“I can tell that you’ve spent meticulous effort in order to subdue that Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“Unfortunately, that Incomplete Ancestral Armament is the same as the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill you used earlier. Like before, you are simply unable to completely grasp it,” Chu Feng said.

“Bullshit!” Seeing that Chu Feng had actually dared to disregard the results of his efforts, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master cursed out at him.

“Heh...” However, Chu Feng was not enraged by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s curse. Instead, he laughed lightly and then said, “If you insist on deceiving yourself, there is nothing I can do about it.”

“You don’t even have an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, yet you dare to criticize me?! Who the hell do you think you are?!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master continued to rain curses upon Chu Feng. It was like the Elf King said, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was extremely conceited, and could not tolerate others insulting his talent.

“Haha...” Chu Feng did not answer him, and instead chuckled. However, his chuckle was filled with contempt and mockery. It was as if he simply did not place the Dark Hall’s Hall Master in his eyes at all.

“You are truly someone who will not tear up until you see your own coffin! I’ll let you know how powerful this Hall Master is right away!” As the Dark Hall’s Hall Master spoke, he pointed his hand at Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the golden god of war that stood before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master raised its enormous arm.

As the arm was raised, an enormous sword extended from its palm. Then, it aimed its palm at Chu Feng and hacked down. Immediately, the sword’s blade was filled with light as it sliced through the void and toward Chu Feng.

The speed was so fast that the sword was simply going to cleave Chu Feng in two from head to toe in an instant.

“Buzz~~~”

However, at this moment of imminent peril, Chu Feng remained completely calm. Suddenly, he raised his arm, and a huge fiery red sword appeared above him.

“Clank~~~”

The sound of a metallic collision was heard as golden light scattered all over. When the golden light began to weaken, the crowd members were all tongue-tied by the scene before them.

The enormous sword that should have been unstoppable was actually blocked. It was blocked by that fiery red sword.

“That aura, it’s not at all inferior to that Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng he... he actually also possesses an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

Sensing the mighty aura emitted by the fiery red sword, the crowd members were all pleasantly surprised.

They were no fools. Merely by the might of the fiery red sword, they were able to tell how powerful it was.

If the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s bracelet was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, then Chu Feng’s fiery red sword should definitely also be an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Chu Feng, how many more methods do you possess that we do not know of?” At that moment, the Elf King’s eyes were filled with admiration.

Today, the techniques and methods that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master used had all surpassed their imagination. Yet, Chu Feng was able to calmly respond to them in succession.

As matters stood, he finally realized why Chu Feng was so calm and confident. It turned out that he possessed many cards up his sleeve.

[1. Xima: More like an entire deck of cards!!!]

“How could this be? You also possess an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?! No... that’s impossible! How could you possess an Incomplete Ancestral

Armament?! How could such a desolate place possess an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?!”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was filled with astonishment. His expression was extremely ugly. His cheeks were shivering. He had revealed to everyone that he was unable to accept the fact before him.

In reality, what he was most unable to accept was not the fact that Chu Feng possessed an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Rather, it was that Chu Feng was actually also capable of using his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, because this had completely trampled the last bit of superiority that he possessed.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, I truly never expected that you would force me into such a state. However, since you’ve already forced me into such a state, it is time to end this battle.”

“Have you made your preparations?”

“The preparations to die,” Chu Feng looked to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master with a beaming smile on his face.

“Bastard! You dare to use that sort of mocking tone to speak to me?! I’m going to kill you!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted angrily. That golden god of war turned into a ray of light that flew toward Chu Feng.

This time around, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not holding back in the slightest. He had gone all-out to kill Chu Feng. As matters stood, he had realized that he underestimated Chu Feng.

He could not hold back. Else, he might end up becoming the person that was defeated today!!!

“Roar~~~”

Seemingly sensing the determination of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, that golden god of war let out an ear-piercing roar.

It’s killing intent was overflowing, and filled the entire region. It’s killing intent was so chilly that even the crowd in the Transmogrification Gate started to shiver.

“It’s time to see your performance. Don’t let me down.”

With a smile on his face, Chu Feng gently caressed the Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand. Then, seemingly as if the Magma Emperor Sword had realized Chu Feng’s intentions, it turned into a ray of flame as it charged forth toward the golden god of war.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2111 - Unbelievable**

“Boom~~~”

The fiery sword pierced through the vast sky. Its power was filled with dominance.

Even though many people were unable to see the scene of the fiery sword piercing through the skies, they were able to sense the might it emitted. It was even more fierce than before.

“Paa~~~”

A shocking scene appeared. The golden war of god extended its hand and directly grabbed the Magma Emperor Sword.

“Hahaha, is this your so-called Incomplete Ancestral Armament? The way I see it, it is nothing more than a bluff. This Incomplete Ancestral Armament of yours is a fake, isn’t it?” Seeing that his own Incomplete Imperial Armament had obtained victory with a single strike, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master burst into loud and proud laughter.

“Fake? Lord Chu Feng’s Incomplete Ancestral Armament is a fake?”

After hearing what the Dark Hall’s Hall Master declared, suspicion rose in the hearts of many people in the Transmogrification Gate.

It was not that they did not believe in Chu Feng. Merely, as they were both Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, how could there be such an enormous disparity?

“Boom~~~”



However, the very next moment, that golden god of war's hand suddenly exploded.

At the same time, a soaring and blazing flame burst forth. In an instant, it completely swallowed a range of ten thousand meters in the sky.

“Boom~~~”

At the moment when the crowd were all confused, that golden war of god's enormous body had fallen to the ground.

Furthermore, an enormous leg covered with flame was stepping on its body. It turned out... that it had been trampled to the ground by someone.

Upon closer inspection, the complexions of the crowd all turned pale. Their eyes and mouths were wide open. They were struck dumb.

At that moment, a fiery giant stood on the thousand-meter-tall golden god of war's body. That flame giant was thousands of meters tall, much larger than the golden god of war.

“Motherfucker! If this Emperor doesn't show you his might, you'd take me as a diseased cat, eh?”

Most shockingly, that flame giant actually spoke.

As the Magma Emperor spoke those words, he lifted his foot and then stomped it down ruthlessly.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. Even the crowd hiding inside the Transmogrification Gate felt an enormous trembling.

As for the outside of the Transmogrification Gate, it was filled with dispersing golden light, and energy ripples that wreaked havoc all around. That golden god of war had been shattered by the stomp.

“No, this is impossible! This is absolutely impossible!!!”

At that moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was grabbing his head with his hands. Disbelief filled his face. He was simply on the verge of collapse.

He felt that everything before him was so very unbelievable. It was not because the Magma Emperor Sword was very powerful. Rather, it was because the Magma Emperor Sword was actually capable of speaking.

He knew very well that Incomplete Ancestral Armaments that could speak were actual Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. Furthermore, it was only after an Incomplete Ancestral Armament was completely subdued by its master that it could fight with its own awareness and be able to speak.

And that... was something that he could not accomplish.

Yet... what he had failed to accomplish was accomplished by Chu Feng.

He finally realized that Chu Feng's insults toward him were not because he was overly arrogant and conceited. Instead, it was Chu Feng possessing the qualifications to insult him.

"Everyone, look, that golden giant is gone. It completely disappeared."

"Lord Chu Feng won! Lord Chu Feng has won!!!"

"Amazing! Lord Chu Feng is truly unrivaled!"

Although the Dark Hall Master's Incomplete Ancestral Armament had crumbled apart, the hundreds of millions of people inside the Transmogrification Gate were cheering.

They were all able to tell that the battle was going to end. Chu Feng had defeated the Dark Hall's Master that even the Moon Immortal had failed to defeat.

"No, how could this be?! How could this be?!"

At the moment when the crowd were all cheering, the expressions of the Heaven Reaching Immortal and the Ancient Era's Elves' Grand Elders all changed enormously. Deep fear filled their eyes.

Even the Elf King who would always remain calm and collected had a pale complexion just then. Even his body was trembling slightly.

"Royal Father, what's wrong?" Sensing that something was amiss, Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue hurriedly supported their father. They had never before seen their father acting in such a manner.

“That is the Magma Emperor, the Magma Emperor that nearly destroyed our Holy Land of Martialism ten thousand years ago,” The Elf King said.

“What? The Magma Emperor? Where? Where?” Hearing those words, the people in the Transmogrification Gate all started to panic. To a greater or lesser degree, fear emerged on the faces of everyone in the crowd.

Even though the Magma Emperor was only a legend, and very few people had actually seen it, to them, the Magma Emperor remained an existence even more frightening than the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Xian Miaomiao looked around and then asked, “Magma Emperor? Royal Father, what are you talking about? Didn’t the Magma Emperor die long ago? Why would the Magma Emperor be here now?”

“That is the Magma Emperor, that over there is the Magma Emperor,” The Elf King pointed to the Magma Emperor with flames rising from its body.

“Impossible, t-t-t-that is actually the Magma Emperor? Isn’t that Chu Feng’s Incomplete Ancestral Armament? Why would it be the Magma Emperor?”

“Exactly what is going on? Could it be that Lord Chu Feng is controlled by the Magma Emperor?”

Hearing what the Elf King said, the crowd all started to panic. Originally, there were people that thought that the Elf King was joking. However, upon seeing the huge monster with flames blazing from its body, they realized that it greatly resembled the legendary Magma Emperor.

Furthermore, the power that it emitted made it very possible for it to be the legendary Magma Emperor.

At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly said, “You can return now. Your job here is done.”

“Damned brat, how could this Emperor possibly listen to your orders and be controlled by you?” The Magma Emperor let out an angry snarl. It turned around and planned to attack Chu Feng.

“Ahh~~~”

“Noo~~~”

However, before the Magma Emperor could do anything, it let out a miserable scream. Its body began to rapidly decrease in size. Soon, the several thousand meter-tall enormous body had turned into the Magma Emperor Sword that was covered in blazing flames.

“So disrespectful. It would seem... that I will have to properly teach you a lesson again.”

Chu Feng extended his hand and then made a grabbing gesture. The Magma Emperor Sword immediately flew into his grasp. Then, Chu Feng flicked the Magma Emperor Sword, causing it to let out a strange motion.

“Bastard, stop!” The Magma Emperor let out a scream again. This time around, the scream sounded even more miserable.

“You dare to continue to address me as bastard?” Chu Feng raised his hand and flicked the Magma Emperor Sword again. This time around, the motion was even stronger.

“I got it, this Emperor understands, okay? Quickly, stop,” The Magma Emperor let out another miserable scream. However, that time around, it admitted defeat.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled complacently.

If the Magma Emperor had not fused with the Incomplete Ancestral Armament, Chu Feng would really not be able to sort it out.

After all, it was a fellow that did not fear death. To people that were not afraid of death, how could one possibly make it fear anything else?

However, the Magma Emperor had turned into an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it was being controlled by Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng possessed many means to take care of it.

Earlier, Chu Feng had only flicked the sword lightly. Yet, that had caused the Magma Emperor incomparable pain.

Most importantly, the Magma Emperor was unable to die even if it wanted to. It could only endure that sort of pain.

Furthermore, that pain was simply unbearable. Regardless of how tough someone might be, they would not be able to endure that pain.

As such, it could only give in to Chu Feng. Even though it was extremely unwilling to do so, it could only obey Chu Feng's order.

Even if it was still unreconciled, there was nothing it could do to Chu Feng as the Incomplete Ancestral Armament had already been subdued by Chu Feng. As for it, it was only the Incomplete Ancestral Armament's soul.

Chu Feng would still be able to use the Incomplete Ancestral Armament without its help. However, it would have to endure that sort of pain inflicted by Chu Feng forever. Thus, when weighing the pros and cons, it naturally decided to submit to Chu Feng.

"Am... am I seeing things?"

At that moment, the people in the Transmogrification Gate that were filled with fear earlier were standing with mouths wide open as they stared at Chu Feng. They appeared to have been petrified.

They had all born witness to the scene of Chu Feng teaching the Magma Emperor a lesson. Merely... they felt it to be too unbelievable.

After all, it was the renowned Magma Emperor that Chu Feng was tormenting earlier. noVε(Lb/1n

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2112 - The Outcome Of The Battle**

"So that's the case, so that's the case," At that moment, the Elf King revealed an overjoyed expression. He gasped in admiration. "Although I do not know what sort of method little friend Chu Feng used, it appears that he has truly subdued the Magma Emperor, making it serve him."

"Elf King, what you said is correct. Little friend Chu Feng is truly a miracle maker," The Heaven Reaching Immortal said to the Elf King. A smile covered his face. At the same time, there was also a trace of astonishment.

It would be one thing if it were some other existence that was subdued by Chu Feng. However, this was the Magma Emperor, the legendary Magma Emperor that nearly destroyed the entire Holy Land of Martialism ten thousand years ago.

“So, Lord Chu Feng really, he really subdued the Magma Emperor?”  
n)(Ovelb1n

“Amazing! This is simply godly! Simply too unbelievable!” After hearing what the conversation between the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal, the crowd’s expressions became even more brilliant.

Excitement. An indescribable excitement filled the hearts of everyone present.

“Woosh~~~”

After putting the Magma Emperor Sword away, Chu Feng suddenly extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Immediately, a ray of light entered his hand.

It was a bracelet. That bracelet was precisely the Incomplete Ancestral Armament the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been using earlier.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, starting from now, you are to answer all my questions.”

“If you do not answer honestly, I will make you suffer,” Chu Feng said to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Even though the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not injured, he appeared to have completely lost his will to battle.

A Dark Hall’s Hall Master like that did not pose any threat to Chu Feng.

“Trash like you is not qualified to get words out of my mouth,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“Oh?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he formed a spirit formation on his palm and placed it onto the bracelet.

“You want to sever my connection with my Incomplete Ancestral Armament? It is not that I am looking down on you. Rather, it is truly impossible for you to do that,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said mockingly.

“Is that right?” Chu Feng smiled again. Then, he said, “If you had truly managed to completely subdue this Incomplete Imperial Armament, it would naturally be impossible for me to sever your connection with it with the power I currently possess.”

“However, the truth is that you have yet to completely subdue this Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Thus, it would not be hard for me to sever your connection with it.”

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s expression turned stiff. A trace of fear appeared in his eyes.

He felt that what Chu Feng said was very reasonable.

However, upon thinking about it some more, he recalled that Incomplete Ancestral Armaments were different from Imperial Armaments. Thus, it would be very difficult to sever the connection an Incomplete Ancestral Armament had with its master. It would be something impossible to accomplish even for him.

When it would be impossible for even him, how would Chu Feng be able to accomplish it?

No, he absolutely refused to believe that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques could surpass his own.

Thus, the worry that he had in his heart soon vanished. He started to smile, and said to Chu Feng mockingly, “Since you said it that easily, go ahead and give it a try then.”

“I shall see exactly how you, trash, can sever my connection with my Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“I’ll satisfy you,” As Chu Feng spoke, he exerted strength with his palm. Immediately, it started to shine brightly.

“Puu~~~”

The very next moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master opened his mouth and vomited a mouthful of blood.

After he vomited that mouthful of blood, the Dark Hall's Hall Master's expression became extremely ugly. Blood was also flowing from his eyes, nose and ears.

Most importantly, his body became extremely weak. In fact, many people were even able to see that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was... trembling. He was trembling uncontrollably.

However, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had no time to concern himself with those things. He raised his head and looked to Chu Feng. "You, you actually..."

At that moment, his eyes were not only filled with anger, but also astonishment. However, it was mostly covered with pain.

Earlier, he had deeply looked down on Chu Feng. However, as matters stood, after he had personally fought against Chu Feng, he had no choice but to admit that Chu Feng was a very powerful opponent.

Not only did Chu Feng's talent for martial cultivation surpass his own, even Chu Feng's world spirit techniques surpassed his own.

He felt extremely unreconciled. The more he admitted the truth, the more pained he felt.

Painful, it was truly painful. This sort of pain did not originate from his body. Rather, it came from deep within his heart.

The pain that was the most difficult to endure in this world was pain from one's heart.

Even for the Dark Hall's Hall Master, that pain was something that he couldn't endure.

"No, this is not real, this is not real!"

Thus, the Dark Hall's Hall Master began to firmly clench his fists and attack the void before him. His attacks shattered the void unceasingly.



He was using that sort of method to relieve himself, to vent his anger and alleviate his pain.

As for Chu Feng, he stood there watching him, watching the struggle of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

He would not disturb the Dark Hall's Hall Master. To Chu Feng, he would rather watch him, watch this ruthless fellow, suffer torment to his heart and soul for a longer period of time. To him, that could be said to be a sort of punishment; a punishment for taking so many innocent lives.

That situation persisted for an entire hour. Only then did the Dark Hall's Hall Master slowly raise his head. At that moment, he had managed to calm his state of mind to a relatively stable level.

"Chu Feng, I am willing to answer your questions. However, you must first answer one of my questions," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said.

"Speak away," Chu Feng said.

"Why would someone like you be in a place like this? Even in the Outer World, you should be considered to be a genius, no?"

"Why did you come here? Why?" asked the Dark Hall's Hall Master. A sense of irreconciliation was present in his tone when he asked that question. If it wasn't for Chu Feng, his plan would've been a success.

In the beginning, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had only felt Chu Feng to be someone abandoned by the Outer World, someone unworthy of mention. The reason for that was because he was someone that would be considered to be a genius even in the Outer World. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly compare to him? However, as matters stood, he had changed his opinion of Chu Feng.

He began to face Chu Feng squarely. Merely, even he knew that it was too late to treat Chu Feng seriously now.

"I am unable to answer that question," Chu Feng said, "It is your turn to answer me now."

"What is your surname? How did you get here?" Chu Feng asked.

“Haha... you truly act as if you are high and above. Did you think that you were certain you could defeat me?”

“Chu Feng, you are mistaken. I still have a trump card that I have yet to use.”

“As long as I possess this trump card, you will forever be unable to defeat me in this Holy Land of Martialism,” After saying those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master revealed a strange smile.

“Trying to escape?”

Chu Feng realized that the situation was bad the moment he saw that smile. His body shifted, and he arrived before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master while holding the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand. Using the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, he slashed at the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Buzz~~~”

However, as Chu Feng’s Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader slashed at the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, a strange light was emitted from the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s body. That light instantly covered him.

That light was extremely powerful. It emitted an overwhelming aura of righteousness. Regardless of how Chu Feng attacked it, he was unable to break through it.

Chu Feng felt a sensation he had never felt before from that light. He knew that... with his strength, it would be impossible for him to break through that light.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2113 - Realm of Gods**

“Chu Feng, do you realize this now? No matter how talented you are, when before absolute power, you will remain only an ant.”

“I admit that I was defeated in the battle today. I was defeated by you in this one-on-one battle.”

“That’s why I will definitely win next time. Next time, I will truly make you all open your eyes wide in amazement.”

“I will let you all know exactly how powerful of a background this Hall Master possess.”

After saying those words, the light that covered the Dark Hall’s Hall Master suddenly grew even more dazzling. It was so dazzling that even Chu Feng was forced to cover his face and move back.

When that light disappeared, the people were shocked to discover that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had... disappeared.

“It’s that trick again,” Chu Feng started to frown.

That was precisely the method the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had used to escape the Moon Immortal at the Icesnow Plains.

That escape method was extremely powerful. Likely, it was some sort of escaping treasure. Chu Feng was frowning because there was nothing he could do about the escape technique that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Suddenly, rumbles could be heard. Chu Feng raised his head upward, and discovered that it was the Transmogrification Gate opening.

“Chu Feng.”

After the gate was opened, many young and beautiful figures rushed toward Chu Feng.

They were Xian Miaomiao, Sima Ying and the others. Among them, Xian Miaomiao’s speed was the fastest. At that moment, she had already arrived before Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you are amazing. You made that Dark Hall’s Hall Master piss his pants in terror. I shall see whether he will dare to act so arrogantly again in the future,” Xian Miaomiao was jumping and hopping; she was extremely happy. It was as if she was feeling very elated.

Lil' Red was standing on Xian Miaomiao's shoulder. Complacency filled its insect face. Bouncing vivaciously, it said, "That's right, that's right. Great Sir is so very awesome. As expected of my Great Sir."

"Long live Lord Chu Feng, long live Lord Chu Feng."

"Lord Chu Feng, you are simply our savior. You have saved our lives."

"Lord Chu Feng, even the Magma Emperor has been subdued by you! You are simply akin to a god to us!!!"

"Finally, an overlord has appeared in our era. That overlord is you, Lord Chu Feng!!!"

"Thank you Lord Chu Feng, thank you Lord Chu Feng!!!"

.....

.....

Chu Feng discovered that, being led by the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal, many people came out of the Transmogrification Gate.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly shouted, "Everyone, please hear me out!!! The Dark Hall's Hall Master is still alive. You all cannot exit the Transmogrification Gate yet. Please return to the Transmogrification Gate immediately. The Holy Land of Martialism is still extremely dangerous right now."

"Ah?!!!" Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd were all startled.

However, they soon managed to react to Chu Feng's words. The people that came out of the Transmogrification Gate hurriedly pushed at the people behind them. They were even shouting, "Quickly, return, we must return. Didn't you hear what Lord Chu Feng said? The outside is not safe yet. Quickly, return to the Transmogrification Gate."

Chu Feng's warning was very useful. The crowd could be said to be extremely obedient toward Chu Feng. Soon, those people that wanted to come out all obediently returned to the Transmogrification Gate.

However, the Elf King and the others still walked toward Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, never would I have expected that you would really succeed. This old man has truly not misjudged you.”

“Say, how did you manage to subdue the Magma Emperor? I am extremely curious,” The Compass Immortal and the others began to praise Chu Feng without holding back. Chu Feng had truly broadened their horizons today.

As for Chu Feng, he was smiling without saying anything. When he saw the Compass Immortal walking out of the Transmogrification Gate, a boulder on his heart finally dropped.

Earlier, he had been extremely worried that the Compass Immortal did not listen to him, and had not gone to find the Transmogrification Gate. And now... he was finally relieved.

“Chu Feng, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master should’ve escaped. What do you plan to do now?” The Elf King asked.

Once the Elf King asked those words, the crowd all grew quiet. Although the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been driven away by Chu Feng, it remained that he was still alive. The most important matter now was how to take care of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Seniors, please rest assured. I left an imprint on the Dark Hall’s Hall Master when I was fighting him. That imprint is very well-hidden. I believe that he will not be able to discover it.”

“I am able to pursue him by following that imprint. He cannot escape,” Chu Feng said.

“Was it when you used the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader to injure him?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked in astonishment.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Never would I have expected that you already had a plan in mind, and had already planned ahead at that time,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal gasped in admiration upon finding out that his guess was true.

“That Dark Hall’s Hall Master escaped from the Icesnow Plains using that special technique. As he was able to use it once, he would inevitably be able to use it again.”

“As my strength is was about the same as his own, it would naturally be impossible for me to kill him with a single strike. As such, I had to make preparations ahead of time,” Chu Feng explained.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd did not say much. Instead, deep admiration appeared in their eyes.

Such a trick was something that even they would not necessarily be able to think of. Yet, Chu Feng had thought of it.

Not only did he think of it, he had also managed to accomplish it. That caused them to feel admiration for Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

“Chu Feng, are we able to assist you?” The Elf King asked.

“I keep feeling that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master might be related to me. Thus... I feel that it’s better that I take care of this personally,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. In that case, are you able to sense where the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is at now?” The Elf King asked.

“I am able to sense his direction. However, as the distance is too great, I am unable to ascertain his position,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, there is no time to waste. Go ahead and chase after him. You don’t have to worry about us,” The Elf King said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded. Then, he turned around and left.

He did not bring the Four Great Divine Beasts with him. The reason for that was because, as matters stood, the Four Great Divine Beasts would not be able to help him either.

As for the Four Great Divine Beasts, they understood Chu Feng’s intentions. Thus, they hid inside the Transmogrification Gate with everyone else.

.....

Chu Feng chased after the Dark Hall’s Hall Master continuously for many days without rest.

However, he suddenly stopped at this moment.

The reason for that was because enormous tall walls had appeared before him.

Those walls were glistening with light; they were walls formed with a spirit formation. Those spirit formation walls were extremely firm. They were impossible for even the current Chu Feng to destroy.

However, in the center of that world spirit wall was an enormous gate. Inside the gate... looked like a different world.

Firstly, the flowers, plants and trees inside the gate were all things that Chu Feng had never seen before. Furthermore, most importantly... An extremely dense Ancient Era's aura was being emitted from that place.

It was as if all the grasses and trees in that place were all from the Ancient Era.

That place was the most famous location in the Holy Land of Martialism. It was also the most dangerous forbidden area.

The Ancient Era's Cemetery, also known as the Realm of Gods.

After Chu Feng stared at the Realm of Gods for a very long time, he carefully took out an item from his Cosmos Sack.

It was a ladle, a seemingly very ordinary ladle. However, when Chu Feng held that ladle before, his Inherited Bloodline had throbbed twice. It had caused a special reaction from his Inherited Bloodline.

Merely, after Chu Feng took a glance at the ladle, he put it away. Then, he raised his head and looked to the Realm of Gods.

"Never would I expect to come to this place by chasing after the Dark Hall's Hall Master." n-(0v&ℓ℔In

Chu Feng sighed emotionally. Back then, Chu Feng had wanted to come to the Realm of Gods before he even set foot into the Overlord Domain.

It was for no other reason than the fact that that ladle brought forth a special sensation to him. That sensation was so familiar, yet so indescribable. As for that ladle, it had originated from the Realm of Gods.

Merely, after Chu Feng entered the Overlord Domain, things had begun to happen unceasingly. He ended up going to a lot of places, to do a lot of things, and did not have the time to do what he wanted to do.

Thus, Chu Feng had not been able to go to the Realm of Gods the entire time.

And now, he was finally here. He had arrived at the place where he had wanted to go the entire time. Merely, upon getting there Chu Feng was slightly hesitant, and slightly afraid of stepping into the Realm of Gods.

It was for no other reason than the words spoken by the Dark Hall's Hall Master before.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the Dark Hall's Hall Master didn't seem to be joking with him. It seemed that he truly possessed helpers in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, as matters stood, Chu Feng possessed no alternatives. He must enter the Realm of Gods. Even if enormous dangers awaited him in the Realm of Gods, he must still enter.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2114 - Can Only Wait For Death**

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng started to move. He turned into a ray of light and entered the Realm of Gods that no one dared to enter.

Upon entering the Realm of Gods, Chu Feng was able to sense the aura of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Thus, Chu Feng did not proceed randomly. Instead, he followed the aura of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

One thing worthy of being mentioned was that Chu Feng did not feel any danger upon entering the Realm of Gods.

Instead, the Realm of Gods was completely different from how he had imagined it to be. This place was not desolate and barren. Instead, there were



lush amounts of plants. Furthermore, they were all plants that Chu Feng had never seen before.

Even the water flowing in this place was extra sweet. The reason why Chu Feng knew was because he had been bold enough to drink the water out of curiosity.

In short, everything in the Realm of Gods was very beautiful. This place was so beautiful that it resembled a land of Immortals, a paradise.

Forbidden area? That term seemed to be completely unrelated to this place.

The forest was very dense. It stretched for several hundred thousand miles. For ordinary people, they would not be able to walk through such a forest.

However, Chu Feng was able to rapidly pass through it. After passing through the forest, he entered a vast desert.

“Thump, thump~~~”

After he entered the desert, Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline suddenly throbbed twice.

“It’s this feeling.”

Chu Feng stopped and grabbed the sand on the ground. Even though it was the first time that he had touched this sand, he felt a feeling of familiarity from it.

Even though Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline was no longer throbbing, the blood in his entire body was rolling intensely over and over. *noVε(Lb/1n*

It was boiling over. This was the sensation of one’s blood racing.

“This place is most definitely related to my Inherited Bloodline.”

“But, exactly what is it? Who would be able to tell me the answer?”

As Chu Feng looked to the desert as far as the eye could see, his gaze started to tense up.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved again. Like a wild dragon galloping through the desert, his speed was not only extremely fast, but he also gave rise to two streams of violent sand smoke that fluttered about in all directions.

Chu Feng continued to chase after the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Soon, he reached the depths of the desert.

At that moment, Chu Feng gasped at how vast the Realm of Gods was. It truly surpassed his imagination.

Most importantly, his Inherited Bloodline would, from time to time, end up throbbing twice.

That sort of sensation seemed as if it were reminding Chu Feng that this place... was his home.

"No longer moving?"

Suddenly, Chu Feng started to frown. He was able to sense that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was no longer moving. Instead, he'd stopped somewhere.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng did not slow his pace. As matters stood, he had no choice but to continue onward.

After traveling some more, Chu Feng used his Heaven's Eyes to observe the place before him. Immediately, his expression turned sluggish.

Astonishment filled his face. Chu Feng was truly shocked. It had been a very long time since Chu Feng had been so intensely shocked. It was a feeling as if all of the pores in his body were opened.

A large amount of palaces appeared before him. Their numbers were magnificent, and simply boundless. They could not be described with the word 'city.' Instead, they would be better described as a 'country.'

The buildings in that place were all very imposing and domineering, each possessing their own unique charm.

Not to mention that the palaces were impregnable, merely by looking at their physical appearances, one could tell that they were not things that ordinary people were capable of designing. Before Chu Feng had arrived before those vast palaces, even he would not have been able to design palaces like them.

Chu Feng felt that the people capable of designing those sorts of palaces were most definitely extraordinary individuals.

Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered that while the palaces were ancient, they did not emit any Ancient Era's aura.

It meant that those palaces should have been constructed after the Ancient Era.

More importantly, when Chu Feng saw those palaces, his Inherited Bloodline started to throb more intensely.

Although that state did not persist for long, it was the most intense reaction his Inherited Bloodline has had since he'd entered the Realm of Gods.

"It is time to find the answer. Regardless of whether I live or die, I must know what sort of relationship this place possesses with my clan."

After saying those words, Chu Feng once again started to move onward. Passing through the various palaces, Chu Feng finally arrived before a vast gate, and discovered a familiar figure.

It was the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"You actually managed to find me?"

The Dark Hall's Hall Master revealed a shocked expression upon seeing Chu Feng.

"I will not let you get away this time around," Chu Feng said.

"Hahaha, Chu Feng, you are truly amusing."

"You actually dare to still threaten me in this place? Could it be that you don't know whose territory this Realm of Gods belongs to?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master spoke proudly.

"Could it be that this is your territory?" Chu Feng asked.

"That's right. I am the master of the Realm of Gods. This place... is ruled by me."

“Although I do not know how you managed to find me, but since you’re here, it will save me the trouble of going to find you.”

“Seniors, please show yourselves. Help me eliminate this arrogant and conceited man!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s body trembled. He was able to tell that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master didn’t seem to be joking around, nor did he seem to be trying to scare him. Instead, it seemed like he was truly calling for something.

Merely, were there even people in the Realm of Gods? Or... could it be that this place was occupied by his accomplices? Could that be the reason why he said this place belonged to him?

“Rumble~~~”

At the moment when Chu Feng was pondering, the gate behind the Dark Hall’s Hall Master suddenly opened.

At the moment when the gate was opened, Chu Feng’s expression immediately turned stiff.

There were several thousand silhouettes inside the gate. They stood behind the gate in orderly rows.

Those people were not wearing clothes. Instead, they wearing armor weaved with special straw over their naked bodies.

Although those suits of armor did not appear to be domineering, they were emitting a special sort of power. They seemed to be a sort of special treasure.

Furthermore, the parts of those people’s bodies that were not covered by their straw armor were tattooed with special veined patterns. Those patterns were strange. It seemed that they could increase their battle power.

In other words, they were spirit formations; a special sort of spirit formation that not even Chu Feng could grasp.

However, most importantly, those several thousand people were all Martial Emperor-level experts. Furthermore, the great majority of them were peak Martial Emperors.

Moreover, over a hundred of them were Half Martial Ancestors, actual Half Martial Ancestors.

Lastly, the three old men that lead them possessed exceptional auras. Even Chu Feng felt absolutely suppressed when before them.

This meant that those three old men were not only Half Martial Ancestors, they should also be rank three Half Martial Ancestors. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to bring forth such an oppressive sensation upon Chu Feng.

“I have truly entered the tiger’s den.”

At that moment, Chu Feng laughed wryly. Even though he had anticipated something like this to begin with, even he felt a sense of despair after actually seeing the accomplices of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

After all, his opponents were too powerful. Faced with those opponents, Chu Feng would not be able to escape even if he wanted to.

“Hehe...” Seeing the despair on Chu Feng’s face, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s mouth rose into a smile. He felt extremely pleased.

Other than trampling Chu Feng the first time he met him, he had been suppressed by Chu Feng in every other encounter.

Especially the final battle. He was even defeated by Chu Feng. That made him, someone who felt himself to be a genius, someone who was extremely conceited, feel extremely unreconciled.

This time around, he was finally able to win against Chu Feng again. He was finally able to suppress Chu Feng again.

At that moment, he had decided to not give Chu Feng the chance to escape and become stronger. He was determined to kill Chu Feng right here.

Thinking about that, coldness flashed through the eyes of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “Kill him!!!”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After the Dark Hall’s Hall Master gave the order, the thousands of people all flew out from the gate uniformly and surrounded Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng closed his eyes. He was not someone who was fond of waiting for death. However... he knew that when faced with so many rank two Half Martial Ancestors and even three rank three Half Martial Ancestors, the only thing he could do was wait for death.

“We pay our respects to master!!!”

However, those people seemed to not plan to kill Chu Feng. Instead, they seemed to have kneeled and saluted the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“You all are truly...”

At that moment, Chu Feng opened his eyes. He was furious. He had clearly prepared himself to be killed. Yet, they actually did not kill him. That sort of sensation of being ignored made him feel extremely displeased.

“This???” However, when he saw the scene before his eyes, his eyes shrunk, and his expression changed enormously.

In surprise, he discovered that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had the same expression as him. The mouth of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was opened even wider than his own. It was as if he had received an enormous shock.

The reason for that was because the thousands of people were not kneeling to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Instead, they were kneeling to Chu Feng.

Those thousands of powerful existences were kneeling to Chu Feng.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2115 - Deemed To Be God**

“Hey! What are you all doing?! Have you all gone mad?! Do you not even know who your master is?!” The Dark Hall’s Hall master shouted emotionally.

However, right at that moment, one of the three old rank three Half Martial Ancestors shouted back at him, “Shut your mouth!”

His oppressive might immediately sprung up everywhere with his words. Like a scarecrow, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was knocked flying before firmly smashing into one of the distant walls.

Blood sprayed out of his mouth as the sound of bones cracking was heard nonstop.

Merely a single attack had caused the Dark Hall's Hall Master to be seriously injured.

Then, that old man pointed to the Dark Hall's Hall Master and shouted, "Men! Capture that arrogant man!"

After that old man spoke, several tens of people rushed over. Using special ropes, they ruthlessly tied up the Dark Hall's Hall Master. They were so fierce and brutal that they simply did not treat the Dark Hall's Hall Master as a human. Rather, they were treating him like an animal.

"What is going on? Exactly what is going on?! Why are you all treating me like this?!"

The Dark Hall's Hall Master had gone mad. He was truly confused by the scene before him.

He had thought himself to be the master of this place the entire time. Even if the people here refused to comply with his orders, they should still protect him.

Yet, what was this? He, their grand master, was actually tied up by them. As for Chu Feng... he was actually being worshipped by those people.

"Master, welcome home."

Suddenly, the three kneeling men spoke in unison.

"Master, welcome home!!!"

After those three old men said those words, the thousands of experts kneeling to Chu Feng repeated their words in unison.

Regardless of their cultivation, their tones were all filled with respect and happiness as they said those words.

It was as if Chu Feng was truly this place's master, that they were truly waiting for Chu Feng's return.

"You all... this is?" In fact, even Chu Feng was puzzled.

He had firmly thought that the mysterious experts were the accomplices, the backing, of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Yet, based on the situation now, it seemed to definitely not be the case. Instead, without an exception, they had all gone against the Dark Hall's Hall Master. It was as if they were his, Chu Feng's, backing instead.

"Master, we know that you are still confused."

"However, please follow us. We will bring master to see a certain person. At that time, master will naturally understand everything," The old man in the lead stood up and pointed to the gate. After that, he began to lead the way for Chu Feng.

Seeing that, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and followed them inside.

Guided by the crowd, Chu Feng entered the depths of the vast country.

Chu Feng suddenly gained a whole new understanding of that place. On his way, Chu Feng was able to see many mighty guards with Imperial Armaments guarding the various junctions. Merely by their appearance, he was able to tell that they were very well trained.

After passing through the various guarded junctions, Chu Feng seemed to have entered the living area of the country. He was able to see children playing, as well as women and other passersby.

However, regardless of whether it might be the guards, the children or the women, their bodies were all covered with special veined patterns, and they were all wearing special straw clothes. They were extremely different.

Most importantly, when they saw Chu Feng, they all half knelt to the ground and bowed to Chu Feng respectfully. Then, they would respectfully say the same words: "We pay our respects to master."

In fact, Chu Feng was even able to sense that for the people with a young age, or those with similar ages as Chu Feng, they would become so emotional that their bodies started to tremble when they saw Chu Feng.

It was as if they were all longing for the day, longing for Chu Feng's appearance.



Even though he felt it was very inconceivable, Chu Feng faintly felt that those people felt great adoration for him.

It had already surpassed the degree of 'master.' It was as if, in their hearts, Chu Feng was a 'god.' That was the reason why they held Chu Feng in such reverence.

"Could it be that I am truly this place's master?"

Chu Feng started to have that sort of way of thinking. The reason for that was because he was certain that these people here were definitely not his clansmen.

It was a feeling that he had, a feeling that he felt from his first glance at these people. Although these people were extremely respectful toward Chu Feng, Chu Feng was certain that they were not his clansmen.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng became even more determined to know the truth. He wanted to get to know this place.

Finally, Chu Feng arrived before the entrance of a grand palace. When they reached the gates, everyone stopped.

"Master, please go ahead," The old man leading the crowd pushed open the gate. However, he did not plan to enter. Instead, he indicated for Chu Feng to enter by himself.

Chu Feng first used his spirit power to run over the palace. After discovering that there was no one in the palace, he looked to the people surrounding him. They were all standing around him with heads lowered in a very humble manner. It was as if they did not dare to look Chu Feng in the face.

Their current appearance did not seem to indicate that they were afraid of Chu Feng. Instead, it seemed like more of an act of respect toward Chu Feng.

Thus, at that moment, there was only a single person looking Chu Feng head-on. That person was the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

The Dark Hall's Hall Master was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with hatred and killing intent. In fact, Chu Feng was even able to hear the sound of his teeth grinding against one another.

It was clear that the Dark Hall's Hall Master felt enormous hatred for Chu Feng.

"Hey hey hey, what's going on with you? Didn't you say that you were going to kill me?" Chu Feng looked to the Dark Hall's Hall Master and mocked him with a smile on his face.

"Fuck yo..." The Dark Hall's Hall Master cursed at Chu Feng.

"Paa~~~"

However, before he could finish cussing out at Chu Feng, a powerful palm landed onto his face.

It was that old rank three Half Martial Ancestor. He had arrived before the Dark Hall's Hall Master out of nowhere.

"Pa, pa, pa~~~"

After the first slap to the face, that old man unleashed successive slaps on the Dark Hall's Hall Master. His slaps caused the Dark Hall's Hall Master to waver left and right. After that, his cheeks were completely mutilated, and his facial bones were shattered.

"My master is not someone that you can insult," After ferociously slapping the Dark Hall's Hall Master, that old man spoke fiercely.

The gaze which that old man currently possessed was truly frightening. It was as if he could devour someone alive with only his gaze. Even the Dark Hall's Hall Master was frightened speechless by that gaze.

However, when that old man turned around to look at Chu Feng, a smile filled his face. Very respectfully, he pointed to the palace and said to Chu Feng, "Master, please go ahead."

Chu Feng stopped hesitating. He nodded at that old man, then proceeded to enter through the gate.

Right after Chu Feng walked through the gate, the gate immediately closed.

After the gates were closed, Chu Feng was unable to see the situation outside even when using his Heaven's Eyes. This meant that the palace possessed an isolating effect.

“Master, go ahead and have a seat. As you’ve returned, there’s no need for you to be so restrained,” Right at that moment, an old man’s voice suddenly sounded.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng was immediately startled. It was clear... that there was someone in the palace.

Furthermore... the master of the palace was extremely powerful. He was even more powerful than the three old rank three Half Martial Ancestors outside.

Else, it would be impossible for Chu Feng to still be unable to determine the location of the person who had spoken earlier even after they spoke.

“Rank four Half Martial Ancestor?” At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart was filled with astonishment.

Rank three Half Martial Ancestors were extremely powerful already. Yet, this place actually had a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. In fact, it might even be possible for the person that spoke to possess a cultivation that surpassed rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

At that moment, an enormous wave emerged in Chu Feng’s heart.

This Realm of Gods truly possessed a numerous amount of experts. They were so unimaginably powerful.

One must know that before the appearance of these people, the Elf King was the strongest expert in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, his cultivation was only that of a peak Martial Emperor.

Yet, in this place, there were many Half Martial Ancestor-level experts. As for peak Martial Emperors, they were even more numerous. The strength of the power here truly astonished Chu Feng.

Most importantly, such a formidable power actually addressed Chu Feng as master, and treated him so respectfully.

The respect that they had shown Chu Feng was simply as if they were viewing him as a god.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## Chapter 2116 - The Disclosure Of The Truth

“Master, please sit,” That old man’s voice sounded again. However, he still had yet to reveal himself.

“Senior, why don’t you show yourself?” Chu Feng clasped his fist.

“Master, it has only been several years since we last met, yet you’ve actually forgotten my voice?”

Suddenly, an old man appeared beside Chu Feng.

“Senior, it’s you?” Upon seeing that person, Chu Feng revealed an overjoyed expression.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng recognized that old man. He was none other than the blind old man he had met in the Eastern Sea Region.

“Master, please don’t address me as senior. To be precise, I am your servant,” As the blind old man said those words, he bowed to Chu Feng respectfully.

Although the blind old man was truly blind, he seemed to possess an extremely strong perception. Through his perception, he was able to see the entire world.

“Senior, what exactly is going on here?” Chu Feng asked.

“Please stop addressing me as ‘senior’, for that would be equivalent to cursing this old servant to die sooner. If you do not mind, you can address me as ‘Blind Servant,’” The blind old man said.

“Senior is a great benefactor to this Chu Feng. How could I address you as a servant? If you do not mind, I can address you as ‘Blind Uncle,’” Chu Feng said.

Actually, based on the difference in age between the two of them, Chu Feng should be addressing the blind old man as ‘grandpa.’ However, Chu Feng felt that the word ‘grandpa’ possessed too much seniority, and that the blind old man would refuse to accept being addressed as ‘grandpa.’ Thus, he decided to address him as ‘uncle.’

“Since master insists, then please address this old servant as such,” The blind old man said.

“Blind Uncle, exactly what is going on here? Where is Zi Ling right now?” Chu Feng asked in succession.

He knew that the blind old man had taken Zi Ling away a long time ago. Chu Feng had been worried about Zi Ling’s safety the entire time.

“Master, please have a seat. I’ll slowly tell you everything,” The blind old man said.

Hearing that, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and took a seat. He was able to tell that this blind old man would not tell him anything should he not sit.

It was different from before. Chu Feng seemed to really be their master. All the people in this Realm of Gods, regardless of what their cultivation might be, regardless of how much more powerful they were compared to Chu Feng, none of them dared to disrespect Chu Feng.

“I shall start explaining from this place known as the Realm of Gods to the people of the Holy Land of Martialism. This place is the former site of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“The Chu Heavenly Clan was the most powerful clan in the Holy Land of Martialism after the Ancient Era passed. In their era, no one dared to disobey them. They were the true rulers of this land.”

“The Ancient Era’s Elves that deem themselves to be the rulers now were also extremely respectful toward master’s clan back then. Every year, they would always pay enormous tribute to the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“The so-called Five Emperors after the Ancient Era, if they were placed before master’s clan, they would all be nothing more than ants,” The blind old man said.

“My clan?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was surprised. He had actually already had the thought that he possessed a special relationship with the Realm of Gods, that the Realm of Gods had a very high chance of being a remnant of his clan. Merely, he did not dare to ascertain anything.

The reason for all that was because the Old Ape that he met on the Heavenly Road had told him that his clan originated from this world. Merely, the Old Ape did not tell him whether remnants of his clan remained in this world. He only said... that the people of this world had already forgotten about his clan.

“Blind Uncle, in that case, are there any of my clansmen left in this place?”

“Why did they decide to enter the Outer World?”

“Moreover, do you have any news of them now?” Chu Feng asked in succession.

“Master, please don’t be anxious. This old servant will explain everything to you,” The blind old man said, “Currently, everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan is in the Outer World. This old servant possess a low status. Thus, I do not have any news regarding them.”

“As for why they decided to enter the Outer World, it was because a great lord appeared in the Chu Heavenly Clan back then. That person possessed extremely powerful strength that surpassed all of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s previous Clan Chiefs. He was confident that he would be able to let the Chu Heavenly Clan obtain an acknowledged place even in the Outer World.”

“At that time, although the Chu Heavenly Clan was the fully deserving overlord of the Holy Land of Martialism, none of its clansmen were willing to stay in this place for the rest of their lives. Thus, they ended up deciding to proceed for the Outer World together.”

“Back then, everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan planned to leave. However, they were unwilling to abandon this place. Thus, that great lord ordered us, their servants, to stay here and guard this place.”

“However, that great lord was still worried. He feared that there would be people in the Holy Land of Martialism that would pretend to be people from the Chu Heavenly Clan and ruin the Chu Heavenly Clan’s reputation.”

“Thus, before leaving, he had eliminated the memory of the Chu Heavenly Clan from all the people in the Holy Land of Martialism. Thus, as matters stood, there was no one in the Holy Land of Martialism that knows that the Chu Heavenly Clan was the true ruler after the Ancient Era.”

“All these years, us, the servants, have guarded this place the entire time. We have never set foot outside,” The blind old man explained.

“In that case, the reason why the Realm of Gods possessed its ferocious name, the reason why so many people would die in the Realm of Gods was all caused by you all?” Chu Feng asked.

“Throughout our generations, we have followed that great lord’s order. We are not allowed to let the people of this world know about our existence, or the existence of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“However, we would also not willfully slaughter the innocent. Merely, for the sake of preventing others from knowing about us, we set up many traps in this place. Many of the people who died here were killed after they triggered the traps, and not because they were killed by us.”

“Of course, we will also warn them before they encounter those traps. Merely, they refused to listen, and insisted on entering. As such, their deaths cannot be blamed on us,” The blind old man explained.

“But, didn’t they say that all the people that set foot into this place will definitely end up dying?” Chu Feng asked.

“That was all falsehoods,” The blind old man said.

“I’ve also heard that this place possessed a special sort of germ. If one were to be infected by it, one would definitely die. Furthermore, all the people that entered this place would be infected by it.”

“Furthermore, it is said that those below the Martial Emperor level will definitely die if they are inflicted by that germ. Is that true?” Chu Feng asked.

“That germ does exist. It is something emitted by a special plant in this place. However, not everyone will be infected by it. Only those that enter the area where that plant is grown will be infected,” The blind old man explained.

“So that’s the case. But, if you all just do not wish for people to know about this place, wouldn’t it be fine to seal this place away? Why go through that much trouble?” Chu Feng asked.

“That great lord said that the gates to this place could not be closed. If we were to close the gates, it would signify that we are afraid. The Chu Heavenly Clan does not fear anyone,” The blind old man said. n(/σ-/v).e..ℓ--B--1((n

“I understand now,” Chu Feng truly understood. His clan was most definitely extremely conceited. They were so conceited that while they did not wish for people to know about this place, they refused to conceal it.

In the end, even though Chu Feng’s clan had left, even though they had wiped away the memories regarding them from everyone...

The Chu Heavenly Clan actually did not wish for the people to truly forget about them.

Thus, even though they had left, they still left behind fear, a fear of the unknown.

Using that fear, they warned the people from the Holy Land of Martialism that regardless of how powerful they might become, there remained a power they could not contend against in this Holy Land of Martialism.

“But, Blind Uncle... why would you be in the Eastern Sea Region back then? At that time... you?” Chu Feng asked.

“This old servant had already known about master’s identity at that time. Furthermore, I have been secretly protecting you ever since the day you were brought out of the Heavenly Road by Huangfu Haoyue. Merely, because Lord Xuanyuan had ordered it, this old servant did not dare to inform you of the truth,” The blind old man said.

“Lord Xuanyuan? Who is this Lord Xuanyuan that you speak of?” Chu Feng asked.

“He is your father,” The blind old man answered.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

**Chapter 2117 - Mountain-like Paternal Love [1. Mountain-like → enormous.]**



“My father?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s body trembled. A sensation that he had never felt before filled his entire body.

“Logically, us servants are not allowed to leave this place. It was Lord Xuanyuan who found this old servant and ordered this old servant to protect you. It is only because of that that an exception was made and this old servant was allowed to leave this place.”

“While Lord Xuanyuan had ordered this old servant to protect you... he had also ordered that I must not interfere unless I absolutely must.”

“Lord Xuanyuan said that, for certain trials, you must experience them personally. Only by personally experiencing them would you be able to truly mature.”

“Thus, this old servant naturally could not tell you that he has been protecting you the entire time. The reason for that was because Lord Xuanyuan said that if you are to find out that you had someone protecting you the entire time, you would become overly confident. At that time, regardless of what sort of enemy you faced, regardless of what sort of calamity you faced, you would not be scared.”

“In truth, this old servant has never actually gone out to save you. It could be said that... master’s current level of progress is completely unrelated to this old servant. Master, you have gotten this far by relying on yourself.”

“I think that this is also what Lord Xuanyuan wanted,” The blind old man said.

Hearing those words, the sensation that filled Chu Feng’s entire body grew even more intense. In fact, Chu Feng’s eyes had grown somewhat red.

At that moment, he felt a sensation that he had never felt in his entire life.

It was paternal love. Paternal love from his biological father.

In the past, Chu Feng had thought that he had caused his father to be driven out of the Chu Clan and suffer in the Heavenly Road because he was lacking in talent.

Chu Feng felt that he had let his father down, that he could not expect anything from his father. Even when he entered the Heavenly Road, Chu Feng did not get the chance to see his father.

Chu Feng had not blamed his father. He only blamed himself. He blamed himself for being too weak, so weak that he brought harm upon his parents.

As such, Chu Feng had never thought that his father would do anything for him.

However, today, after hearing what the blind old man said, Chu Feng came to know the truth.

Chu Feng realized that he had not met this blind old man, this grand benefactor of his, by coincidence. Instead, it had been arranged by his father.

It turned out that his father had not abandoned him. On the contrary, he had the blind old man watch over him and protect him from the shadows the entire time.

Even though Chu Feng had suffered quite a bit and received quite a bit of humiliation over the years, and the blind old man had not appeared to help him during those times, it remained that the blind old man had been watching over him.

If Chu Feng had truly faced death, the blind old man would have acted to save him.

Most importantly, it was per his father's orders that the blind old man had protected Chu Feng this entire time.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked with a serious expression, "Blind Uncle, you said that it was my father that came to find you?" The reason for that was because he had a plan?.

"That is indeed the case," The blind old man nodded.

"When did that happen?" Chu Feng asked.

"It was after you were brought out of the Heavenly Road by Huangfu Haoyue," The blind old man said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled once again.

Logically, the Heavenly Road was the Chu Clan's Forbidden Area. That place should have been a prison for Chu Feng's father.

Chu Feng believed that his father and the Old Ape were both enduring torment in that forbidden area. Else, it would be impossible for their cultivations to be decreasing.

Furthermore, it seemed that the Chu Clan had people monitoring that forbidden area the entire time. That was the reason why they were unable to leave.

Logically, Chu Feng's father should not have been able to leave the Heavenly Road's forbidden area.

However, it would appear that he had been mistaken. Chu Feng's father had clearly left that forbidden area before. Else, how could he have found the blind old man and had him protect him?

Merely, since that forbidden area was incapable of trapping his father, why would his father not escape with the Old Ape?

Wouldn't their cultivations decrease by staying in the forbidden area? If they were to stay there for too long, they would become cripples!

Or, could it be that the person guarding his father was extremely powerful? So powerful that even his father could not escape?

Or, could it be that Chu Feng's father was willing to accept the punishment, that he had decided not to escape even though he was able to?

All sorts of questions hovered in Chu Feng's mind. Merely, even after thinking about it for a very long time, Chu Feng was unable to think of an answer.

"Due to Lord Xuanyuan's order, this old servant was unable to help you too much. I needed to allow you to mature by yourself."

"However, I managed to see the affection you possessed toward Miss Zi Ling and the others, as well as the determination that they had in helping you."

"Thus, I took them as my disciples. Using my abilities, I helped them increase their cultivations. It could be said that I have, on your behalf, helped them accomplish their cherished desires."

“However, their foundations are truly too weak. No matter how this old servant helped them, they were still unable to actually catch up to you, much less help you.”

“In the end, those two boys Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi ended up having master help them instead,” When mentioning that matter, the blind old man started to smile. It was a self-mocking smile. It was as if he was declaring that his disciples were still no match for Chu Feng.

“But, as for Zi Ling...” When the blind old man said those words, his expression changed. He wanted to say something, but ended up hesitating.

Chu Feng realized that something was wrong and immediately stood up to ask, “Blind Uncle, what happened to Zi Ling?”

“Back then, you were being hunted by the Four Great Imperial Clans. Due to being unable to help you, Zi Ling and the others were feeling extremely pained.”

“Furthermore, as I inadvertently mentioned a taboo technique to Zi Ling before, Zi Ling started to have an idea at that time.”

“Later on, when I went to visit them, Zi Ling started to beg me to use that taboo technique to increase her power.”

“Originally, I refused her. After all, that taboo technique is extremely dangerous. However, Zi Ling insisted on attempting it. She said that if she could not share life’s joys and sorrows with you, master, then she would be your woman in vain. That she would rather be dead than alive.”

“When I heard those words, this old servant truly realized the feelings Miss Zi Ling has toward you.”

“In the end, I was unable to win against her, and ended up using that taboo technique,” The blind old man said.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt pain in his heart. He had thought the entire time that it had been good for Zi Ling and the others to stay with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

He had not expected that having them stay with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would cause them such great pain. That was something that Chu Feng had overlooked.

As matters stood, he put himself in their shoes and was able to feel the pain that Zi Ling and the others felt. The more he thought about it, the more pained he felt. Chu Feng felt that he had truly wronged Zi Ling and the others enormously.

“Blind Uncle, what sort of taboo technique is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is a taboo technique beneficial to Divine Bodies. That taboo technique originated from the Ancient Era. It was originally one of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s secret techniques.”

“However, that secret technique is useless for the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan, though there would occasionally be Divine Bodies born among us servants. The Chu Heavenly Clan was very fond of us servants. As such, they taught us that secret technique.”

“After using that secret technique, a Divine Body will be able to gain complete mastery over their Divine Power, fusing into one with it. With that, their talent would increase enormously.”

“However, it is also extremely dangerous. Furthermore, one would have to endure pain so great that it is nearly unbearable.”

“Many people have died to that taboo technique due to being unable to endure the pain. Their bodies would explode, and their souls extinguished.”

“As that forbidden technique is incapable of stopping once it is used, one will either come out alive or die while using it.”

“Thus, even for us, we would not dare to use that forbidden technique,” The blind old man said.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

**Chapter 2118 - Heavenly Bloodline**

“Then, what about Zi Ling? Did she use that taboo technique?” Chu Feng asked hurriedly.

“She did,” The blind old man answered.

“Then, what was the outcome?” Chu Feng asked hurriedly.

“Miss Zi Ling managed to come out alive. Merely...”

“Merely?” Chu Feng became even more anxious. From the reaction of the blind old man, he sensed that something was amiss.

However, Chu Feng did not reveal his anxiety. He was afraid that the blind old man would blame himself.

“Although she managed to survive it, she received an enormous backlash from it. It is a backlash that even I am unable to suppress,” Speaking those words, the blind old man revealed an expression filled with self-blame.

Suddenly, the blind old man’s knees bent. With a ‘putt,’ he kneeled before Chu Feng.

He smashed his head to the ground and said, “Master, it is all my fault. I should not have had the impulse to have Zi Ling use a taboo technique that even we cannot control, and I ended up hurting her because of it.”

“Master, I know that you deeply love Miss Zi Ling. This is all this old servant’s fault. Master, please punish this old servant severely!!!” After saying those words, the blind old man ruthlessly smashed his head into the ground again. The power of that smash was so strong that the palace hall started to rumble.

“Blind Uncle, please stand up.” Chu Feng hurriedly lent an arm to help the blind old man up. However, he was unable to move the blind old man at all.

“Blind Uncle, please get back up. I merely wish to know how Zi Ling is now, and whether she is still alive. I do not hold any blame towards you,” Chu Feng’s voice became a bit hoarse. He was extremely afraid that Zi Ling would already be dead.

However, Chu Feng could not reveal his worries. The reason for that was because even though he had been very careful when he had asked those

questions, the blind old man had still reacted in such a manner. If he were to show his worries, the blind old man would blame himself even more.

"This old servant is uncertain," The blind old man shook his head.

"Uncertain?" Chu Feng became even more anxious. After all, Zi Ling was truly too important to him.

However, even though his heart was burning with anxiety, he still had to consider the blind old man's feelings. Thus, he asked gently, "Blind Uncle, exactly what is going on?"

"This old servant was truly powerless to deal with Miss Zi Ling's situation."

"Thus, I could only request Lord Xuanyuan for help. After Lord Xuanyuan arrived, he took Miss Zi Ling away."

"Right now, Miss Zi Ling should be in the Heavenly Road with Lord Xuanyuan."

"Thus, this old servant truly does not know of Miss Zi Ling's situation right now," The blind old man explained.

"Never would I have expected that my father would help Zi Ling," Chu Feng was very surprised. However, his anxiety had been alleviated greatly.

Even though Chu Feng did not know anything about his father, and although his father was a only fuzzy image in his heart, he also felt his father to be an imposing figure. He felt that if his father was willing to help in anything, that matter would definitely be taken care of.

"Although Lord Xuanyuan is a cold and detached individual, he is most definitely not heartless. Else, he would not have left a communication talisman so that I could contact him when needed," The blind old man explained.

"Since my father is helping, I believe Zi Ling will be fine. Blind Uncle, please stand up," Chu Feng tried to help the blind old man up again.

"Please punish this old servant severely for making his own decision without consulting master," However, the blind old man remained extremely stubborn, and refused to stand back up.

“Blind Uncle, you have helped me enormously. Furthermore, didn’t you only agree to Zi Ling’s demand because you wanted to help her?”

“Actually, even if it was me, I would also have agreed to have Zi Ling using that taboo technique. After all, the path of martial cultivation is a path that goes against the way of nature. If one does not take risks, one will not be able to obtain great accomplishments,” Chu Feng said.

“Master, you truly do not blame this old servant?” The blind old man asked.

“I only possess gratitude toward you,” Chu Feng tried to help the blind old man up again.

However, the blind old man still refused to get up. Instead, he said, “Master, if you are to say it like that, this old servant is even more ashamed.”

“Blind Uncle, is there a need for you to insist on this? Can you not treat me as your master? Can’t you treat me as a junior like you did back then?” Chu Feng asked.

He was actually extremely uncomfortable with the blind old man’s current attitude. He was clearly an extremely powerful existence that surpassed reasonable limits. Yet, he was acting so respectfully toward him, and would even kneel and kowtow to him. Chu Feng was truly unable to get used to it.

Furthermore, in Chu Feng’s heart, the blind old man was a senior that he held great respect for. Moreover, the blind old man was a great benefactor to him.

This way of thinking was already deeply rooted in Chu Feng’s heart. Thus, it was truly difficult for him to change it now.

“This old servant was born a servant. I was born to serve the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Although the Chu Heavenly Clan left long ago, and this old servant has become the head of the servants, I never dare to forget my identity,” The blind old man said.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart felt extremely complicated. He had already discovered that the people in this place were extremely loyal and devoted to the Chu Heavenly Clan.



Merely, it was truly rare for these sorts of people to be so loyal and devoted to the Chu Heavenly Clan after they had left this place for so long.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the blind old man's loyalty did not seem to be fake. Instead, it originated from the bottom of his heart. This... was truly remarkable.

"Blind Uncle, please stand up. I still have a lot of things that I wish to ask you," Chu Feng urged again.

"Okay," This time around, the blind old man did not refuse.

"Blind Uncle, let's sit and talk," Chu Feng helped the blind old man to a chair.

"See, this is the way it should be," After seating the blind old man, Chu Feng revealed a smile.

"Master, this old servant knows that you are still confused about a lot of things. Please go ahead and ask me whatever it is that you are confused about. If this old servant knows the answer to your questions, I will definitely answer them," The blind old man said.

"Blind Uncle, in that case, what's the deal with that Dark Hall's Hall Master?" Chu Feng asked.

When Chu Feng mentioned that matter, the blind old man heaved a long sigh. Then, he said, "The Dark Hall's Hall Master possessed an Inherited Bloodline that resembled master's. Back then, he had accidentally arrived at this place. At that time, this old servant was not present. Thus, my subordinates mistook him for the master of this place, and were extremely hospitable toward him."

"It was only later that they found out that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Although he is from the Outer World, he belongs to the Ying Heavenly Clan," The blind old man said.

"Ying Heavenly Clan?" Chu Feng's gaze flashed.

"Precisely. The Dark Hall's Hall Master is surnamed Ying, and named Chong. His name is Ying Chong."

“While he is from the Outer World, and possesses a Heavenly Bloodline, he is not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Instead, he is someone from the Ying Heavenly Clan,” The blind old man said.

“No wonder,” Chu Feng suddenly recalled that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master always wore a headdress on his head. On that headdress was the character ‘Ying.’

Furthermore, from what the blind old man said, Chu Feng came to know that their Inherited Bloodline was truly called the Heavenly Bloodline.

Furthermore, his bloodline should be a bloodline above Imperial Bloodlines.

In the Eastern Sea Region, there were many Royal Clans. Those people all possessed Royal Bloodlines.

In the Holy Land of Martialism, there were the Four Great Imperial Clans. The people from the Four Great Imperial Clans all possessed Imperial Bloodlines.

Likely, there were many Heavenly Clans in the Outer World. The bloodlines that the clansmen of the Heavenly Clans possessed should be Heavenly Bloodlines.

When looking at it that way, it was completely reasonable for Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline to be able to suppress Imperial Bloodlines. After all, that was a so-called suppression from a higher level.

After ascertaining that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not someone from his Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng felt a lot more at ease.

After all, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had done all sorts of evil. If he were someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng would feel responsible. However, since he was not, there was no reason for Chu Feng to continue to have that burden in his heart.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2119 - Chu Heavenly Clan**

“In that case, how was it discovered that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng asked.

“The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan all have black hair. However, Ying Chong has brown hair. This caused my subordinates to be wary of him. After making inquiries, they came to know about Ying Chong’s true identity.”

“However, master, please rest assured. Although Yin Chong tried to be clever only to end up with an egg on his face, he does not know the true reason why we are here.”

“He felt the entire time that we were subdued by his Heavenly Bloodline, and recognized him as our master because of that,” The blind old man said.

“However, it remains that he has discovered you all. Thus, why have you all not killed him? Do you all not fear that he will spread news of you all when he leaves?” Chu Feng asked.

“If he were someone from the Holy Land of Martialism, we would not have spared him regardless of who he might be. However, it remains that he is from the Outer World.”

“We do not know a lot about the Outer World. All we know is that there are a lot of experts in the Outer World.”

“While we are not people that are afraid of death, we did not wish to invite troubles for our masters. After all, the Chu Heavenly Clan is also located in the Outer World.”

“That is why we decided to accept our error and adapt to it. We ended up letting Ying Chong leave. However, master, please rest assured, we never helped Ying Chong with anything,” The blind old man said.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master has done all sorts of evil. He absolutely cannot be spared,” Chu Feng said.

“If master wants to kill him, he will absolutely not be allowed to live. Merely, as master is wearied in the journey here, you should first properly rest yourself now that you’ve returned home.”

“Tomorrow, I will cripple that Ying Chong’s cultivation on master’s behalf. Then, master can personally take him away and behead him before the people of the Holy Land of Martialism,” The blind old man said.

“Very well,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. After all, killing the Dark Hall’s Hall Master here and publicly executing the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed completely different connotations.

Most importantly, should he kill the Dark Hall’s Hall Master before the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, he would be able to bring ease to their hearts and let them be certain that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had died.

After that, Chu Feng asked the blind old man some more questions.

Among them was the question of whether or not there was a formation that could lead to the Outer World in this place.

The result was as Chu Feng had anticipated. There was indeed a formation that lead to the Outer World in the Realm of Gods. That spirit formation was called... the ‘Stairway to Heaven.’

“Did Qing Xuantian leave the Holy Land of Martialism through the Stairway to Heaven?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt that it was definitely impossible for Qing Xuantian to have secluded himself in the mountains because if he had, he would have definitely revealed himself after the recent events had occurred.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had learned from the Four Great Divine Beasts that Qing Xuantian was not very old when he became the overlord of the Holy Land of Martialism. He had only been a member of the younger generation.

Thus, Chu Feng had deduced that he should not have died. Even if he had been afflicted with some sort of illness, he should still be alive. That was the premonition Chu Feng had.

However, if Qing Xuantian was still alive, he would definitely not be in the Holy Land of Martialism.

If he was no longer in the Holy Land of Martialism, it would mean that he had entered the Outer World.

However, if he had entered the Outer World, then, at that time... the Stairway to Heaven in the Misty Peak should have yet to be discovered.

Thus, the only way there should be a Stairway to Heaven in the Realm of Gods.

“Qing Xuantian was indeed here ten thousand years ago. He had also wanted to use the Stairway to Heaven.”

“His cultivation at that time... was rank one Half Martial Ancestor.”

“With that level of cultivation, he would naturally not be a match for me. Thus, we naturally refused him,” The blind old man said.

“In that case, do you know where he went afterwards?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do not know,” The blind old man shook his head.

“In that case, did a woman come here over a dozen years ago to request the usage of the Stairway to Heaven?” Chu Feng asked.

“Master, actually, when you were in the Elf Kingdom that time, this old servant was also there.”

“Thus, this old man heard the entire conversation between you and the Elf King.”

“We know that the Elf King had entered our Realm of Gods over a dozen years ago. Merely... we do not know anything about Xian Miaomiao’s mother,” The blind old man said.

“In that case, Xian Miaomiao’s mother did not come to the Stairway to Heaven here?” Chu Feng asked.

“If the Stairway to Heaven is activated, it will give off an enormous reaction. It would be impossible for us to miss it,” The blind old man said.

“I understand,” Chu Feng asked no more questions. He knew that the blind old man would not deceive him.

However, he kept feeling that Qing Xuantian and Xian Miaomiao’s mother should have definitely left this place.

‘Since they didn’t use the Stairway to Heaven here, could it be that they’ve truly used the Misty Peak’s Stairway to Heaven?’

‘Or could it be that they’ve managed to find other ways to leave this place?’ Chu Feng pondered.

Afterward, Chu Feng chatted with the blind old man for a long time. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had a whole lot of questions.

It was not only questions about the Chu Heavenly Clan’s past; Chu Feng was even very curious as to how the blind old man had taught Zi Ling and the others.

As they chatted, time passed by extremely fast. The bright day turned into night in the blink of an eye.

During that period of time, per Chu Feng’s orders, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was tied up and sent to their prison.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was no fool. As matters stood, he had realized that the people of this place deemed him their master back then because they had mistaken him for someone else.

Their actual master was Chu Feng.

Thus, he was depressed to discover that the person that had entered the tigers’ den today was not Chu Feng. Instead, it was him.

“Why would it be like this? I am truly too unlucky.”

“No, that Chu Feng is surnamed Chu. Could he be from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“No, it’s most definitely a coincidence. How could that guy be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

Due to the fact that the people of this place refused to speak with the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master did not know about Chu Feng’s actual identity, and could only make wild guesses.

Right at that moment, a female’s voice was suddenly heard. “What’s wrong? When you mentioned the Chu Heavenly Clan, you revealed a trace of fear in your eyes. Could the Chu Heavenly Clan be very powerful in the Outer World?”

When that voice was heard, the Dark Hall's Hall Master immediately revealed an overjoyed expression.

Then, spiritedly, he looked at his surroundings. After discovering that he was not being monitored, he said happily, "Xue Ji, it's you. You've returned. How was it? What did you manage to discover? Am I able to escape?"

"Buzz~~~"

After the Dark Hall's Hall Master said those words, black gaseous flames suddenly appeared from thin air in his cell. After the black gaseous flames appeared, they hovered before the Dark Hall's Hall Master and turned into an exceptional beauty.

That beauty was Xue Ji.

After seeing Xue Ji, the Dark Hall's Hall Master asked impatiently, "Xue Ji, quickly, say something. Exactly how was it? Are we able to escape?"

"There is a Stairway to Heaven here. We can enter the Outer World through the Stairway to Heaven," Xue Ji said.

"Great, this is great. The heavens are helping me," Hearing those words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was overjoyed. Then, his gaze turned cold. Fiercely, he exclaimed, "After returning to the Outer World, I'll inform my clansmen of the things that happened here. At that time, these ignorant fools will suffer."

"However, if they are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, would your clansmen even bother to deal with them after you tell them what you've encountered here?" Xue Ji asked.

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was startled. His gaze became extremely complicated. Cautiously, he asked, "What did you manage to scout out? Chu Feng... he couldn't possibly really be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, right? Could this place be constructed by the Chu Heavenly Clan?"

"This place is a remnant of the Chu Heavenly Clan. As for Chu Feng... he is precisely a descendant of the Chu Heavenly Clan," Xue Ji said.

"He's really someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?!"

“No, why would it be like this?!”

“Why would it turn out like this?!”

After hearing what Xue Ji said, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s expression immediately changed. He became extremely emotional. Contained within his eyes... was the emotion of despair.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2120 - Time To Go - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2120 - Time To Go**

### **Chapter 2120 - Time To Go**

“Why would it be like this, why would it be like this?”

“That Chu Feng, he’s actually really someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“No wonder. No wonder his talent actually surpasses my own.”

After a moment of being overwhelmed with emotions, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was extremely depressed. He looked like a deflated ball.

As for Xue Ji, she stood there watching the Dark Hall’s Hall Master with a light smile on her face. No one knew what she was thinking.

However, she did not continue to ask the Dark Hall’s Hall Master about the strength of the Chu Heavenly Clan in the Outer World.

As she was an extremely intelligent woman, she had already managed to have an idea of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s strength merely by seeing the reaction from the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Regardless of how powerful the Chu Heavenly Clan might be, it was most definitely a power that the Ying Heavenly Clan could not afford to offend.

Else, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master would not have reacted in such an alarmed and frightened manner.



Suddenly, Xue Ji said, "Lord Hall Master, it's time for you to go."

"Right, let's go. We must quickly leave this place," The Dark Hall's Hall Master nodded repeatedly.

At that moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master no longer possessed any of the grandeur he had showed before. All he possessed was the impatience to quickly escape this place.

Revenge? He had already tossed the concept of revenge out of his mind. He no longer dared to even think about revenge.

To the current him, he would be in immense joy if he didn't have to make reprisals.

"Puu~~~"

Right at that moment, a flash of coldness shone through Xue Ji's eyes. Then, her lily-white hand, like a sharp blade, pierced into the dantian of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Xue Ji, you!!!"

Sensing the pain from his dantian and the blood spilling out of his abdomen, the Dark Hall's Hall Master stared at Xue Ji blankly. Evidently... he had never expected something like this.

"What? You still don't understand? Didn't I say that it was time for you to go?" Xue Ji's beautiful eyes narrowed into two beautiful crescents. Her smile was so very charming. Yet, when seen by the Dark Hall's Hall Master, her smile appeared to very wicked.

"No!!!" Suddenly, the expression of the Dark Hall's Hall Master changed enormously. He revealed an unbearable pain.

He was sensing that his cultivation, his everything, was being stripped away from him, being sucked into Xue Ji's body.

Not only was Xue Ji planning to destroy his cultivation, she was planning to absorb his cultivation and deprive him of his power.

"You've been using me the entire time?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master lifted his head and stared at Xue Ji fiercely.

“Why else did you think I would teach you such a demonic technique instead of using it myself?” Xue Ji said.

“Damn you! You’ve actually used me as an offering for your own cultivation! You only helped me so I could accumulate power for you! You were waiting for this moment so that you could consume my cultivation!” Fury filled the eyes of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“You’ve only found out about that now? You are truly slow,” Xue Ji said, “Actually, I had thought very highly of you. Originally, I had planned to use you for a bit longer, planned to let you live for a bit longer.”

“However, you couldn’t even help me refine all those lives in the Transmogrification Gate.”

“You’ve made me waste all those cultivation resources. As such, I must say that you have greatly disappointed me.”

“How could trash like you possibly accomplish anything great in the Outer World?”

“Thus, you cannot blame me for killing you now.”

“If you want to blame someone, blame yourself for being too useless.”

“I’ll kill you!” Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted angrily. He gained strength out of nowhere, clenched his fist and prepared to attack Xue Ji.

“Wuuahh!!!” However, right after he raised his fist, he let out a miserable scream.

At that moment, the body of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was dismembered, and then pulled into Xue Ji’s palm.

Everything happened too quickly. In merely a short moment, everything was over.

By the time Xue Ji pulled back her palm, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had turned into a pile of bones. His bones were completely dull, as even his source energy was sucked dry by Xue Ji.

Only his clothes, his Cosmos Sack and his headdress with the character Ying on it landed beside the pile of bones.

“Woosh~~~”

Xue Ji swung her sleeve, and the Cosmos Sack was sucked into her sleeve. Then... the clothes of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master began to float.

Xue Ji used the clothes to wipe the lily-white hand she had used to kill the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

While wiping her hand clean, she looked to the pile of bones with a smile on her face and sighed. “It would seem that I’ll have to journey to the Outer World by myself.”

“However, it should be very interesting,” After saying those words, a beautiful and alluring smile emerged on Xue Ji’s face.

“Woosh~~~”

Xue Ji’s body suddenly shifted. She turned into black gaseous flames that hovered for a while before entering the void and disappearing.

.....

Chu Feng appeared to have fallen asleep.

When he opened his eyes, he discovered that he was on top of a mountain. He was sitting beside a brook.

He extended his hand and looked at the water in the brook. His silhouette slowly appeared in the flowing water.

Chu Feng suddenly discovered that his appearance had turned into that of an eight or nine-year-old child. It was his appearance when he was a child.

Chu Feng then looked around. The scenery was so very familiar to him. Wasn’t this the Nine Province Continent’s Azure Province? Wasn’t this the scenery of the mountain behind the Chu Family?

“Dream? I’m in a dream?”

Chu Feng was an extremely rational person. His rationality allowed him to realize what had happened.

He had chatted with the blind old man for a long time. As it was extremely late by the time they had finished the chat, the blind old man had told him to properly rest himself, and given him a special sort of fruit.

That fruit possessed an effect of soothing one's body and mind. Although martial cultivators would be able to live without eating, drinking or sleeping after reaching a certain level of cultivation, sleeping was capable of helping cultivations rest and soothe their minds.

Thus, Chu Feng ate the fruit and soon fell asleep.

Merely, Chu Feng was too rational a person. His rationality caused him to possess an excessive amount of clear-headedness. Even though he was dreaming, he was still able to immediately determine his situation.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing here? Weren't you told to not come here randomly? Get the hell back."

Suddenly, an excoriating voice sounded. Chu Feng turned around and saw a fair-skinned man rapidly walking toward him.

"Sixth uncle?" Seeing that man, Chu Feng's heart was immediately moved. That man was Chu Feng's sixth uncle, Chu Nanshan.

That sixth uncle had not been very fond of Chu Feng. As for his son, Chu Hongfei, he was someone that had bullied Chu Feng since they were young.

Back then, Chu Feng had been very sick and tired of this sixth uncle. However, seeing him now, Chu Feng felt a powerful sense of closeness.

The reason for that was because this sixth uncle of his had long since passed away. He had died when the Chu Family had been massacred.

"Sixth uncle, I'm sorry. I am the one who caused your death," Chu Feng said with a great amount of self blame.

The massacre of the Chu Family was Chu Feng's eternal pain. He felt that if he had not offended Gong Luyun in his youth, the Chu Family would not have met with their misfortune.

“Chu Feng, what are you talking about? You are cursing me to die here, no?” Chu Nanshan did not know what Chu Feng was talking about, and thought that Chu Feng was cursing him to die. Angrily, he raised his hand and planned to hit Chu Feng.

As this place was Chu Feng’s dream, even if Chu Feng remained rational, he was only a child that had yet to learn martial cultivation here.

Thus, when his sixth uncle tried to hit him, it would have been impossible for Chu Feng to dodge even if he wanted to. Let alone, Chu Feng did not wish to dodge.

“Huu~~~”

Right at that moment, a strong gale swept forth from before Chu Feng. It was aimed directly at the sixth uncle.

That wind was so powerful that not only did it blow away the fallen leaves in the forest, it also blew the sixth uncle back repeatedly.

“Sixth, Feng’er is still only a child. Is there a need for you to lower yourself to argue with him?”

At that moment, a familiar voice sounded beside Chu Feng. Chu Feng turned to the side, and saw a person standing there. Immediately, his heart tightened.

Standing beside him was a man. That person was his adoptive father, Chu Yuan.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2121 - Resurrection Secret Technique**

“Father,” Upon seeing Chu Yuan, a huge wave immediately surged in Chu Feng’s heart.

“Feng’er, are you alright?” Chu Yuan smiled as he looked to Chu Feng. His gaze was filled with concern.

“I’m fine,” Chu Feng shook his head repeatedly.

“Chu Yuan, for you to pamper Chu Feng like that, you will spoil him sooner or later,” Chu Nanshan said angrily.

“If I cannot protect even my own son, I am unqualified to be Chu Feng’s father,” Chu Yuan said unyieldingly.

“You...” Chu Nanshan gnashed his teeth in anger. However, as his strength was inferior to Chu Yuan’s, he ended up waving his sleeve and swaggering off angrily.

Although Chu Feng knew very well that this was a dream, his eyes still reddened. Especially after he heard what Chu Yuan said, the tears that were swirling at the corners of his eyes bubbled out like a flood.

Although this was only his dream, Chu Feng clearly remembered that this scene had actually happened before.

Although he was not Chu Yuan’s biological son, Chu Yuan had always pampered him like this.

“Feng’er, what are you crying about? Real men should not cry,” Seeing that Chu Feng was crying, Chu Yuan squatted in front of him and gently caressed Chu Feng’s tiny head.

“Father, I have let you down. I have let grandpa down, let the entire Chu Family down. I have caused the deaths of you all. It is I who killed you all,” Chu Feng’s tears and mucus were mixed together and covered his entire face.

The current Chu Feng was no longer the Chu Feng that had shocked the entire Holy Land of Martialism. He had returned to being the Chu Feng that was not even ten years old.

A child with a heart filled with self-blame.

Seeing Chu Feng acting like this, Chu Yuan felt extremely pained.

He said, “Feng’er, don’t say nonsense like that. The person that should be apologizing should be your father, me.”

“As your father, I was incompetent. That is why I ended up being killed.”

“As your father, I was incompetent. That is why I am unable to watch you grow up.”

“Feng’er, I hope that you will not blame father. After all, father is only an ordinary mortal.”

“You have done enough for the Chu Family. If it wasn’t for your protection, the Chu Family would’ve already been completely eliminated.”

“Thus, although you are not my biological son, you are still my pride. You are the pride of everyone from our Chu Family.”

“The path of martial cultivation is extremely hard. We are unable to provide any assistance to you. As such, you can only rely on yourself.”

“But, Feng’er, remember this. You are a man. Regardless of the time, you must remain strong.”

After saying those words, Chu Yuan’s body started to grow fuzzy. Everything surrounding Chu Feng began to become fuzzy.

“Father, don’t leave. Stay with Feng’er for a bit longer!”

“Father, don’t leave Feng’er by himself!!!”

Chu Feng tightly grabbed onto Chu Yuan’s clothes and started to shout.

He knew that... this dream of his was about to shatter. However, he did not wish for the dream to shatter. He did not wish to wake up yet.

However, even though Chu Feng was grabbing onto Chu Yuan’s clothes very tightly, Chu Yuan’s clothes still faded from Chu Feng’s grasp.

Soon, Chu Yuan disappeared. Then, everything before him disappeared, and Chu Feng’s surroundings turned pitch-black.

When light reemerged in Chu Feng’s line of sight, he discovered that he was no longer by the brook on the mountain behind the Chu Family mansion. Instead, he was in a cozy sleeping chamber in the Realm of Gods.

In the end, he had still woken from his dream.

Chu Feng wiped the corners of his eyes. There were truly tears there.

Although Chu Feng had not cried as miserably as he had in his dream, he remained influenced by his state of mind in his dream, and had ended up shedding tears.

“Master, what’s wrong?” Suddenly, the door to the room was opened. It was the blind old man.

“I’m fine,” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Master, you’re crying?” Although the blind old man was blind, he was able to see everything before him through special techniques.

Seeing the tear stains at the corners of Chu Feng’s eyes, the blind old man became extremely worried.

“I had a dream. I dreamed of my adoptive father,” Chu Feng said.

“.....” Hearing those words, the blind old man’s expression changed. He seemed to have thought of something. He said, “Master, there is a secret technique that might be able to revive your family.”

Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. He revealed disbelief in his eyes. After all, the dead could not be revived. That was common knowledge.

However, the blind old man didn’t appear to be deceiving him. Thus, Chu Feng hurriedly asked, “There’s a way to revive my family? Is what you speak of real?”

“Master, a person possesses three spiritual and seven physical souls. One’s physical body is merely a vessel for one’s soul.”

[1. three spiritual and seven physical souls → Some Daoism thing...  
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hun\\_and\\_po](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hun_and_po)]

“For example, master, if your physical body is destroyed, you are able to instantly create another physical body. Before those with the same level of strength as you, you possess an undying and indestructible body.”

“However, it is actually not master’s physical body that is all powerful. Rather, it is master’s soul and cultivation that are powerful. That is why you are undying and indestructible to those that are weak.”



“Thus, to people, their soul... is the most crucial aspect in respect to their life and death.”

“Back then, the people that massacred your family were only a bunch of weak people. They all possessed very weak levels of cultivation. They were not much different from ordinary commoners.”

“People like them cannot be considered actual martial cultivators. They do not possess the power that martial cultivators possess.”

“Thus, although the members of your family were killed, they are not truly dead. It is merely their physical bodies that were destroyed, and their souls scattered. For souls like those... they will remain in existence for a hundred years.”

“This old man knows of a method. As long as it's the deceased's relative, and that relative possessed a certain level of cultivation and world spirit techniques, they would be able to search for the deceased's soul.”

“As long as the scattered souls are found, and bodies are created for them, it is possible for them to be revived.”

“Master, you've fulfilled all of the requirements,” The blind old man explained.

“Blind Uncle, there is truly such a method?” Astonishment filled Chu Feng's face. The reason for that was because what the blind old man said was very reasonable, and in accordance with the rules of the world. As a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng felt that it was feasible.

“This old servant would not dare to deceive master. This is the technique,” Seemingly already prepared, the blind old man took an ancient scroll from his bosom and handed it to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng opened the scroll and read it carefully. The more he read, the more astonished he became. His gaze began to reveal more and more joy.

“This is feasible, this is feasible!” At that moment, Chu Feng was wild with joy. He was excited like a child.

The reason for that was because his adoptive father and the people from the Chu Family were all extremely important to him.

Although they were not related to him by blood, Chu Feng viewed them as his close relatives, his true family.

Their deaths had become an eternal pain in Chu Feng's heart. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had never thought that the dead could be revived.

However, he had now truly obtained a method to revive them. Furthermore, it was not random speculation, but rather a truly feasible method. As such, Chu Feng would naturally be overjoyed.

"Actually, it is also fortunate that the people that killed your family were only Profound Realm cultivators. If they were Heaven Realm cultivators, there would be no way to save your family members."

"Furthermore, this technique is something that has never been attempted before. As such, this old servant is uncertain as to whether or not it will actually work," The blind old man said.

"Regardless, this remains a strand of hope," Chu Feng held tightly to the scroll, and looked to the blind old man, "Blind Uncle, regardless of whether it works or not, you have helped me enormously." *nOVE(LB-In*

As the blind old man had been carrying the scroll with him, Chu Feng was able to tell that the blind old man already knew of his heart's knot.

Thus, even if Chu Feng had not had that dream, the blind old man would have still told him about that method sooner or later.

"Master, you must not say it like that. This old servant is truly honored to be able to help master out," The blind old man said with a smile. He was extremely gratified to see how happy Chu Feng had become.

"Milord, this is bad, this is bad!" Right at that moment, someone ran in hastily. After arriving, that person knelt on the ground.

"What's wrong? What happened?" The blind old man asked.

"Someone has opened the Stairway to Heaven," That person replied.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2122 - I've Guessed Wrong**

“What?” Hearing those words, the expressions of both Chu Feng and the blind old man changed. Then, the blind old man’s body moved, and Chu Feng started to feel that his surrounding had turned fuzzy. When his line of sight returned to normal... not only had the two of them left the sleeping chambers, they were also before a vast plaza.

Above the plaza was a grand formation. Inside the formation was a ray of golden light that shot straight into the sky. It seemed that the light was going to pierce through the sky and the heavenly dome.

Within the golden light was a series of steps that seemed to be made of crystal. It was the Stairway to Heaven; it looked exactly the same as the Stairway to Heaven Chu Feng saw in the Misty Peak.

However, there was also difference between them. Many waves of energy were spreading below the Stairway to Heaven unceasingly. The energies were spreading toward the Stairway to Heaven.

This scene had not been present in the Misty Peak’s Immortalization Road.

“Who dares activate the Stairway to Heaven without permission? Do you have a death wish?” The blind old man shouted furiously. His serious gaze swept toward the surrounding guards.

A rank three Half Martial Ancestor level old man stood forward and said, “Milord, we do not know who did this.”

“Do not know? You are tasked with guarding this place, yet you actually dare to tell me that you do not know? What use is there in having you all here then?!” The blind old man grew even more furious.

“Hahaha...” Right at that moment, a burst of laughter sounded from the Stairway to Heaven. Then, a voice said, “Seems like the servants of the Chu Heavenly Clan are only at this level.”

“Xue Ji? It’s you?!!!” Hearing that voice, Chu Feng’s eyes instantly narrowed. He raised his head and looked toward the location where the voice had sounded from.

“It’s actually not one of our men?!” At that moment, the blind old man became even more furious.

The blind old man had thought that it was his clansmen that had not behaved themselves and ended up activating the Stairway to Heaven. However, he now discovered that he had guessed wrong.

“You dare use the Stairway to Heaven without permission? You are truly courting death!” At that moment, many people took out their Imperial Armaments and began to fly toward the Stairway to Heaven.

“All of you, stay your hand!” The blind old man hurriedly shouted, “The Stairway to Heaven has already been activated. If you all are to climb the stairs, you will enter the Outer World. At that time, none of you will be able to return.”

“But...” The crowd all stopped, but were filled with irreconciliation.

Right at that moment, that voice sounded again. “Chu Feng, let us meet again in the Outer World.”

“Buzz~~~”

After that voice sounded, a dazzling ray of light descended from the sky, enveloping the region below.

When that light faded away, Chu Feng discovered that the Stairway to Heaven had returned to normal.

“Damn it!”

The blind old man was gnashing his teeth furiously. He then raised his hand and shot a palm strike toward the depths of the sky.

“Boom~~~”

The sky started to tremble. Violent energy ripples immediately covered the entire sky. As the energy ripples wreaked havoc in the sky, it was a truly frightening sight to behold.

The might of that attack was simply indescribable. Chu Feng did not know how powerful the strength of that attack was. However, he knew that if he were to approach the energy ripples, he would undoubtedly be killed.

That said, Chu Feng also knew that even an attack like that would not be able to injure Xue Ji. Xue Ji had already left. Likely... she had already entered the Outer World.

“What were you all doing?! Didn’t I order you all to properly guard this place?! How could you all not know when someone activated the Stairway to Heaven?!” The blind old man shouted at the guards.

“Milord, we...” All of the guards knelt onto the floor. However, they were at a loss as to how to respond. The reason for that was because they had not seen anyone approaching the Stairway to Heaven. When they discovered that something was amiss, the Stairway to Heaven had already been activated.

“We were useless. Milord, please punish us,” Feeling helpless, the guards could only ask for punishment.

“Blind Uncle, please don’t blame them. I am able to tell that they all held their posts with sincerity. It is just that Xue Ji’s techniques are too strange. Thus, it is normal that they would fail to discover her,” Chu Feng pleaded for the guards.

The reason for that was because he had also not discovered any traces of anyone on the Stairway to Heaven before Xue Ji spoke. The blind old man had also not discovered anyone.

However, Xue Ji had actually ascended the Stairway to heaven.

Thus, when even+ they failed to discover Xue Ji, how could these guards possibly be able to discover Xue Ji?

“Master, are you certain that that was Xue Ji?” The blind old man asked.

“There’s no mistaking that voice. It was definitely Xue Ji,” Chu Feng said.

“That girl actually possessed strength that even my perception failed to detect? Exactly how did she get in here?” The blind old man started to ponder.

“It might not necessarily be because she possessed strength that surpassed your own. It is very likely that it is because she possesses special tricks. After all, she is from the Asura Spirit World,” Chu Feng said.

The blind old man heaved a long sigh. He was still extremely unreconciled. Self-blame filled his face.

“May I know where the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is imprisoned? Is it possible for me to see him?” Chu Feng asked the crowd.

“He is imprisoned in the underground prison. I’ll lead the way for master right away,” A guard said.

“There’s no need for that,” The blind old man waved his sleeve. Immediately, wind covered both him and Chu Feng.

At the moment Chu Feng was caught up in the wind, he felt his surrounding growing fuzzy again.

When his line of sight returned to normal, Chu Feng was surprised to discover that he was in the underground prison.

After arriving at the underground prison, the blind old man slowed his pace. He began to guide Chu Feng toward the depths of the underground prison one step at a time.

There were a lot of guards in the underground prison. They were all very powerful, being either Half Martial Ancestors or peak Martial Emperors.

When they saw Chu Feng, they all hurriedly kneeled before him to greet him courteously.

When they were so quick to kneel to Chu Feng, naturally none of them dared to stop Chu Feng and the blind old man. After all, not only was the blind old man the leader of this place, they held Chu Feng as being their master.

“Blind Uncle, may I know exactly what level of cultivation you possess?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

The blind old man was truly too powerful. Originally, Chu Feng had thought that, as he had been able to defeat the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, his cultivation would be among the very best in the Holy Land of Martialism.

It was only after he arrived at this place that he discovered that his cultivation was actually not very powerful at all even in the Holy Land of Martialism. At the very least, a lot of the people here, these people that declared themselves

to be the servants of the Chu Heavenly Clan, all possessed more powerful cultivations than him. As for this blind old man, he was simply unfathomable.

“Master, this old servant is a rank five Half Martial Ancestor,” said the blind old man.

“Blind Uncle is truly amazing,” The answer given by the blind old man was more or less what Chu Feng had anticipated.

“I was originally a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. It was only because Lord Xuanyuan’s assistance during the last time he was here that this old servant was able to reach a breakthrough.”

“Else... with this old servant’s comprehension ability, I’m afraid that I would never have been able to obtain my current level of cultivation in my lifetime,” After saying those words, the blind old man smiled happily.

From the blind old man’s reaction, Chu Feng was able to tell that he felt not only great reverence toward Chu Feng’s father Chu Xuanyuan, he also felt a great amount of gratefulness.

Even though the blind old man was wholeheartedly devoted to being a servant of the Chu Heavenly Clan his entire life, he also possessed his own pursuits toward the path of martial cultivation.

“If my father was willing to help me, how great would that be,” Chu Feng said jokingly.

“Lord Xuanyuan most definitely possesses his own intentions for putting master through all these trials.”

“However, master possesses outstanding talent that the slow people in the Holy Land of Martialism simply cannot compare to.”

“Your battlefield is in the Outer World. Furthermore, with master’s talent, you will definitely be a dragon among men even in the Outer World. Very few people would be able to fight against you,” The blind old man said.

“I was merely joking. I naturally know that my father is doing all this for my sake,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

After finding out about the concern his father had for him from the blind old man, Chu Feng had become increasingly desirous of meeting his father.

Although Chu Feng should be proceeding toward the Outer World now, he first had to return to the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent before leaving.

Firstly, he must use that secret technique to revive his family.

Secondly, he must enter the Heavenly Road and meet his biological father, Chu Xuanyuan.

As the two men chatted, they arrived before the prison cell that held the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"This... what happened here?"

Merely, when the prison cell was opened, other than Chu Feng and the blind old man, the expressions of the rest of the people all changed enormously.

After all, only the clothing of the Dark Hall's Hall Master and a pile of bones were in the prison cell.

"Who did this?" An old man who seemed to be the person in charge of the prison shouted at the crowd furiously. He thought that it was the guards that had killed the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"This subordinate wouldn't dare," The guards all kneeled to the ground.

"Don't blame them. It was most definitely not done by them," Chu Feng waved his hand. However, his gaze was fixed onto that pile of bones the entire time.

"Never would I have expected this to be the case," Chu Feng's eyes narrowed. A trace of a surprised expression appeared in his gaze.

"Master, could it be that you've thought of this?" The blind old man asked.

"I had originally thought that Xue Ji had followed the Dark Hall's Hall Master here, and that the Dark Hall's Hall Master might've followed her into the Outer World."



“However, it is very clear that I have guessed wrong. Xue Ji entered the Outer World by herself. Furthermore, she killed the Dark Hall’s Hall Master before leaving,” Chu Feng said.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2123 - Chu Feng’s Friend**

“Judging from this situation, it seems that Ying Chong has been refined,” The blind old man said.

“That’s right. He’s been completely refined,” Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a gentle breeze brushed past. The seemingly intact bones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master immediately turned to dust.

It was not caused by Chu Feng’s power. Rather, it was because the bones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master were truly too weak.

Seeing this scene, the expressions of the guards all changed. With the cultivation that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed, even if he were to turn to bones, his bones should be indestructible. It would be impossible for his bones to be this weak. Those bones were simply much weaker than the bones of even ordinary people that had never embarked upon the path of martial cultivation.

The situation at hand verified what Chu Feng and the blind old man suspected - the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been completely refined; he had been killed through being refined.

“Xue Ji, exactly what is it that you’re planning to do?” Chu Feng muttered.

He was more and more incapable of seeing through the thoughts of that Asura World Spirit that had originally belonged to him.

The sensation of being unable to see through Xue Ji was extremely unpleasant for Chu Feng. Most importantly, he was unable to ascertain whether Xue Ji... was a friend or a foe.

He suspected that she might be a friend because she had saved him. Furthermore, she had informed him of the demonic technique of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

He suspected that she might be a foe because she had done a lot of things unknown to him.

Most importantly, the killing intent that she had emitted back when she was still in his world spirit space had not seemed fake.

Suddenly, a guard hastily ran over. "Reporting to Master, reporting to Master."

"Someone has intruded into our territory and has been captured by us,"

"Did the intruder see you all?" The blind old man asked.

"He did," The guard replied.

"Then why bother asking? Kill him," The Blind Old Man replied.

"But... that person declared himself to be Master's friend. Furthermore, he said he has come to find Master," The guard replied.

"My friend?" Chu Feng and the blind old man were startled to hear those words. They looked to one another, and both revealed confused expressions.

Especially Chu Feng; he felt astonished. The great majority of his friends were all hidden in the Transmogrification Gate. Why would someone come here to find him?

Furthermore, no one knew that he had come here. Even if someone had decided to find him, it should be impossible for them to directly come to this place.

Puzzled, Chu Feng said, "Bring me to see him."

Being guided by the guard, they arrived at a palace. This was the same palace in which the blind old man had received Chu Feng earlier.

"You all actually brought an intruder to this place?!" The blind old man was slightly angry. After all, this place was also a forbidden area for their clansmen. Only existences of Chu Feng's status would be allowed to be received in that place.

“Eh... I was foolish. I thought he was truly Master’s friend,” That guard hurriedly kneeled to the ground. Apology filled his face.

“There’s no harm to it. I’ll know from a single glance whether or not that person is my friend,” Chu Feng smiled. Then he said, “open the gate.”

“Creak~~~”

Once those words were spoken, the guards standing to either side of the gate pushed open the gate to the palace.

After the gate to the palace was pushed open, Chu Feng finally saw the person that had declared himself to be his friend. It turned out that that person was indeed Chu Feng’s friend.

It was Wang Qiang.

At that moment, Wang Qiang was sitting on a chair in the palace hall. Without any restraint, he was eating the refreshments the blind old man had prepared for Chu Feng earlier.

He was truly unfettered and unrestrained. It was as if he was truly a guest in this place.

Even though the guards standing beside him were all glaring at him like tigers, seemingly planning to kill him at any moment, Wang Qiang still showed absolutely zero fear.

“Aiyayaya, C-Chu Feng, t-t-t-to see y-y-you still alive, I am t-t-truly overjoyed,” Wang Qiang was immensely happy to see Chu Feng. He wiped his mouth and ran over to Chu Feng.

“Wang Qiang, why would you be here?” Chu Feng asked in astonishment.

Before seeing Wang Qiang, Chu Feng had truly never thought that it would be Wang Qiang that came here. It was not that Chu Feng did not consider Wang Qiang his friend. Rather, he truly never imagined it to be Wang Qiang.

“I-I-I f-followed you h-here. S-seeing that you s-still didn’t c-c-come out a-after a long time p-p-passed, I t-thought something m-might’ve happened to you. T-t-thus, I came in to s-s-search for you.”

“N-n-never would I have ex-ex-expected that y-you’re a-a-actually doing pretty well here,” Wang Qiang patted Chu Feng’s shoulder and spoke with a loud laugh. His actions were truly thoughtless in appearance.

“Hey, b-brother,” Wang Qiang suddenly moved to Chu Feng’s ear and whispered sneakily, “y-y-you c-couldn’t possibly t-truly be their M-m-master, r-right? It s-seems to m-me that t-they are v-very s-scared of you.”

“It’s a long story. I’ll fill you in on the details later,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he looked to the blind old man and said, “Blind Uncle, this man is my friend. I believe you also know him. He has helped me before. Might it be possible... to make an exception and spare his life?”

“Master, your wish is my command. This old servant will do as you say,” The blind old man replied respectfully.

Then, the blind old man made a gesture toward the guards. The guards tacitly understood his intentions, and withdrew from the palace with the blind old man.

When the palace’s gate was closed, only Chu Feng and Wang Qiang remained.

“Oh my, my, b-b-boy, y-y-you’re actually r-r-really the master of this p-place? H-heavens, t-that blind old man is e-extremely powerful. E-even I c-cannot s-s-see through him.”

“N-n-never would I have ex-expected for the Re-Realm of Gods t-to have t-this many ex-ex-experts. No w-wonder all t-th-those that enter this place e-end up dying.”

“S-s-say, s-sin-since you have s-so many powerful s-subordinates, w-why didn’t you have them a-act sooner? W-why st-struggle with your own l-life on the line to f-fight against th-that D-dark Hall’s Hall Master?” Wang Qiang was extremely excited. At the same time, he was also very puzzled.

It seemed that he had only charged into this place because he was worried about Chu Feng.

“Wait a moment. You said that you followed me here, why were you following me?” Chu Feng asked.

"I d-don't know. I w-was v-very bored," Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laugh.

"You were protecting me from the shadows?" Chu Feng asked.

"Pah, w-why would I p-protect you? I'm n-not r-re-related to you."

"I m-m-merely wanted t-to k-kill the Dark H-hall's Hall M-master and h-h-have them d-deem me the o-overlord."

"N-never d-did I ex-expect that you w-would return t-the m-moment I planned to stop him. B-because of my b-brotherly camaraderie, I d-d-decided to have you sh-show off your m-might first."

"Ne-never would I have e-expected you to be so f-foolish to a-actually l-let the Dark Hall's Hall M-master escape. I w-was cur-curious as to where that g-guy es-escaped to. F-furthermore, s-since you said t-that you could t-track him, I d-decided to f-follow you here," Wang Qiang said.

"The beginning and the end of your words does not go along with one another. Didn't you just say that you were not related to me? And now, you're speaking about brotherly camaraderie? Who are you trying to deceive here?"

"You were hiding your strength the entire time, and following me in the dark. Exactly what are your intentions?" Chu Feng asked in a serious manner.

The way Chu Feng saw it, Wang Qiang possessed no interest in the so-called title of 'genius.' Else, with his strength, he could easily obtain it.

Instead, Wang Qiang was someone who would appear and disappear unpredictably. Furthermore, he possessed overwhelming strength that could not be looked down upon. Due to the many confusing things regarding him, Chu Feng was very curious about his identity.

Curiosity, it was pure curiosity. The reason was because regardless of what intentions Wang Qiang might have, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang did not possess an evil nature, that he was a worthy friend. However, the prerequisite for that was... that he must be honest.

"F-forget about it, f-forget a-about it, I-I'll tell you, alright?" n-/Ov**el**1n

"I, Wang Q-Qiang, have n-never t-thought f-favorably of anyone i-in my l-life. B-but, for s-s-some unknown reason, I th-think fa-favorably of you."

"Although you fought a-against me, I k-kept feeling t-that you a-are someone w-worthy to b-befriend, that you a-are an h-honest man."

"Thus, if y-you w-we-were to truly d-die, I m-might e-end up feeling t-that I was m-missing something. Th-thus, you m-must be p-protected by m-me."

"I-I-I'm n-not being s-stubborn h-here," Wang Qiang said with his large mouth slanted to the side. The shameless Wang Qiang was actually a bit embarrassed when saying those words.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2124 - Wang Qiang's Past**

"In that case, you've been following me the entire time?" Chu Feng asked.

"N-no, not the e-entire time. O-only twice. The f-first time was w-when you w-went to that so called Dao T-temple."

"The o-other time is t-t-this time. I-I would never f-follow you a-all the time. I'm n-not a stalker," Wang Qiang said.

Seeing Wang Qiang reacting in such a manner, Chu Feng smiled at ease. Although Wang Qiang was ugly, Chu Feng felt him to be quite adorable when he acted like this.

Although there was still confusion in Chu Feng's heart, he still smiled and said to Wang Qiang, "Actually, I just found out about the things here not long ago myself. However, I am able to tell you about them. That said, you must promise me that you will not tell anyone else about the things here."

"M-m-my mouth is a-a-ab-absolutely tight," Wang Qiang pledged with his hand raised. He was very excited upon knowing that Chu Feng was going to tell him about the situation here.

"Very well, I'll tell you then. However, before telling you, I have another request," Chu Feng said.

“W-w-what is it?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Exactly how strong are you? Can you tell me the truth?” Chu Feng asked.

The current Wang Qiang only appeared to be a rank six Martial Emperor to Chu Feng. That level of cultivation was already very powerful.

However, Chu Feng felt that that was not Wang Qiang’s true cultivation. The reason for that was because Wang Qiang had said that he came to protect him. In other words, Wang Qiang’s strength most definitely surpassed his own. Else, how was he to protect him?

“F-forget about it. I-I-I’ll t-tell you,” Wang Qiang laughed mischievously. Then, he let out a strand of his aura. Sensing that aura, Chu Feng immediately realized that Wang Qiang’s cultivation was already no longer that of a Martial Emperor.

That aura of his was the aura of a Half Martial Ancestor. Wang Qiang was actually a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

However, that was not all. After Wang Qiang waved his sleeve, the surrounding Ancestral-level martial power ended up being controlled by him. At that time, Chu Feng sensed that his heaven-defying battle power was not merely capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Instead, like him, Wang Qiang possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

That sort of battle power was two levels above ordinary Martial Emperors and Half Martial Ancestors.

Although he had anticipated it, when he actually discovered that Wang Qiang possessed a strength that surpassed his own, Chu Feng still felt extremely shocked.

“Y-you’re a-as-astonished, right? D-don’t be. W-what’s to c-come will make y-you even m-more a-astonished.”

“I am a-able to c-conceal my s-strength from you a-and that b-blind old man b-because I h-have a t-treasure. L-look,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he took out a special burlap sack. That sack appeared to be very badly sewn. It was simply even lousier than clothes that beggars wore.

However, after Wang Qiang put that burlap sack around him, he disappeared. That burlap sack also disappeared.

He had disappeared completely. Chu Feng was unable to even sense a trace of his aura.

“H-how is it? A-amazing, right?” Wang Qiang’s voice sounded. However, Chu Feng was still unable to sense his aura.

“No wonder. No wonder even Blind Uncle was unable to discover you.”

“You, exactly what sort of origin do you have?” Chu Feng frowned.

When disregarding Wang Qiang’s strength, this treasure he had revealed was truly a rare and powerful treasure. How could such a powerful treasure appear in the Holy Land of Martialism?

“Hehe, I-I-I to-told you the fi-first time we met. I am an e-exceptional genius, I am a-amazing.”

“It is o-only you all t-that refused to believe me. How i-is it? Y-you believe me now? I-I’ve stunned you, no?” Wang Qiang said complacently.

“You still didn’t answer my question,” Chu Feng said in a serious manner, “As brothers, you must be candid with me.”

“If you truly consider me your friend, then tell me the truth. Only with that will I able to be candid with you.”

“E-even if you a-ask me, I don’t k-know how to r-respond to you. I p-possess neither a f-father or a m-mother. I a-also do not possess a b-background I-like the one you have.”

“E-either way, ever s-since I was a-able to f-form memories, I d-discovered myself in a ruin. O-other than v-vicious ferocious b-beasts and all kinds of t-traps, there was not a s-single person there.”

“If I wanted to l-leave that place, I h-had to become a Martial Emperor. Thus, I c-could only put my a-all into m-martial cultivation.”

“I-it was o-only after I got o-out did I find out that t-that p-p-place was actually an A-ancient Era’s r-remnant.”



“Even now, no one h-has discovered that r-remnant. If you don’t believe me, I can b-b-bring you t-to that remnant.”

“However, I-I’ve already g-gathered a-all the treasures t-there. E-even if you go there, i-it’ll be f-for nothing,” Wang Qiang said.

“In that case, you’ve hidden your strength since the first time I met you?” Chu Feng asked.

The reason for that was because if Wang Qiang was telling the truth, then, when Chu Feng had met him at the Sealing Ancient Village, he should have been at least a Martial Emperor. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly have been able to defeat Wang Qiang then?

“Hehe, t-this g-great lord e-enjoys an i-interesting life. T-the days of m-me being in t-the Ancient E-era’s remnant by m-myself were t-truly too boring.” n-  
/Ovelb1n

“How w-was it? My a-acting ab-ability is p-pretty good, no?” Wang Qiang patted Chu Feng’s shoulder and said complacently.

“Indeed, it’s pretty good,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. After all, Chu Feng possessed a very strong perception. Very few people were able to keep him in the dark.

However, Wang Qiang, this person with an age similar to his own, was actually able to completely deceive Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile on his face, “Speaking of it, you said earlier that you never thought favorably of anyone other than me, could it be... that you fell for me?”

Hearing those words, Wang Qiang’s expression changed enormously. Then, he immediately released his hand from Chu Feng’s shoulder, and sprayed out a mouthful of saliva before shouting, “Pah! Pah! Pah! Pah! Pah! Pah! Your d-daddy I am h-heterosexual, okay?! No m-matter how handsome you m-might be, this g-great sir will s-still not h-have any i-i-interest in you.”

Seeing such a reaction from Wang Qiang, Chu Feng smiled complacently. This fellow had completely deceived him before. This time around, Chu Feng had finally managed to play him for a fool.

Suddenly, Wang Qiang stopped his emotional state of mind and in a deadpan earnest manner, he said, "C-Chu Feng, I-let me w-warn you. Don't you th-think of d-doing a-anything to me because of h-how charming I am. E-else..."

"If I, b-by chance, d-decide to f-follow t-through with your de-desire, you w-wouldn't be a-able to resist," As he said those words, Wang Qiang suddenly threw himself at Chu Feng, grabbing Chu Feng's waist tightly while pushing his face onto Chu Feng's body. His appearance was truly disgusting.

"Scram!" In response, Chu Feng hurriedly shook Wang Qiang off. Then, he raised his leg and kicked Wang Qiang several meters away.

At that moment, Chu Feng's entire body was covered with goose bumps. He was extremely disgusted by Wang Qiang. From what had happened earlier, Chu Feng was certain that he was definitely heterosexual, that he possessed absolutely no interest in men.

"L-I-lil newbie, t-trying to play with me?"

"If I c-can't w-win against you, I'll d-d-disgust you to death," Wang Qiang sat on the ground and laughed out loud while slapping the ground.

Although Wang Qiang's action was absolutely shameless, Chu Feng still had a favorable impression of Wang Qiang. Although this fellow was a weirdo, he was definitely not a malicious person.

Perhaps, it was as Wang Qiang had said, that he had spent too much time alone in the Ancient Era's remnant. Perhaps that might be why he ended up having such an insane personality.

Thinking about it, if what Wang Qiang said was the truth, then his childhood was truly tragic.

No matter what, Chu Feng have had the people from the Chu Family looking after him. Yet, Wang Qiang... had been living by himself ever since he was able to form memories.

Furthermore, he had been living in an Ancient Era's remnant. Although Chu Feng had not been to the Ancient Era's remnant Wang Qiang lived in, he knew what sort of places the Ancient Era's remnants were.

They were dark, dangerous and frightening. They were places even martial cultivators would fear. As such, there was no need to mention how frightening they would be for a child.

When compared with Wang Qiang, Chu Feng felt himself to be very fortunate.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2125 - The Title Of Overlord**

After Chu Feng sat down, he pointed to the chair beside him and said, "Come, have a seat. Let me tell you about my story."

"C-coming," Wang Qiang sat down excitedly. He grabbed a large plate of refreshments with one hand, and with his other hand, began to put them into his mouth nonstop. His eyes were fixed on Chu Feng. He was happily waiting for Chu Feng to tell his story.

Chu Feng then began to inform Wang Qiang about the things that had happened here. He included the matters regarding the Chu Heavenly Clan, the death of the Dark Hall's Hall Master and Xue Ji's escape to the Outer World.

The reason why Chu Feng did not conceal anything from Wang Qiang was because he considered Wang Qiang to be his friend. He told Wang Qiang the truth because he trusted Wang Qiang.

Moreover, Wang Qiang had already told his own secret to Chu Feng. As such, it should only be natural that Chu Feng was honest with Wang Qiang.

Furthermore, Wang Qiang possessed outstanding talent, and was most definitely not a frog in a well. As such, Chu Feng wanted to invite Wang Qiang to enter the Outer World together with him. Like that... he would not be alone.

After hearing Chu Feng's invitation, Wang Qiang asked excitedly, "G-Go t-to the O-O-Outer World t-together? A-Are there a lot of beauties i-in the Outer W-World?"

"I don't know if there are a lot of beauties in the Outer World. However, the Outer World most definitely possesses an innumerable amount of experts. If

you wish to obtain even greater progress on the path of Martial Cultivation, the Outer World is a place that you must go to,” Chu Feng said.

“A-Actually, I-I’ve I-long since grown t-t-tired of this place. S-Since that t-t-t-trash Dark Hall’s H-H-Hall Master is dead, I-let’s go then. W-Why the wait? L-Let’s go to the Outer W-World right now,” Wang Qiang said excitedly. It could be seen that he was filled with anticipation for the unknown Outer World.

“Not yet, there are still some things that must be taken care of here,” Chu Feng said.

“W-What are t-those?” Wang Qiang asked.

“The resurrection of my family,” Chu Feng said.

“F-Family? Isn’t y-your family in t-t-the Outer W-World? F-Fuck, you’ve c-completely c-c-confused me,” A puzzled expression covered Wang Qiang’s face.

“My story is very long. If you wish to know more about me, I can slowly tell you about it. However, it must be done while we travel,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Then, Chu Feng found the blind old man and informed him that he planned to leave the Realm of Gods. After all, Chu Feng was impatient to revive his family members.

“Master, it is good for you to leave now.”

“The reason for that is because the Eastern Sea Region’s Heavenly Road should be opening soon. This is the perfect timing for me to accompany master to see Lord Xuanyuan.”

“However, Master, you must not take that vicious spatial crack again. Instead, you should take the safe one,” The blind old man said.

“There’s another spatial crack that leads to the Eastern Sea Region?” Chu Feng was surprised.

“There is,” The blind old man nodded.

Thus, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang left the Realm of Gods.

Although the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed, with Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's cultivations, there was practically no one in the Holy Land of Martialism capable of causing harm to them...

...but, for the sake of speeding up the journey for Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, the blind old man decided to leave together with them. After all, he also wished to pay his respects to Chu Feng's father and see how Zi Ling was doing.

However, due to his status, the blind old man would not reveal himself. Like before, he would hide himself.

Chu Feng first arrived at the Transmogrification Gate. He had to announce to the crowd that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed.

Of course, Chu Feng could not tell them the truth as to what had happened. After all, there were too many people here; he could not allow all of them to know about the Realm of Gods, as well as the Chu Heavenly Clan.

The crowd were all overjoyed and emotional to see Chu Feng's return.

As for Chu Feng, he casually told them a story about how he had killed the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Hearing that story, the crowd were even more excited and overjoyed.

After all, the story, the process of how it had happened, was not important. What was important was the fact that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed. That was what the crowd wished for.

After verifying that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed, the Transmogrification Gate was opened. After all, without the threat of the Dark Hall's Hall Master, both humans and monstrous beasts were able to return to their respective powers.

Everyone was going to go home.

Smiling figures filled the entire region. Regardless of whether they were humans or monstrous beasts, everyone's faces were covered with smiles of joy and excitement. Chu Feng was also feeling very happy.

He was happy that he had helped those people survive. He did not feel himself to be extraordinary because he had saved them.

Rather, by saving them and allowing them to return home, allowing the various powers from the various races to be able to continue to exist, this caused Chu Feng to feel that he had helped the people here.

Even though the world of martial cultivation was still cruel and killings would never stop...

Even though the humans and monstrous beasts here had experienced tribulations together and were all smiling right now...

They might, one day, for their own personal interests, slaughter one another. And that... was something that Chu Feng was destined to be unable to prevent.

But, that didn't matter. It was impossible for a single person to save everyone in the world to begin with.

At the very least... Chu Feng had managed to save a portion of the innocent people.

It was already sufficient that he had saved these people.

"Emperor Chu!!!"

"Emperor Chu!!!"

"Emperor Chu!!!"

"Emperor Chu!!!"

.....

.....

.....

After the hundreds of millions of people all walked out of the Transmogrification Gate, they did not immediately leave. Instead, they gathered on the ground in an orderly fashion and looked to Chu Feng, who stood in the sky, with gazes filled with gratefulness and adoration.

Regardless of whether they were men or women, young or old, humans or monstrous beasts, they were all cheering with raised arms.

“What is this?” Confused, Chu Feng looked to the Elf King beside him.

“Haha, I know. Let me explain it to you,” Before the Elf King could speak, Xian Miaomiao interrupted, “It’s like this. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master has been killed by you, and the Magma Emperor has been subdued by you. Thus, the people here wholeheartedly believe that you are the fully-deserving ruler of this era.”

“Thus, after you left, the people unanimously decided to deem you an Emperor, as this era’s sole overlord.”

“After a series of intense discussions, they decided to address you as Emperor Chu.”

“Furthermore, your status in the hearts of the crowd already surpasses that of Emperor Qing. Everyone feels that you are the strongest Emperor, the strongest overlord, since the Ancient Era.”

“However, that’s not the important point. Most importantly, it is I who suggested the name ‘Emperor Chu.’ How is it? Do you like it?” Xian Miaomiao asked as she patted her chest proudly.

“Emperor Chu?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng involuntarily looked to Wang Qiang beside him. After all, Wang Qiang possessed strength that surpassed his own.

“B-b-by o-overlord, it m-means s-someone that has managed to obtain the w-will of the p-people. Chu Feng, you h-have evidently a-a-a-accomplished it,” Wang Qiang said to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression. He had thought Wang Qiang to be a simple-minded and thoughtless individual. Never did he expect Wang Qiang to say something like that.

The intention behind Wang Qiang’s words were very clear. Although Chu Feng’s strength was inferior to his, Chu Feng had gained the will of the people, and truly saved the lives of hundreds of millions of people in the Holy Land of Martialism.

As for Wang Qiang, no matter how powerful he was, he had not done anything to help the people of the Holy Land of Martialism. The people that

knew of him and his strength were even fewer. Compared to Chu Feng, he was simply insignificant.

Even if he were to stand forth and declare himself to be the strongest in the Holy Land of Martialism, he would likely be met with a rain of curses from the crowd.

Even if he were to fight against Chu Feng on the spot and defeat him, it was likely that no one would acknowledge him still.

After all, it was Chu Feng who had stood forth bravely for them in their time of need. It was also Chu Feng who had fought for the hundreds of millions of people here.

In this world, there were many people who possessed strength. However, not all of them were willing to use their own strength to assist people unrelated to them.

Thus, to the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, only Chu Feng was qualified to be this era's overlord.

In other words, what Wang Qiang meant by those words he said was that he also felt that Chu Feng should take up the title of the overlord.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2126 - Journeying Together**

"Overlord," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said, "It's merely a false reputation."

After saying those words, Chu Feng looked to the sky. That was a place where their powers were incapable of reaching.

Only by entering the Stairway to Heaven would they be able to enter that place, the Outer World.

The so-called 'overlord' in this place, exactly what sort of wave could they possibly cause in the Outer World? That was something that no one knew.



However, Chu Feng had a feeling that the overlords of this place would be nothing more than ants in the eyes of the people in the Outer World.

“Chu Feng, even if it is a false reputation, it is still not something that just anyone could obtain.”

“To the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, it is a belief, a belief that there will be someone who can prevent calamities when they appear.”

“And you, you are someone who is qualified to take up that reputation. You are someone who is capable of shouldering the people’s belief,” The Elf King said.

“Your Majesty, although the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is dead now, the Holy Land of Martialism is a complete mess.”

“For many powers, their homes have already been ruined. Regardless of whether they are monstrous beasts or humans, they will all have to rebuild their homes.”

“And for that... I’m afraid they will likely need the assistance of the Ancient Era’s Elves. Everyone... still needs your assistance.”

“As for me, I will be going far away. Thus... if there really must be an overlord for the people, I feel that you are more suited for that title,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please don’t joke around. Even if I were willing to accept it, the people of the Holy Land of Martialism would not be willing to bestow me that title.”

“You must not go telling the crowd that I should be the overlord. If you do, I suspect that they will try to drown me to death with their spit,” The Elf King joked.

“Chu Feng, the title of overlord belongs to only you. As such, stop trying to evade it. Even this old man feels that only you are capable of being the overlord,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“Seniors, you are all truly overvaluing this Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said in a somewhat ashamed manner.

If the only person who was able to obtain the will of the people could become the overlord, then that person must be someone who had done things with the intention of benefiting the people in the Holy Land of Martialism.

As for Chu Feng, he had only defeated the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Furthermore, he had possessed a certain amount of selfishness in the battle between him and the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

However, in terms of fighting against the Dark Hall's Hall Master and protecting the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, the Ancient Era's Elves' contributions could not go unnoticed. Among them, their leader, the Elf King, was the one who had done the most.

Furthermore, although Chu Feng was still present in the Holy Land of Martialism right now, his heart had already entered the Outer World.

Chu Feng no longer cared about whatever reputation he might possess in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, the Ancient Era's Elves would remain in the Holy Land of Martialism. A great reputation would increase the authority of the Ancient Era's Elves in being able to better govern the Holy Land of Martialism in the future.

"Chu Feng, I know what you are thinking. We Ancient Era's Elves appreciate your kind intentions."

"The people here are no fools. They are all martial cultivators that possess wisdom. They also possess the ability to differentiate between good and bad."

"For them to acknowledge you as the overlord means that you are the overlord. Even if you refuse the title, you will still remain the overlord in their hearts," The Elf King said.

Finally, Chu Feng sighed and reached a compromise. "Forget about it," he said. After all, what the Elf King said was very reasonable.

Suddenly, the Heaven Reaching Immortal asked, "Little friend Chu Feng, you just said earlier that you'll be going far away; where are you planning to go? Could it be that you're planning to return to the Eastern Sea Region?"

"I'm going to the Outer World," Chu Feng said.

“Outer World?!” Hearing those words, the crowd present all revealed expressions of shock.

“Chu Feng, you know how to enter the Outer World?” The Elf King hurriedly asked. As he spoke those words, he glanced at his daughter, Xian Miaomiao.

“In the Eastern Sea Region’s Misty Peak is a formation by the name of ‘Stairway to Heaven.’ Through that Stairway to Heaven, one can enter the Outer World.”

Chu Feng did not mention the Realm of Gods. Although these people were all people that he trusted, he still did not wish to break the rules of the Realm of Gods.

Chu Feng hoped to be able to leave behind a pure land for the blind old man and the others.

“Little friend Chu Feng, is what you speak of for real?” The Elf King became even more emotional.

“I plan to return to the Eastern Sea Region to take care of some things. After I finish taking care of those things, I plan to directly leave for the Outer World from the Eastern Sea Region.”

“Miaomiao, you should accompany me. I have a feeling that the Outer World will have abundant cultivation resources. With your talent, your future prospects will look better there,” Chu Feng said to Xian Miaomiao.

He had promised the Elf King to take Xian Miaomiao to the Outer World with him. And now, as Chu Feng planned to leave for the Outer World, he would naturally have to take Xian Miaomiao with him.

Furthermore, Xian Miaomiao really did possess a very strong talent. In fact, Chu Feng faintly felt that Xian Miaomiao’s talent surpassed his own. She would definitely be able to gain a foothold in the Outer World.

“Chu Feng, I already know about the things concerning my mother. However, I do not wish to enter the Outer World just yet,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Miaomiao, you belong to the Outer World,” The Elf King urged.

“Royal Father, I will leave for the Outer World. I also wish to find my biological mother. However, I wish to accompany you and big sister for some time longer,” Xian Miaomiao looked to the Elf King and Princess Lingyue. A reluctance to part filled her beautiful eyes.

“Royal Father, since Miaomiao wishes to stay some time longer, you shouldn’t urge her to leave. Just let her stay for a while longer. After all, she’s still so young,” Princess Lingyue was also reluctant to part with her sister Miaomiao. Thus, she urged her father to let her stay.

“Very well,” The Elf King nodded. As Xian Miaomiao was his own daughter, how could he be willing to see her go? He actually also wished for Xian Miaomiao to accompany them for some time more.

“Miaomiao, even if you proceed for the Outer World by yourself in the future, it would still be best for you to accompany me to the Eastern Sea Region this time around.”

“I’ll bring you to see the formation that leads to the Outer World, so you’ll know how to enter the Outer World when you plan to go there in the future,” Chu Feng said.

“But, isn’t the spatial crack that leads to the Eastern Sea Region a vicious one?” Princess Lingyue asked worriedly.

“I have discovered another spatial crack. This spatial crack is benign in nature and very safe,” Chu Feng said.

“Since that’s the case, let’s all go there together. As little friend Chu Feng will be leaving, we should all see him off,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“Great, great, great. Let’s all go together. I have never been to the Eastern Sea Region before. I want to see exactly what sort of place Chu Feng grew up in is like. I also want to see Chu Feng’s friends and relatives in the Eastern Sea Region,” Xian Miaomiao said excitedly.

“Since even the Heaven Reaching Immortal plans to go, we naturally cannot be absent,” The Elf King said those words, then took a glance back at Bali Xuankong, Nangong Longjian, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Compass Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and the other people with superb relationships with Chu Feng.

Seeing his glance, everyone nodded excitedly. They could be considered to be people that had seen Chu Feng's growth with their own eyes, people that possessed very deep sentiments for Chu Feng. They would naturally want to see him off now that he was planning to leave. No one would be able to stop them.

"Four seniors, are you all planning to come too?" Chu Feng looked to the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Although Chu Feng possessed an overwhelming status in the Holy Land of Martialism, he had not even been born when the Four Great Divine Beasts had been renowned through the Holy Land of Martialism. Thus, by comparison, they were indeed his seniors.

"Chu Feng, you are our master. We will follow wherever our master goes," The Azure Dragon said. Its voice was very resounding, and without the slightest amount of restraint. Thus, not only did the Elf King hear those words, everyone present heard those words.

"Ssss~~~"

Hearing those words, many of the people present sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

The Four Great Divine Beasts were very powerful existences; they were four Half Martial Ancestors. Furthermore, they were beings that were already renowned in the Holy Land of Martialism ten thousand years ago.

Although the current Chu Feng possessed the strength to subdue the four of them, the crowd remained fired up upon hearing from the Azure Dragon that Chu Feng was indeed their master. This only served to confirm that this era's overlord would be none other than Chu Feng.

After it was decided, the crowd began to fly toward the Eastern Sea Region. Not only did the experts from the older generation follow Chu Feng, even the people from the younger generation like Tantai Xue and Sima Ying followed Chu Feng too.

Naturally, Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi were also among the crowd. After all, to them, the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent was also their homeland.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2127 - Father's Accomplishment**

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived at the Heavenly Road's exit to the Eastern Sea Region.

The Heavenly Road only went one way.

It seemed to be for the sake of some sort of equilibrium. As such, there was an enormous power separating the Eastern Sea Region from the Holy Land of Martialism. This made it impossible for people from the Holy Land of Martialism to enter the Eastern Sea Region.

Thus, if one wanted to get to the Eastern Sea Region from the Holy Land of Martialism, one had to do so by entering a spatial crack.

Merely, the spatial crack that the Compass Immortal had discovered earlier was very dangerous. While Chu Feng and the other experts were capable of passing through it, it was extremely difficult for all the others to pass through it. As such, Chu Feng would naturally not make them take that risk of entering the vicious spatial crack.

"Chu Feng, raise your hand," Suddenly, a voice transmission from the blind old man sounded in Chu Feng's ears.

Although the blind old man had not revealed himself, he had been following after Chu Feng and the others the entire time. Merely... no one managed to sense him. After all, he was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. In the Holy Land of Martialism, he was the fully-deserving strongest expert.

"Blind Uncle, you might as well just reveal yourself. Aren't some of the people here your old friends?" Chu Feng sent a voice transmission to the blind old man.

After all, there were many people in the Holy Land of Martialism that had met the blind old man before. Although it was unknown as to how they had met, it remained that they had met.

As for the Eastern Sea Region, there were even more people that knew of the blind old man. As such, Chu Feng felt that there was no reason for the blind old man to conceal himself the entire time.

“Master, it was different back then. Since this old servant has recognized master, it means that I cannot show even the smallest trace of disrespect toward master.”

“My previous identities were all fake. However, my current identity is real,” The blind old man said.

Chu Feng understood what the blind old man meant with those words. While he could disguise himself back then, he could not do so now. If he did not disguise himself, that would mean that he would have to let everyone know about the special relationship between him and Chu Feng. As such, the blind old man decided that he might as well not reveal himself.

As the blind old man possessed his own apprehensions, Chu Feng no longer tried to urge him to reveal himself.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve and emitted a layer of spirit power.

Actually, the spirit power that he emitted possessed absolutely no use. He only did what the blind old man told him to do.

“Buzz~~~”

However, after Chu Feng waved his sleeve, an enormous spatial crack appeared out of thin air.

That spatial crack was naturally not summoned by Chu Feng. Instead, at the time when Chu Feng waved his hand, the blind old man had activated that spatial crack.

“This spatial crack!!!”

After seeing the spatial crack, the eyes of everyone present started to shine with astonishment.

The reason for that was because that spatial crack was simply enormous. Not only was it wide and bright, it was also extraordinarily imposing.

How could this still be considered a spatial crack? It was simply a spatial tunnel. It was a spatial tunnel that could pass through the ancient energy separating the Holy Land of Martialism and the Eastern Sea Region.

n/.o)(17((e.(1)/&)-l)-n

Furthermore, when comparing the spatial crack the Compass Immortal had discovered with this spatial crack, it made this spatial crack appear even more imposing.

If the spatial crack the Compass Immortal had discovered was a tiny and difficult path filled with thistles and thorns, then the spatial crack before everyone right now was simply a magnificent road that lead to the heavens.

“Chu Feng, how did you discover this spatial crack?” The Elf King asked curiously.

“I managed to discover this spatial crack by chance after returning to the Eastern Sea Region,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Mn?” Merely, after Chu Feng said those words, the expressions of the Four Great Divine Beasts changed slightly.

After all, the four of them had followed Chu Feng the entire time. Even when returning to the Holy Land of Martialism through the Eastern Sea Region, they had used that vicious spatial crack. At that time, they had not discovered such a spectacular spatial crack.

Merely, even though the four of them sensed that something was fishy, they did not question Chu Feng, and pretended as if they didn’t know about it.

“This is truly extraordinary.”

“If that vicious spatial crack was only discovered by coincidence, then this spatial crack has simply appeared like a fine work of art,” The Elf King and the others were all exclaiming in astonishment.

Faced with the exclamation from the crowd, Chu Feng could only pretend to smile calmly. After all, it was also the first time he was seeing this spatial crack.



In actuality, Chu Feng was also extremely astonished by this spatial crack. Thus, he secretly sent a voice transmission to the blind old man and asked, "Blind Uncle, how did you discover this spatial crack?"

"Master, this spatial crack was not discovered by this old servant. Rather, it was created by Lord Xuanyuan," The blind old man said.

"My father?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng was astonished.

"Indeed. Lord Xuanyuan created this spatial crack for the sake of making it easy for me to travel to the Eastern Sea Region," The blind old man answered.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng became even more astonished. The energy separating the Holy Land of Martialism and the Eastern Sea Region was no small matter.

Yet, his father was actually capable of forcibly splitting that energy apart and opening up a tunnel that connected the Holy Land of Martialism to the Eastern Sea Region. This was truly too inconceivable.

'Father, exactly how powerful are you?'

At that moment, such a question came into Chu Feng's mind. At the same time he had that question, Chu Feng felt his blood racing. He was extremely excited.

When he first heard of his father from Huangfu Haoyue, Chu Feng had already felt that his father should be extremely powerful. Else, it would be impossible for him to make Huangfu Haoyue that scared.

However, that had only been Chu Feng's wishful thinking, because he did not actually know what level of cultivation and what sort of strength his father possessed.

Merely, as a son, he felt adoration for his father from the bottom of his heart. As such, he wished that his father would be very powerful.

And now, even though Chu Feng still didn't know what sort of cultivation his father possessed, he became even more certain that his father was definitely very powerful, unimaginably powerful even, after personally seeing the accomplishments left behind by his father.

After all, the tunnel before them was sufficient to prove everything. Such a tunnel, not to mention for the current Chu Feng, even if Chu Feng trained for many years after this, he would not necessarily be able to accomplish such a feat.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, "Everyone, let's go."

As matters stood, he was even more urgent to meet his biological father.

"Well then, everyone, stop looking at it. Let's go," The Elf King added.

The reason why he had added those words was because, even now, the crowd was still looking at that tunnel. This was especially true for the Heaven Reaching Immortal, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Compass Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal, these world spiritists.

They all had a vague feeling that this tunnel didn't seem to have formed naturally. Rather, it seemed to be man-made.

Thus, they wanted to observe the tunnel to find an answer. Unfortunately... they did not possess sufficient strength to be able to see through the profoundness of the tunnel.

Afterward, the crowd all entered the tunnel created by Chu Feng's father and arrived at the Eastern Sea Region.

After arriving at the Eastern Sea Region, Chu Feng directly led these experts from the Holy Land of Martialism to the Misty Peak.

After all, Chu Feng must let Xian Miaomiao know where the formation leading to the Outer World was located.

Without a doubt, the people on the Misty Peak, for example Huangfu Haoyue and Qiushui Fuyan, were all extremely astonished to see Chu Feng returning with so many experts from the Holy Land of Martialism.

Earlier, they had only thought that Chu Feng was very powerful. It was at that moment that they realized that Chu Feng's power had already surpassed their imagination.

After all, ignoring the rest of the crowd, they were able to see that the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise, the Four Great Divine

Beasts, were all standing behind Chu Feng to either side of him. That was already enough to let Huangfu Haoyue and the others know that Chu Feng's current strength and status was already something that no one in the Eastern Sea Region could compare with.

Even in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng would also definitely be someone with great power.

Merely, they did not know that not only was Chu Feng someone powerful in the Holy Land of Martialism...

... he was even the person that everyone acknowledged the current era's overlord.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2128 - Reviving The Chu Family**

Although Chu Feng's return came as an enormous surprise to all the people in the Misty Peak, Chu Feng did not plan to stay for long.

He had merely brought Xian Miaomiao and the others to have a look at the Stairway to Heaven, and greeted Qiushui Fuyan and Huangfu Haoyue. He casually told them that Xian Miaomiao and the others might have to use the Stairway to Heaven in the future, and requested that they not try to stop them from doing so.

He also told them about his main purpose in returning to the Eastern Sea Region that time around.

After finding out that Chu Feng had returned to the Eastern Sea Region with the intent to return to the Nine Provinces Continent to revive his relatives, and that he would be leaving immediately after doing so, Huangfu Haoyue and the others decided to accompany Chu Feng to the Nine Provinces Continent.

Although they did not possess any understanding of the Outer World, they were able to realize that Chu Feng would likely be leaving for a very long time.

As such, they all wished to accompany Chu Feng in the limited time that they had.

Thus, the number of people in Chu Feng's group grew even more numerous and powerful.

Majestically, they began to proceed toward the Nine Provinces Continent.

"I truly never would've thought that Chu Feng would've... already become this powerful in merely a few short years."

As Huangfu Haoyue, Qiushui Fuyan and the others looked to Chu Feng, who was at the front of the group of people, their gazes became very complicated.

The reason for that was because, on their way to the Nine Provinces Continent, Xian Miaomiao, Sima Ying, Princess Lingyue and other members of the younger generation from the Holy Land of Martialism had all arrived before Huangfu Haoyue and the others, this group of people from the Eastern Sea Region.

The reason why they went to them was because they wished to know more about Chu Feng's achievements in the Eastern Sea Region from Huangfu Haoyue and the others.

However, at the same time as they were making inquiries about Chu Feng's past achievements, they were also informing Huangfu Haoyue and the others about what Chu Feng had accomplished in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Thus, Huangfu Haoyue and the others already knew of Chu Feng's true strength now, as well as the status he possessed in the Holy Land of Martialism.

They began to recall how Chu Feng had been so weak, how he had truly been someone from the younger generation, and how he had still needed them to protect him before.

And now, Chu Feng had become so powerful. He had reached a level they were simply unable to even touch.

At that moment, exclamations of admiration filled their hearts.

"We're here."

Suddenly, Chu Feng, who was leading the crowd, stopped.

The reason for that was because they had arrived at the Nine Provinces Continent's Azure Province. Furthermore, they were currently in the skies above the Golden-purple City.

Although the Golden-purple City was not the hometown of the Chu Family, it was the place where the people from the Chu Family had been massacred.

If Chu Feng wanted to resurrect them, this would be the best place to do so.

"Seniors, please wait for me here. I will return immediately."

Then, Chu Feng personally proceeded toward the Azure Dragon School.

He was going there to call for the people of the Chu Family.

He was not doing this for the sake of telling them this great news immediately. Rather, the resurrection secret technique possessed a very important characteristic. That was that it required one's close kin to call for the souls of the dead.

Back then, a lot of people from the Chu Family had been killed. Among them, many were not close to Chu Feng at all.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that if he wanted to resurrect more people from the Chu Family, he would need more people from the Chu Family that possessed close relationships with those that had been killed.

As such, Chu Guyu, Chu Wei, Chu Cheng, Chu Zhen, Chu Yue and the others, the people from the Chu Family that were still alive, would all be absolutely necessary for this.

Chu Feng arrived at the Azure Dragon School and directly told Chu Guyu and the others from the Chu Family why he had returned.

After hearing about this technique, Chu Guyu and the others were all filled with astonishment; they all felt an enormous amount of disbelief.

After all, resurrection was something that they'd never seen before, something simply unheard of.

Even though they found it unbelievable, and found it hard to accept that there would be such a technique in the world, they still decided to follow Chu Feng.

As such, they all arrived at the Golden-purple City.

It was not only the people from the Chu Family that followed him over, the Azure Dragon Founder, Li Zhangqing, Zhuge Liuyun and others also followed him over.

“Heavens! This...”

When the Azure Dragon Founder, Chu Guyu and the others saw all the experts from the Holy Land of Martialism, they were all stunned.

The difference between their cultivations was simply too great. Even though the experts from the Holy Land of Martialism did not deliberately reveal their auras, and were even deliberately concealing them, they still appeared to emit extraordinary airs before the eyes of Chu Guyu and the others.

This caused Chu Guyu and the others to feel as if they were little grasses standing before enormous mountains when they stood before the Elf King and the others. They felt themselves to be extremely small.

“Little brother Chu Feng, those people... they’re all your friends from the Holy Land of Martialism?” Astonished, Chu Yue asked Chu Feng curiously. She began to feel that her little brother was even more amazing than she had thought.

“We are all Chu Feng’s friends,” The Elf King said with a smile. Seemingly afraid that the people from the Azure Dragon School would be afraid, his tone was extremely gentle and friendly.

Following him, the other people also expressed their close relationship with Chu Feng.

“Ssss~~~”

After telling the crowd of their relationship with Chu Feng, the people from the Azure Dragon School were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Even though they already knew that Chu Feng’s future outlook was very bright, they had not expected Chu Feng to be this overwhelmingly powerful.

At that moment they were astonished, so astonished that they all turned their gazes to Chu Feng, with pride filling their gazes.

After all, they were all people who had close relationships with Chu Feng.

“B-B-B-Beauty, n-ni-nice to meet you. I-I am C-C-Chu Feng’s g-good friend. M-My name is W-Wang Qiang.”

“M-May I a-ask, a-are you Chu F-Feng’s big s-sister?”

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang’s body shifted. Like a phantom, he arrived before Chu Yue.

Although Wang Qiang’s upper body was completely naked, and he possessed an extremely strange outfit, his strength was extremely powerful. As such, Chu Yue did not dare to disrespect him. She answered truthfully, “Senior, nice to meet you. I am Chu Feng’s older cousin. My name is Chu Yue.”

“M-my, d-don’t address me a-as s-s-senior. I m-might even be y-younger than you. C-Come, let’s s-s-s-sh-shake hands,” Wang Qiang extended his filthy and stinky hand with a beaming smile on his face.

To Chu Yue, Wang Qiang was a senior. When he was asking for a handshake, how could she possibly dare to refuse him?

Merely, she did not notice that Wang Qiang’s saliva was about to drool out of the corner of his mouth the moment she extended her lily-white hand.

“Paa~~~”

Seeing that, Chu Feng immediately raised his hand and slapped Wang Qiang’s extended hand away. Then he shouted, “Scram! You’re even trying to take advantage of my big sister Chu Yue? Have you grown tired of living?”

“N-N-Nonesense! A-Am I t-t-that sort of p-per-person?” Wang Qiang spoke with righteousness. Then his body shifted, and he arrived before Chu Xue. With a beaming smile on his face, he said, “N-N-Nice to meet you. I-I a-am Chu F-Feng’s friend. M-May I k-know who y-you m-might be?”

Sigh...

Seeing Wang Qiang acting like this, Chu Feng revealed an expression of helplessness. Thus, he decided to ignore Wang Qiang. He turned to Chu Guyu and the others and said, "Big brother, big sister Chu Yue, let's start."

"Little brother, is it truly possible?" Chu Guyu asked.

Chu Guyu did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to resurrect the people of the Chu Family. However, at the same time, he truly wished for that resurrection technique to be true.

"Let's give it a try," Chu Feng said with a light smile. His smile was slightly distressed.

The reason for that was because even he was uncertain as to whether or not it was truly possible. That said, he also deeply wished for that secret technique to be useful.

Thus, Chu Feng was very scared that the secret technique would fail; that he would not be able to resurrect the members of the Chu Family.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

After thinking about it, Chu Feng immediately started to set up a grand formation. For the sake of preventing a failure, Chu Feng was extremely meticulous in setting up this grand formation. He would make sure to grasp everything and every detail of the formation.

After the formation was completed, Chu Feng and the others from the Chu Family all sat cross-legged above the formation's core.

After they all entered the formation, everyone closed their eyes. What they had to do was very simple. They merely needed to emit their longing for their relatives and call for their relatives in their hearts nonstop. As for the rest... that would all be left to Chu Feng to take care of.

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted, "Rise."

Once he said that word, the fifty-five thousand five hundred and fifty-five white candles within the formation were simultaneously ignited.

At the same time, a strange sort of power began to pulse from the formation.

"That secret technique!!!"



At that moment, everyone's hearts, regardless of whether they were from the Holy Land of Martialism or the Eastern Sea Region, started to tighten, And their expressions changed.

When the candles ignited, they all sensed that strange power engulfing their bodies.

That was a power that they had never felt before. It was as if their souls were attracted to that formation.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2129 - Don't Harm Her**

"It would seem that the secret resurrection technique is feasible."

The Heaven Reaching Immortal's eyes were shining. When he personally felt the power emitted by the formation, he realized that the secret resurrection technique was most definitely not empty words. Instead, it possessed actual usage.

Merely, after an entire day passed, not a single single spirit body was seen or had formed.

Furthermore, the great world spiritists like the Heaven Reaching Immortal were also unable to sense the appearance of any souls.

That sort of result inevitably caused the crowd to feel somewhat regretful. More and more people began to feel that this secret resurrection technique would not work.

After two entire days passed, Chu Guyu who was sitting in the formation, opened his eyes.

It was only at that moment that he discovered that Chu Zhen, Chu Yue and the others had all already opened their eyes.

Not only were their eyes opened, they also had disappointed and distressed expressions on their faces.

"Is it a failure?"

At that moment, without needing anyone to tell him, Chu Guyu realized that the secret resurrection technique seemed to have failed.

Hearing those words from Chu Guyu, many people present nodded their heads, even though they were unwilling to admit that the secret resurrection technique had failed.

After verifying that it had failed, Chu Guyu revealed extreme sorrow in his eyes.

Even though he never placed too great of a hope in the secret resurrection technique to begin with, they had still placed hope in it.

Thus, even though they knew that it might fail, they would inevitably still feel grief when it actually did fail.

“Little brother,” Suddenly, Chu Guyu’s gaze turned sluggish.

He discovered that while everyone else had opened their eyes, Chu Feng had not. His body was emitting world spirit power that fused into that spirit formation nonstop.

After hearing Chu Guyu’s call, Chu Feng also opened his eyes. He smiled lightly, then said, “Let’s try it again.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng closed his eyes again and continued to operate the secret resurrection technique.

Seeing that, Chu Guyu and the others closed their eyes again too.

Just like that, Chu Guyu and the others persisted for one day, two days, three days...

When there was still no sign of any soul or spirit body on the seventh day, everyone started to give up hope. They felt that the people from the Chu Family would likely not be able to be revived.

However, Chu Feng continued to persist. He continued regardless of who it was that tried to urge him to stop.

“Little brother, I know you want to revive father, grandfather and the others. We too wish for that.”

“But, we must also recognize reality. It is time for you to stop. If you are to continue with this, you will bring harm to your health.”

Chu Guyu stood before Chu Feng and urged him to stop. At that moment... everyone was surrounding Chu Feng.

“I understand. But, let me continue, let me continue for one more day. If it is still useless then, I will give up.” Chu Feng opened his eyes and spoke with a smile on his face.

Although his smile appeared to be very relaxed, his expression was actually slightly ugly.

He had been keeping the formation activated for seven days and nights straight. As such, it was very taxing on Chu Feng mentally. His body was on the verge of collapse.

After all, that formation was different from ordinary spirit formations. Thus, even though Chu Feng’s perseverance was very strong, and his spirit power very powerful, he would likely still collapse if this were to continue.

However, even with this being the case, he still forcibly persisted. As such, he would naturally cause the crowd to become very worried and saddened by his actions.

Right at that moment, Huangfu Haoyue said, “Chu Feng, if you want to persist, we will all approve of it. Merely, I’m afraid that there won’t be enough time.”

“Senior, please rest assured, I can still persist,” Chu Feng said.

“No, I’m not talking about your health,” Huangfu Haoyue said.

“Then?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s the Heavenly Road. Aren’t you planning to enter the Heavenly Road?” Huangfu Haoyue asked.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s pupils immediately shrank. Then, he asked, “The Heavenly Road is about to open?”

“That’s right. If you wish to go there, I’m afraid you must leave immediately,” Huangfu Haoyue said.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked to the secret resurrection technique before him. His heart felt very complicated. He actually knew that he had failed. Merely... he did not wish to give up this easily.

However, it would appear that he now had no choice but to give up. The reason for that was because he must first go and meet his father before entering the Outer World.

However, the blind old man had already used the communication talisman Chu Feng's father had given him. As such, there was no way to get in contact with Chu Feng's father.

If Chu Feng wanted to see his father, the only way he could do so was to enter the Heavenly Road, then find the Chu Family's forbidden area in the Heavenly Road.

As for the Heavenly Road, it only opened once a year. If Chu Feng missed this opportunity, he would have to wait for another year.

"Seniors, please go and rest in the Azure Dragon School for the time being. After I return from the Heavenly Road, I would like to make another attempt at this secret resurrection technique," Chu Feng said to the crowd.

"Chu Feng, do you really not need us to accompany you?" The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked.

Chu Feng shook his head. He looked to the Four Great Divine Beasts and said, "It would do with the four of them accompanying me."

After that was decided, Chu Feng and the Four Great Divine Beasts began to fly toward the Eastern Sea Region again.

On their way there, the blind old man that had concealed himself the entire time also revealed himself. After all, their speed would be much faster should he be the one leading the group.

"Isn't this person?"

Upon seeing the blind old man, the expressions of the Four Great Divine Beasts all changed. They naturally recognized the blind old man. After all, they had experienced everything with Chu Feng.

Merely, the four of them were astonished by the blind old man's aura.

Even though they had followed Qing Xuantian in the past, they had never met someone as powerful as the blind old man.

As for Chu Feng, he did not conceal this matter from the Four Great Divine Beasts, and instead informed them about the blind old man's identity.

After hearing about Chu Feng's identity, the Four Great Divine Beasts were all extremely astonished. None of them had expected Chu Feng to possess such a noble and grand status.

They had not expected such a strong power in the Holy Land of Martialism to only be Chu Feng's clan servants.

"Master, after you see Lord Xuanyuan later, it would be best that you tell him about the Moon Immortal."

"Actually, this old servant had originally planned to retrieve Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies from the Moon Immortal after acknowledging my relationship with you."

"Merely, ever since the Moon Immortal escaped from her battle against the Dark Hall's Hall Master before the Transmogrification Gate, this old servant has been unable to find any trace of her at all. As such... we can only ask Lord Xuanyuan for his help in the matter." The blind old man said.

The blind old man knew that Chu Feng and the Four Great Divine Beasts were going to enter the Outer World. In the future, they would be fighting alongside each other in the Outer World. As such, he did not try to conceal anything, and spoke directly before the Four Great Divine Beasts.

"It would be best if my father is willing to help us," Chu Feng naturally wished to help Su Rou and Su Mei retrieve their physical bodies.

However, after hearing what the blind old man said to Chu Feng, the gazes of the Four Great Divine Beasts all revealed various degrees of change. They looked to one another, and then secretly consulted with one another. Then the Azure Dragon spoke. "Chu Feng, there is a matter that I think it is time for us to inform you about."

"Senior Azure Dragon, what might that matter be?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's regarding the Moon Immortal," The Azure Dragon said.

"Moon Immortal?" Chu Feng was startled. However, upon recalling how the four of them had followed Qing Xuantian, he determined that they were likely present when Qing Xuantian came in contact with the Moon Immortal, and should possess a better understanding of the Moon Immortal than him. Thus, he said, "Seniors, please go ahead and tell me whatever it is that you all want to say."

"Chu Feng, if you are able to capture the Moon Immortal, please don't harm her," The Azure Dragon said.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2130 - Re-entering The Heavenly Road - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2130 - Re-entering The Heavenly Road**

### **Chapter 2130 - Re-entering The Heavenly Road**

"Why?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng actually felt that the Moon Immortal's nature was not evil. Although she had forcibly seized Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies, Chu Feng felt that she should have her own difficulties that she found hard to mention.

Thus, even if the Azure Dragon and the others had not requested it, he still did not plan to harm the Moon Immortal.

However, since the Azure Dragon and the others pleaded for leniency for the Moon Immortal, Chu Feng felt that there should be a special reason.

"We promised Qing Xuantian that we would not tell anyone about his relationship with the Moon Immortal."

"As such, we can only tell you that Qing Xuantian and the Moon Immortal possessed an extraordinary relationship."

“Thus, Chu Feng, could you please give us face, give Qing Xuantian face, and not bring harm upon the Moon Immortal?” The Azure Dragon pleaded.

At that moment, Chu Feng came to an understanding. It turned out that the Azure Dragon and the others were pleading for the Moon Immortal because of Qing Xuantian.

Even though Chu Feng already knew that the Moon Immortal possessed a relationship with Qing Xuantian, he had not expected it to be an extraordinary relationship.

“If the Moon Immortal is willing to return Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies, I will naturally not harm her. However, if she refuses, my hands will be forced.”

“After all, Su Rou and Su Mei are my beloved women,” Chu Feng did not speak too inflexibly.

Regardless of whether the Moon Immortal was good or evil, it remained that she had forcibly seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies. If she refused to return their bodies, Chu Feng would not be polite with her just because she had saved him before.

After all, those were Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies.

“If the Moon Immortal refuses to hand over Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies, even if you are willing to spare us, the four of us would absolutely not let her get away with it,” The Azure Dragon said.

The Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise and White Tiger also nodded at the Azure Dragon’s words. They had expressed their viewpoints.

Seeing that, Chu Feng smiled lightly. He felt joy in his heart. Although the Four Great Divine Beasts had pleaded for the Moon Immortal for Qing Xuantian, they had not forgotten him, their new master.

.....

Eastern Sea Region. At a sea called the Heaven Sea. Countless people were already gathered in that place.

The reason all those people had gathered was because that was the place where the Heavenly Road would open every year.

“Rumble~~~”

As rumbles began to be heard, waves began to surge above the sea. Then, an enormous whirlpool began to appear.

As the whirlpool spun, the waves grew even more ferocious. The size of the whirlpool began to expand unceasingly. In the end, countless enormous whirlpools practically covered the entire sea. It was truly a magnificent sight.

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, many thick beams of light began to shoot out of the whirlpools explosively. After being shot out from the whirlpools in the sea, the beams of light gathered together in the sky and formed a golden-bright and dazzling grand formation.

That grand formation was enormous. The top of it reached the clouds, whereas the bottom entered the sea. It looked like a tall, golden wall that separated the world. At the same time, it looked like a bright sun that stood between heaven and earth

In that sort of situation, an entrance soon appeared in the center of the formation.

“It’s here.”

At that moment, deafening shouts sounded from the vast crowd. Everyone was filled with excitement.

The reason for that was because they all knew that it meant that the Heavenly Road had officially opened.

Merely, although the crowd was filled with excitement from the opening of the Heavenly Road, none of them dared to actually set foot into it.



The reason for that was because everyone knew that while the Heavenly Road was capable of bringing them to the legendary Holy Land of Martialism, the Heavenly Road was also extremely and frighteningly dangerous.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, space suddenly started to tremble. Everyone felt that the world seemed to be trembling violently. In fact, those with lower levels of cultivation directly fell from the air and into the sea down below.

“What’s going on?”

At that moment, many people started to panic. Even the old senior-level characters revealed expressions of panic.

Although the sensation they felt lasted for merely an instant, it was like the arrival of doomsday. As such, everyone felt lingering fears in their hearts.

Merely, no one knew that the trembling from before was caused by the sonic boom created through rapid movement.

At the moment when everyone present was alarmed, Chu Feng, the blind old man and the Four Great Divine Beasts had successfully entered the Heavenly Road.

The first thing they were met with after entering the Heavenly Road was pitch darkness. They felt as if the place was a bottomless pit. However, as they continued onward, light soon appeared before them. It was a deep blue glimmer. That glimmer was created by some sort of floating object.

That deep blue object emitting light was the size of a watermelon. Furthermore, more deep blue objects could be found throughout that vast world as far as the eye could see. That place did not resemble an isolated space at all. Instead, it seemed more like a starry sky. It was very beautiful and mysterious.

As they continued onward, horrifying anguished wailing soon began to be heard. Following close behind that were many vengeful spirits seeking their lives.

Everything was exactly the same as the first time Chu Feng stepped onto the Heavenly Road. All of these were things that one must experience after setting foot onto the Heavenly Road.

Merely, back then, Chu Feng had felt uneasy after seeing those things. However, now... he was completely calm.

Even if there were truly dangers on the Heavenly Road, there would rarely be anything capable of causing harm to Chu Feng given how powerful he was at the moment.

Furthermore, the blind old man, a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, was with him.

Most importantly, Chu Feng felt that... his father would know that he had entered the Heavenly Road.

The reason for that was because he would never forget who it was that dispatched that powerful guardian statue to save them when he and Tantai Xue were met with difficult opponents.

It was the Old Ape. However, Chu Feng knew that the Old Ape must've acted per his father's instructions.

'Father should know that I've come to find him, right?'

'Will father be willing to see me this time?'

Recalling the scene from the past, Chu Feng became even more excited and nervous.

He was excited because he wanted to see his biological father. He was nervous because he was afraid that his strength would be insufficient, and that his father would end up refusing to see him again.

With that sort of nervousness filling his heart, Chu Feng finally arrived before that magnificent gate.

That gate appeared exactly the same as before. It was wide open.

However, differently from back then, two guardian statues were standing on either side of the gate now. They appeared very impressive.

At that moment, Chu Feng stopped before the gate and cast his gaze to one of the two guardian statues. With a smile, he said, "It was you that saved me back then."

After saying those words, Chu Feng set foot into the gate.

Everything was the same as it was back then. After entering the gate, they were met with pitch darkness. Even though Chu Feng was a rank seven Martial Emperor and a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, his techniques were still unable to accomplish anything in that place.

Like a blind person, he could only continue onward toward the faint light that he could see ahead. Chu Feng and the others moved toward that light.

When they finally managed to arrive before the light, Chu Feng grew even more excited.

It was the light of a fire. There was a bonfire there. However, that was not the important aspect. Most importantly, sitting beside the bonfire was an extremely thin ape wearing shabby looking clothes.

That... was the Old Ape.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2131 - Finally Meeting Father**

"Senior."

Chu Feng was extremely excited to see the Old Ape. This was especially true when he discovered that the Old Ape still possessed an unfathomable depth that he couldn't see through even now.

"So you've come, Chu Feng."

After the Old Ape saw Chu Feng, he stood up. His mouth lifted into a light smile.

Compared to back then, his reaction was completely different. Back then, the Old Ape had had an extremely cold and ferocious attitude when he looked at Chu Feng.

However, his attitude was now filled with amiability. It was as if... he had been awaiting Chu Feng's arrival the entire time.

"This old servant pays his respect to Milord," Seeing the old ape, the blind old man hurriedly knelt to greet him.

"Woosh~~~"

However, before the blind old man could actually kneel, the Old Ape waved his sleeve and lifted the blind old man back onto his feet.

"There's no need to be overly courteous. Quickly, go in with Chu Feng," The Old Ape said. As he said those words, he glanced at the Four Great Divine Beasts. He said, "However, as for the four of them, their statuses are too low. As such, they are not allowed to enter the Chu Clan's Forbidden Area."

After he finished saying those words, the Old Ape sat back down in a cross-legged position beside the special bonfire.

Normally, the Four Great Divine Beasts would definitely be enraged if someone would dare to speak to them in such a manner. However, when those words were spoken by the Old Ape, the four of them did not dare to reveal any trace of anger. Instead... they obediently sat down by the bonfire.

After all, the Old Ape was an existence that even the blind old man could not compare to. Likely, no one other than the Old Ape himself knew how powerful he really was.

However, regardless of how powerful the Old Ape might be, it was certain that he would be able to kill them with merely a spit if he wished to.

The Four Great Divine Beasts were not foolish. Thus, how could they possibly dare to act imprudently before such a powerful existence?

At that moment, they became even more convinced of Chu Feng's noble status. At the same time, they began to look forward to their journey to the Outer World even more.

Chu Feng and the blind old man continued onward. Merely, as the two of them continued onward, they soon arrived before Chu Feng's tombstone.

That tomb had been set up for Chu Feng, and had been used to deceive the people of the Chu Clan.

Back then, it had been destroyed by that fellow by the name of Chu Kongtong. However, it would appear that the tomb had since been restored.

When Chu Feng looked at the tombstone again, he was filled with joy.

It was not because of the tombstone. Rather, it was because of the person standing beside the tombstone. Beside the tombstone was a beautiful woman.

Her beauty and air of elegance was like that of a celestial fairy. She was none other than Zi Ling.

Not only was the current Zi Ling completely unharmed, her aura was much more powerful than before. She had become a rank one Martial Emperor.

Although that level of cultivation was greatly inferior to Chu Feng's current level of cultivation, it was already enormous progress when compared to the Zi Ling from back then.

"Zi Ling," Upon seeing Zi Ling, Chu Feng hurriedly rush to her and placed his hands onto her shoulders. Then, he surveyed her from head to toe, "Let me see if my foolish little girl is fine."

"Rest assured, I'm fine," Zi Ling smiled sweetly. Then, she looked to the blind old man and said, "Master, please rest assured too. I am completely healed."

"That's great, that's great," The blind old man nodded repeatedly. A smile covering his face.

The blind old man was not a heartless person. No matter what, he had instructed Zi Ling and the others before. Thus, he possessed a considerable amount of affection for Zi Ling and the others.

"However, Miss Zi Ling, this old servant has now identified myself to Master. As such, you no longer need to address this old servant as master, because this old servant is unworthy of that address," The blind old man said.

Hearing those words, Zi Ling wanted to say something. However, it seemed that she then recalled something, and decided to say nothing.

Instead, she looked at Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, go on ahead. Your father is waiting for you."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart immediately thumped.

"Zi Ling, my father is willing to meet me now?" Chu Feng did not dare to believe his own ears. After all, this was extremely important to him.

"Don't be foolish. Go on in, that's your father that's waiting for you," Zi Ling said with a smile.

"Very well," Chu Feng nodded repeatedly. He was able to understand what Zi Ling meant by her words. His father must have wanted him to go in alone.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heartbeat suddenly started to accelerate. He felt as if his heart was about to jump out of his throat.

Over these years, Chu Feng had experienced all sorts of things, and set foot into all kinds of dangerous places.

However, never had he ever been so nervous.

'Lord Father, exactly what sort of person is he?'

'Will he like me?'

All sorts of questions began to hover in Chu Feng's heart.

"Buzz~~~" n(-σ./∇(.e-(ℒ/-b.)l()n

Suddenly, the dark scene before Chu Feng started to brighten. A stone table and two stone chairs appeared not far ahead of Chu Feng.

Furthermore, a middle-aged man was sitting on one of the stone chairs.

That man was not very tall, robust or handsome. Especially his outfit; he was wearing very plain and unadorned clothing. It could be said that he appeared extremely ordinary.

However, to Chu Feng, this man appeared very imposing. He was so imposing that simply no one could be compared with him.

It was as if this man was the most powerful man in the world. Regardless of what other people thought, this was what Chu Feng felt.

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Lord Father.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng knelt onto the ground and respectfully kowtowed to the man before him. He knew... that the man before him was most definitely his father.

After all, at that very moment, his bloodline's power was throbbing.

“We are father and son, not strangers. There is no need for you to do that sort of thing,” Once Chu Xuanyuan's words left his mouth, Chu Feng actually started to float. Unable to control himself, Chu Feng started to float toward the stone chair beside Chu Xuanyuan.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that Chu Xuanyuan had simply not even moved. However... it was clear that the power that covered him was emitted by Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Feng was brought to the stone chair and seated on it by that power.

“You must be extremely wearied by your journey. You should eat some food to replenish your physical strength,” Chu Xuanyuan personally picked up a dimsum and handed it to Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that dimsums and fruits covered the stone table. Although those dimsums and fruits were all very simple, they were all the things that Chu Feng loved to eat the most.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt a sniffle in his nose. He was able to tell that those things were... most definitely meticulously prepared by his father.

“Thank you, Lord Father,” As Chu Feng spoke, he received the dimsum his father had handed him.

“Enough with the ‘Lord Father’. I am your father, and you are my son. You are my flesh. There is nothing more related than the two of us in this world.”

“Thus, it would do if you just addressed me as ‘father’. There is no need for too much etiquette between father and son,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a light smile. His smile was filled with affection toward one's child.

“Yes, father.” At that moment, Chu Feng stopped acting reversed, and smiled with ease. Then, he bluntly grabbed a dimsum and took a large bite.

It was not that Chu Feng was hungry. Merely, he wished to taste the dimsums that his father had prepared for him. The reason for that was because this was the first time he was eating something his biological father had prepared for him.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the bite of dimsum entered his mouth, Chu Feng sensed a warm aura filling his entire body.

Chu Feng, who had been feeling slightly exhausted, was immediately filled with energy and his face became radiant.

That dimsum was absolutely not an ordinary dimsum. It contained a special sort of power that was much more effective than even the most powerful medicinal pellet Chu Feng possessed.

That sort of dimsum, not to mention the Eastern Sea Region, was something that not even the people in the Holy Land of Martialism could possibly make. At that moment, Chu Feng felt the diligence of his father. The reason for that was because he knew that both the dimsums and the fruits were most definitely personally created by his father.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2132 - The Vast Outer World**

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan apologized. “Feng’er, for you to be orphaned these years, it was because your father was incompetent. I have made you suffer,”

Chu Feng let go of the dimsum in his hand. With an expression filled with self-blame, he said, “Father, you must not say something like that. Senior Ape has already mentioned to me what happened back then. Even though I do not know the details, what I know that it was I, your son, that implicated you and mother.”



“You are but a child, how could you be at fault? The ones at fault are the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, exactly what happened back then?” Chu Feng asked.

“I know that you have a lot of questions in your heart. Don’t be anxious, father will slowly explain everything to you,” Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly. Then, he said, “Firstly, you need to understand this vast and boundless world of martial cultivation.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart was immediately moved. The vast and boundless world of martial cultivation was something that Chu Feng had wished to know about, but had never been able to know about.

Now, would he really be able to know about it?

“Presently, the known world of martial cultivation is roughly separated into three realms; Upper, Ordinary and Lower.”

“After the Ancient Era, due to the difference in talent that people possessed, the different races and clans started to live in different worlds.”

“The martial cultivators of the Lower Realms possessed the worst talent. Following that were the martial cultivators from the Ordinary Realms. Compared to them, the martial cultivators of the Upper Realms possessed much better talent.”

“The so-called Outer World means being outside of a known world. To the people living in the Lower Realms, the Upper Realms would be considered to be the Outer World, whereas the Ordinary Realms would also be considered to be the Outer World.”

“And now, the world that we are currently in is known as the ‘Ancestral Martial Lower Realm,’” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“The Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, the world that we live in, is the lowest tier world?”

“No wonder. No wonder that Dark Hall’s Hall Master acted so arrogantly, and refused to put the people of the Holy Land of Martialism in his eyes,” Chu Feng finally realized why that Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been so conceited.

He also understood the reason why the Dark Hall's Hall Master addressed the people from the Holy Land of Martialism as 'trash from the lower realm.'

It turned out that the people from the Holy Land of Martialism and the Four Sea Regions were truly living in a lower realm.

"In theory, that is the case. However, there are always exceptions to everything. It is not absolutely true that people capable of surpassing the experts from the Ordinary Realm or the Upper Realm cannot appear in the Lower Realm. After all, our Chu Heavenly Clan originated from this Ancestral Martial Lower Realm."

"In fact, there are excellent individuals entering the Ordinary Realms through Stairways to Heaven from the Lower Realms every year."

"Furthermore, the people from those Lower Realms all know about the matters regarding the Ordinary Realms and the Upper Realms. However, no one in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm knows about them."

"The Ancestral Martial Lower Realm is one of the very few Lower Realms that have already separated from the Outer World. Do you know why that is the case?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

"It's because of our Chu Heavenly Clan. Our Chu Heavenly Clan sealed off the only Stairway to Heaven that could lead to the Ordinary Realms," Chu Feng said.

After all, apart from the Stairway to Heaven in the Eastern Sea Region's Misty Peak, the only other known Stairway to Heaven in the Holy Land of Martialism was the one in the Realm of Gods. However, due to the existence of the blind old man and the others, practically no one from the Holy Land of Martialism would be able to use that Stairway to Heaven.

Thinking of that, Chu Feng felt that it was very unfair. After all, this meant that it was the Chu Heavenly Clan that had eliminated the privilege the people of this world should possess to enter the Outer World.

"That is merely a part of it. However, that is not the main reason why," Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly, "If true experts were to rise, they would not be stopped by others."

“Father, you’re saying that... the cultivators from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm are inferior to those from the other Lower Realms?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is the case,” Chu Xuanyuan sighed, “Other than our Chu Heavenly Clan, the talent of the people from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm is truly lacking. Not to mention that these people are unable to enter the Outer World, even if they were able to enter the Outer World and arrive at the higher Ordinary Realms, they would only be enslaved or bullied by others.”

“Think about it. The well-known figures of this place, if they were to enter the Ordinary Realms... they would become the weakest existences. How lamentable would that be?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded.

“However, that is not the important matter. Do you know why this world is known as the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Why?” Chu Feng asked.

“According to the legends, in the Ancient Era, this place... was the birthplace of martial cultivators.”

“The legendary Fate Primogenitor was born here,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

[1. Fate Primogenitor mentioned in ch 608.]

“In that case, the legend that the Blind Uncle told me about regarding the Ancient Era is true?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng had not forgotten the story that the blind old man told him the first time he had met him at the Eastern Sea Region’s Everlasting Sea of Blood.

“The Ancient Era is too distant. Who knows what things from that time are real and what are not?”

“However, regardless of whether the legends are real or not, it is still extremely lamentable for a Lower Realm to decline to such a state.”

“Thus, you cannot blame others for looking down on the people from this place. Whether or not one is conceited and arrogant is the other’s business. However, if one is weak, one would not be able to blame others for looking down on them.”

"If they did, they would only be deceiving themselves," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"What father says is correct," Chu Feng truly felt what his father said to be reasonable.

It would be the fault of the strong if they looked down on the weak. However, if one was weak, one would not be able to stop oneself from being looked down upon. After all, being weak could not serve as a justification.

"Thus, Feng'er, you must also understand this. Although you might possess outstanding talent in this place, is deemed to be an exceptional genius, and is also truly above all the others, you must absolutely not be conceited."

"The reason for that is because you are living in the weakest Lower Realm among all the Lower Realms. Yet... you should originally belong to the Upper Realm," Chu Xuanyuan reminded Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

"Father, you're saying that the Chu Heavenly Clan is... not located in the Ordinary Realm, but rather the Upper Realm?" Chu Feng asked.

"Not only is the Chu Heavenly Clan located in the Upper Realm, it is also the ruler of an Upper Realm," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Never would I have expected my clan to be so powerful," Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

Even though Chu Feng detested the Chu Heavenly Clan, as he was still a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he still felt pride upon knowing that his Chu Heavenly Clan possessed such a high status.

While there was hatred, he only hated those that had deliberately made things difficult for him and his father. He could not forget about the foundation conquered by his seniors, nor could he forget about the origin of the blood flowing through his body.

Chu Feng could imagine how difficult it had been for the Chu Heavenly Clan to walk out from a Lower Realm and become the rulers of an Upper Realm. That journey upward had most definitely been filled with difficulties. Likely, they had paid a considerable price to do so.

That status might be something that countless seniors had obtained with their blood. As such, he should respect all of it.

“Feng’er, do not limit your vision to only that. While the Upper Realm is very powerful, in the vast Outer Realm, there are countless Upper Realms.”

“Furthermore, above the Upper Realm are many Starfields,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Starfields?” Chu Feng’s eyes shone.

“If the Lower Realms, Ordinary Realms and Upper Realms could all be considered to be stairs in the sky, then a Starfield would be a region of the starry sky.”

“Every Starfield would be ruled by a very strong power. The ambition of the Chu Heavenly Clan is to become the ruler of a Starfield,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Sssss...”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. Even though he had already guessed something of the sort, it was only at that moment that he truly realized how vast the world of martial cultivation was.

Even though Eggy had always mocked Chu Feng for being a frog at the bottom of a well, saying that he had seen but the tip of the iceberg, he had never expected there to be so many martial cultivators in the vast world.

Not to mention a single person, the entire Ancestral Martial Lower Realm would likely only be a chestnut in the vast sea when compared to the Outer World. After all, the sky possessed countless stars.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2133 - What Happened Back Then**

“Next, I’ll tell you about our clan, the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng listened even more earnestly; he was very curious about his clan.

“The Chu Heavenly Clan originated from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. I believe you already knew about this.”

“And now, the Chu Heavenly Clan is a clan that possesses a certain amount of status in the Outer World. I believe you should have realized that too.”

“What I’m going to tell you is about two grand individuals that have appeared in our Chu Heavenly Clan in its history.”

“The first is called Chu Yetianhong.”

“The other is called Chu Hanxian.”

“Chu Yetianhong is an Ancestor-level character to our Chu Heavenly Clan. He is the one that brought our Chu Heavenly Clan out of this Lower Realm to the Ordinary Realm. Furthermore, he is also the one that lead our Chu Heavenly Clan to battle our way into the Upper Realm and seize the status of ruler.”

“However, even though tens of thousands of years have passed since then, the Chu Heavenly Clan still remains an overlord of an Upper Realm. From this, it can be seen how powerful our Ancestor Chu Yetianhong was. His great contribution to our Chu Heavenly Clan is something that no one can compare to.”

“Chu Hanxian is the person with the greatest talent after Chu Yetianhong. His strength has even surpassed that of Chu Yetianhong. He was the hope of the Chu Heavenly Clan to ascend to become a ruler of a Starfield.”

“Unfortunately... Chu Hanxian entered another Starfield. Ever since then, our Chu Heavenly Clan has never received any news from him.”

“Although what happened to Chu Hanxian was regretful, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan all deeply remembered all that he had contributed to our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“That is especially true for you. You should remember him. The reason for that is because Chu Hanxian is my father, your grandfather,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Grandfather?” Chu Feng had thought his father to be someone amazing. Never had he ever expected that his grandfather was even more amazing than he had imagined.

“Father, is there really no news of my grandfather? Has he died?” Chu Feng asked in a deeply concerned manner. Without mentioning how powerful his grandfather was, merely the fact that it was his grandfather caused Chu Feng to deeply hope that his grandfather was alive.

“I searched for him before. However, I did not manage to find anything. Unfortunately, everything seems to indicate that your grandfather is most likely no longer alive.”

“You do not have to concern yourself with matters regarding your grandfather, nor do you need to meddle in them yourself,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart trembled. Even though his father did not say it explicitly, Chu Feng was able to tell that there was most definitely some sort of secret to his grandfather’s disappearance.

“Chu Feng, what you need to know now is that our bloodline is a single bloodline in the Chu Heavenly Clan. Your grandfather only had a single son, me, and I also only have a single son, you.”

“Us father and son should have been enjoying endless glories and honors in the Chu Heavenly Clan. Not mentioning the contributions your grandfather made toward our Chu Heavenly Clan, I am also not a nobody.”

“However... we have been reduced to being punished in this place, this forbidden area that devours one’s cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, exactly what happened back then? Please tell me,” Chu Feng asked again. He truly wanted to know the truth about what happened back then.

“Back then, the one who caused the two of us to be driven out from the Chu Clan and sent to this forbidden area was I, your father.”

“As for all of this, it was caused by a rule of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“When a child is born to our Chu Heavenly Clan, they will undergo a test of talent. That test is very important, because it determines one’s future treatment in the Chu Heavenly Clan, which in turn will decide one’s fate.”

“As you are my son and Chu Hanxian’s grandson, not to mention the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, even people not of the Chu Heavenly Clan paid

special attention to your talent. That test of one's talent could be said to be widespread news known to everyone."

"Furthermore, in order to taunt their might, the Chu Heavenly Clan even invited a vast amount of guests so that they could publicly test your talent before all those people."

"Unfortunately, the result of the test was not satisfying at all," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Father, how was the result of my test?" Chu Feng asked curiously. As this concerned him, Chu Feng was naturally very curious.

"If your test results were ordinary, it would be decent. If your test results were better than ordinary, then it would have been excellent. If your test results were worse than ordinary, it would mean that you were inferior. However... your test result was none of the three," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"None of the three?" Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

"In other words, it meant that you did not possess our Chu Heavenly Clan's bloodline, that you did not possess any talent," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"I... I am actually such trash?" At that moment, Chu Feng was filled with astonishment.

While Chu Feng was deemed an exceptional genius in the Eastern Sea Region and the Holy Land of Martialism, he was actually trash that did not even possess any talent in his own clan.

Chu Feng found it somewhat difficult to accept such a disparity.

"Father, something's amiss. If the result of the test was true, then I should not possess any Inherited Bloodline. But..." Chu Feng tried to explain.

"But you actually do. However, the result of the test from that time was precisely like that. It is also true that... you did not possess our Chu Heavenly Clan's Inherited Bloodline at that time."

"In other words, you can consider it as being evidence of your test from back then being tampered with by someone. At the very least, I am firmly certain that your test was tampered with."



“At that time, I demanded that we test you again. Merely...” Chu Xuanyuan suddenly stopped and sighed.

“Father, what happened?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

“Back then, although your grandfather was renowned for his ability in the Upper Realm, he had also created many enemies. There were also enemies present that day. Seeing that you did not possess a heaven-defying Inherited Bloodline, some among them started to publicly insult you.”

“You are my son, thus, how could I possibly tolerate you being insulted by others? Thus... your father ended up killing all those that dared belittle you.”

“Our enemies were enraged by my actions, and demanded an explanation for my actions. Furthermore, it just so happened that there were many people who disliked me in the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“While being attacked by others doesn’t matter, our fellow clansmen from the Chu Heavenly Clan actually also started to attack me. That was the most frightening aspect.”

“Thus, in the end... we father and son were banished from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Strictly speaking, we father and son cannot be considered to be members of the Chu Heavenly Clan now,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a wry smile.

“We... are people that have been banished from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng revealed a shocked expression.

Earlier, he had been proud to be a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Never would he expect that he was already no longer a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly. Then, he pointed at Chu Feng’s forehead and lightly poked at it. Chu Feng felt that his forehead became somewhat warm.

Then, Chu Xuanyuan took out a mirror and handed it to Chu Feng. He said, “Feng’er, remember this symbol. This is the humiliation that the Chu Heavenly Clan, our clan, have inflicted upon us.”

Upon seeing the mirror, Chu Feng's heart immediately tightened. His expression took a huge change. Then, overflowing amount of indescribable anger surged out from his heart.

On his forehead was a character. That word seemed to be a brand. The character read 'trash.' [2. Chinese characters → word.]

"We father and son are people that have been expelled from our clan," As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, his forehead started to shine. Then, the character 'trash' also appeared on his forehead.

"That is the brand that the Chu Heavenly Clan placed on us father and son. That branding is on our souls. It is impossible to be erased."

"Even if that brand is capable of being erased, the humiliation that the Chu Heavenly Clan inflicted upon us is ineradicable," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Damn it."

Seeing the character 'trash' on Chu Xuanyuan's forehead, the anger in Chu Feng's heart surged by many times over. He became much more furious than when he saw the character 'trash' on his own forehead.

At the same time, Chu Feng's heart felt much more complicated.

Back then, his father had unleashed a massacre just because someone insulted him. Although this moved Chu Feng, this also caused Chu Feng to feel greater self-blame.

There was no need to mention how much his father loved him. However, if his talent wasn't so weak, if his weakness hadn't been taken advantage of by others, they would not have ended up in their current state.

At that moment, Chu Feng truly realized that what the Old Ape said back then was actually true. His father had indeed been deprived of his honor by him.

Everything was caused by him.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

**Chapter 2134 - Heavenly Lightning Bloodline**

“Actually, we father and son were already expelled. It would’ve been fine should we have left the Chu Heavenly Clan. However... due to our clansmen attacking us, we ended up losing even our liberty, and ended up being put under house arrest.”

“It would be one thing if we were to be imprisoned in some other place. However, of all the places, they decided to imprison us here. This place... is our Chu Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area. In this place... when speaking of it pleasantly, we are imprisoned here. However, they are actually planning to dispose of us father and son,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Damn it! The people from the Chu Clan all deserve to die!” After knowing the truth, Chu Feng gnashed his teeth in anger. His killing intent was overflowing. At that moment, Chu Feng truly had an urge to eliminate everyone from the Chu Clan.

“Very well, it’s right to be furious. If you did not have staunchness and that temperament, you would not be a man, much less my, Chu Xuanyuan’s son, and Chu Hanxian’s grandson.”

“Feng’er, you must remember this humiliation. This humiliation was inflicted upon us by the Chu Clan. If we wish to erase this humiliation, we can only do it ourselves.”

“Back then, if you possessed outstanding talent, then even if I were to openly massacre others, our Chu Clan’s Clan Chief would consider the future, and not treat us father and son like this.”

“You must know that if I hadn’t sent you out back then, then, with the constitution of your body from back then, you would’ve definitely died in this forbidden area,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, what must I do?” Chu Feng asked.

“You must naturally prove yourself. You must prove yourself to the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan, to all the people in the world, and to yourself that you, Chu Feng, possess talent that is not inferior to anyone.”

“However, before that, you must understand your Inherited Bloodline,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Bloodline?” Hearing the word ‘bloodline,’ Chu Feng felt his blood start to flare up uncontrollably.

His Inherited Bloodline was something that Chu Feng had wanted to understand for a very long time. And now... he was finally going to obtain an understanding of it.

“Our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Inherited Bloodline is known as the Heavenly Bloodline. The Heavenly Bloodline is also known as the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline.”

“The Heavenly Lightning Bloodline is composed of nine enormous lightning beasts. It is a noble bloodline far superior to Imperial Bloodlines.”

“Possessors of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline all possess a common trait. That is, from birth, they are destined to possess overwhelming talent superior to ordinary people.”

“Feng’er, I believe that you have already experienced that first-hand. The current you... as long as you possess sufficient cultivation resources, you will be able to increase your cultivation. Bottlenecks? You practically never experience any bottlenecks. Even if you are to experience any, you will soon break through them. Is what I said correct?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That is indeed the case,” Chu Feng nodded repeatedly.

“The possessors of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline are destined to surpass ordinary people. However, they are not omnipotent either. If you are to continue like this, it would not be hard for you to become a Half Martial Ancestor. However, it is practically impossible for you to become a Martial Ancestor,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Chu Feng’s eyes grew large. With a serious expression on his face, he asked, “Why?” After all, this matter concerned his future.

“That is the weakness of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. If one is to continue to use that talent nonstop, one’s future accomplishments are destined to be limited,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, is there a way to fix that?” Chu Feng asked.

“Feng’er, don’t worry. For our Chu Heavenly Clan to possess our current level of accomplishments, we most definitely possess a way to resolve that.”

“It is actually very simple. That is, we are to train in a special sort of mysterious technique. That sort of mysterious technique is capable of fusing with the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. After training in that sort of mysterious technique, we will lose the overwhelming talent and meet bottlenecks with each breakthrough in cultivation. Only through using our own comprehension will we be able to make a break through the bottlenecks.”

“Furthermore, during the crucial moments of our breakthroughs, the mysterious technique will let out its distinct power and bring forth a calamity.”

“Only those that manage to withstand the calamity will be able to truly reach a breakthrough.”

“Precisely because of the special aspects of these mysterious techniques, they are collectively known as ‘Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques.’”

“Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques?” Chu Feng’s heart trembled.

“By self-punishing, it meant punishing oneself for not using one’s comprehension to obtain a cultivation that others obtained through painstaking effort,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques; never would I have imagined that our Inherited Bloodline would be this complicated,” Chu Feng only knew that his Inherited Bloodline was very powerful. However, he did not expect for it to possess so many characteristics.

Today, he felt as if he had greatly broadened his horizons, and obtained a whole new understanding of his Inherited Bloodline.

“There are no free lunches in this world. What one pays and what one obtains are directly proportional to one another. To try to obtain harvests without paying anything is simply a pipe dream.”

“Thus, even for the Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques, there are different levels to them. According to the difference in level, one’s future accomplishments will also be destined to be different.”

“From weak to strong, the Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques are respectively the Mortal Punishment, Earthen Punishment and Heaven Punishment.”

“The Mortal Punishment is the most common type of Self-punishing Mysterious Technique. With each breakthrough in cultivation, the mysterious technique will automatically draw out the enormous lightning beasts from one’s Heavenly Lightning Bloodline to bombard one’s body,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“It’s actually having the enormous lightning beasts attack oneself?” Chu Feng was extremely astonished. After all, he knew how powerful those enormous lightning beasts were.

He had rejoiced the entire time that those enormous lightning beasts were his bloodline, and not his opponents. However, if he were to train in that Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique, wouldn’t it be equivalent to having the frightening enormous lightning beasts become his opponents?

Merely thinking about it caused Chu Feng’s hair to stand on end.

“The Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique is the most ordinary. The majority of those who possess Heavenly Bloodlines in the Outer World all train in the Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“Above Mortal Punishment is Earthen Punishment.”

“Compared to those who train in Mortal Punishment Mysterious Techniques, those who train in Earthen Punishment Mysterious Techniques will be met with more difficult bottlenecks and more powerful calamities. At that time, one would no longer just be punished by one’s Inherited Bloodline. Instead... the Earthen Punishment Mysterious Technique will give rise to Divine Lightnings from the earth to strike your body.”

“No matter how powerful the enormous lightning beasts might be, it remains that they belong to you. Even if they are to punish you, they will not try to kill you. However, the Divine Lightnings from the earth are foreign to you. They will show no quarter when attacking you.”

“Precisely because of that, only those with superb talent and possessing a certain amount of confidence and courage dare to train in the Earthen Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“As for the Heaven Punishment that is above the Earthen Punishment, it is even more dreadful. Not only are the bottlenecks so difficult that it is akin to scaling the heavens, the Divine Lightnings from the depths of the Outer World are also not something that the Divine Lightnings from the earth could compare with.”

“Not to mention the cultivators themselves, when Divine Lightning strikes, everything around the cultivator will be destroyed.”

“Thus... very few people dare to cultivate the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. Merely by hearing it, he was able to tell how frightening the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique was.

“Furthermore, due to the fact that the three Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques have different levels, they possess different cultivation levels at which they can be trained.”

“For Mortal Punishment, one would be able to practice it in the Martial King realm.”

“For Earthen Punishment, the Half Martial Emperor realm.”

“For Heaven Punishment, the Martial Emperor realm,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Father, I am already a rank seven Martial Emperor now. I can no longer train in Mortal Punishment or Earthen Punishment. Could it be... that father did not mention this matter to me for so long because you’ve already made preparations beforehand to have me train in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique?” While Chu Feng appeared to be calm, cold sweat had long since covered his brow.

Even though his father had not been with him the entire time, he was able to tell that his father had been observing him from the shadows the entire time. In other words, his father’s decision to let him be by himself was a kind of nurture.

His father had never given up on him. He had merely been nurturing him, nurturing his ability to survive with an even stricter method.

That said, his father still wished for him to obtain good accomplishments. For his father to mention these things to him now... meant that his father had already thought of the Self-punishing Mysterious Technique that he should practice--the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

He truly never expected for his father to be this ruthless toward him, for his father to actually plan to have him train in the most difficult Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Although Chu Feng also wished to obtain better accomplishments, when he thought about it from a different angle, how could his father not be afraid that he would be struck to death by the Divine Lightning?

However, Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly at Chu Feng's question.

Then, he said, "No, what you will be training is not the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique."

"Instead, it's Divine Punishment!!!"

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2135 - Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique**

"Divine Punishment?"

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart immediately shivered.

Merely by listening to the name, Chu Feng was able to tell how frightening it would be.

"By Divine Punishment, it means that it is a Self-punishing Mysterious Technique above Heaven Punishment."

"If Mortal Punishment draws upon the lightnings from one's bloodline, Earthen Punishment from the earth and Heaven Punishment from the sky..."

"Then, Divine Punishment will no longer only be drawing upon lightning at all. Instead, a Divine Tribulation will descend upon you."



“The descent of a Divine Tribulation will cause destruction to both heaven and the earth. It is a sort of power that surpasses one’s ability to endure.”

“However, if you wish to reach a breakthrough, you must withstand that sort of power. You will only be given two choices, success or failure. Furthermore, if you are to fail... not even your soul will remain.”

“If the other Self-punishment Mysterious Techniques unleash punishments that are still within one’s ability to endure.”

“Then, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique will unleash punishments that surpass one’s ability to endure.”

“Thus, those that train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques will all obtain a true transformation with every breakthrough,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Father, has there been anyone that has successfully practiced such a powerful Self-punishment Mysterious Technique before?” Chu Feng asked in a serious manner.

“The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is not something that just anyone can attempt. As far as I know... only two people have ever trained in it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Who are they?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

“Those two people...”

“One is your grandfather, Chu Hanxian.”

“As for the the other, it is I, your father, Chu Xuanyuan,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ah,” Chu Feng was startled upon hearing those words. Originally, he had thought about finding an excuse to refuse. However, upon hearing those words, he was unable to find any excuse to refuse.

Both his grandfather and father had trained in that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Furthermore, they had both succeeded. If he were to choose to cower at this point, he would truly be an utter disappointment.

Not to mention how others would view him, he himself would also feel that he had disgraced the honor and reputation of his grandfather and his father.

Furthermore, after knowing that his father and grandfather had both trained in that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, Chu Feng also started to feel interest toward the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique from the bottom of his heart.

“Feng’er, back then, your grandfather did not force me to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. As such, I will also not force you.”

“The reason I mention this to you right now is so that you are given the opportunity to choose. Heaven Punishment and Divine Punishment, you decide which one you want to train,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Divine Punishment,” Chu Feng said without the slightest hesitation. He had long since made the decision in his heart.

“Why? Are you not afraid of death?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“I am. I don’t think there’s anyone that would not fear death,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, why did you still insist on choosing the Divine Punishment?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Father, I am not arrogant, conceited or acting recklessly. I merely wish to obtain better achievements. I wish to prove myself.”

“The path of martial cultivation is a double-edged sword to begin with. If one wishes to reach a greater distance, one will have to undergo greater danger.”

“Although the path that I plan to take is a dangerous path, I am not the first one to take this path. Before me, my grandfather and my father have already walked that path. Thus, by comparison... the path is already much safer now that it has come to me.”

“At the very least, I know how to walk the path. Thus... there is no reason for me to not choose the Divine Punishment,” Chu Feng said.

“Well said. As expected from my son,” At that moment, a smile filled Chu Xuanyuan’s face.

“Feng’er, your way of thinking is correct. Although the Divine Punishment is very dangerous, one will also be able to obtain a greater harvest from it.”

“The wielders of Heavenly Lightning Bloodlines all possess identical characteristics. I believe you’ve also seen that brat from the Ying Heavenly Clan. He possessed all the power that you possess right now. For example, there is the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings that can increase one’s cultivation. Then, there’s the heaven-defying battle power.”

“However, the power of Heavenly Lightning Bloodlines will be transformed in the Martial Ancestor realm. After reaching the Martial Ancestor realm, the nine Heavenly Lightning will fuse into one. This is commonly referred to as the Nine Lightnings Fusion.

“After the Nine Lightnings Fusion, one will be able to form a Lightning Mark. Those that trained in Mortal Punishment Mysterious Techniques will form a Mortal Mark. Earthen Punishment Mysterious Techniques will form an Earthen Mark, and Heaven Punishment Divine Techniques will form a Heaven Mark.”

“As for Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques, it will form a Divine Mark.”

“The different sorts of Lightning Marks will show others how powerful the possessor of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline is, as well as what sort of Self-punishment Mysterious Technique they trained in.”

“However, that is not the important aspect. Most importantly, the more powerful one’s Lightning Mark, the stronger the power it will bring to its master. Their future accomplishments will also be greater.”

“In other words, one’s Lightning Mark symbolizes one’s status and strength. When you form a Divine Mark, very few people will dare to disrespect you.”

“The reason for that is because not everyone possesses the courage to train in Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques, nor are they something that just anyone can practice, or something that one can learn just because one wishes to learn it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand.” After hearing of the profoundness of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, Chu Feng had become extremely impatient to know exactly what the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was like.

“Feng’er, have you really made your decision?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

"I've decided. I am going to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique," Chu Feng said.

"Since that's the case, I, your father will teach you the cultivation method for the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique," As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he placed his finger onto Chu Feng's forehead.

"There will be a slight pain. You'll have to bear with it," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded.

"Buzz~~~"

Suddenly, light shone on Chu Xuanyuan's finger. Then, a boundless power entered Chu Feng's head from Chu Xuanyuan's finger.

"Wuu~~~"

At that moment, Chu Feng immediately felt a sort of unbearable pain entering his head. It was a sensation where he felt as if his head was about to explode.

However, that was only the beginning. The pain in his head soon spread through his entire body.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that the pain didn't seem to be as simple as entering his body. Instead, it seemed more like it was trying to fuse with his soul and his bloodline. From today on, it would be destined to live and die together with him by becoming part of him.

Finally, everything stopped. Chu Feng was covered with sweat and gasping for breath. Even though the pain had passed, Chu Feng still felt lingering fears.

"Father, is that the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?" Chu Feng asked Chu Xuanyuan.

He discovered that the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was different from all the mysterious techniques that he had trained in before. For other mysterious techniques, one would merely need to follow a designated cultivation path with one's martial power. With that, one would be able to stabilize one's cultivation and increase one's strength.

However, the so-called Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was completely different. It was a method that completely fused with one's soul.

In other words, Chu Feng had yet to attempt to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. However, if he were to train in it, he felt that his Inherited Bloodline would definitely become completely different.

"That is the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. How are you feeling?" Chu Xuanyuan asked with a smile.

"This feeling is extremely good. I feel that my Inherited Bloodline, my soul and even my physical body were all promoted."

"I truly wish to experience the true charm of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique right now," Chu Feng said.

What Chu Feng said was the truth. He was truly impatient to completely grasp the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. He wanted to further increase the strength of his Inherited Bloodline.

"Since you wish to experience the charm of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, go ahead and train in it," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Father, doesn't this Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique require one to become a Half Martial Ancestor to train?" Chu Feng asked in astonishment.

Although the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique had fused with Chu Feng's soul and bloodline, it had yet to completely fuse with Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was able to sense that it was not up to him to decide if the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique fused with him. Instead, it was decided by his cultivation.

With Chu Feng's current cultivation, it was impossible for him to completely fuse the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique with his bloodline. However, should he reach the Half Martial Ancestor level of cultivation, even if he were then to be against it, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique would automatically fuse with his body. At that time, he would not be able to stop it even if he wanted to.

"Indeed, you need to become a Half Martial Ancestor," Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, my cultivation is still insufficient,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s simple. I, your father, will help you set foot into the Half Martial Ancestor realm right away,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2136 - Rank One Half Martial Ancestor**

As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he flipped his palm. Then, a jadeite-like gem appeared on his palm.

“Refine this, and you’ll be able to directly become a Half Martial Ancestor,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, this gem...” Chu Feng received the gem. Excitement filled his heart.

Over the years, he had refined countless Natural Oddities and cultivation resources. However, this was his first time seeing something that contained such a dense amount of Natural Energy.

Truth be told, with Chu Feng’s current cultivation, it would most likely be impossible for him to find any cultivation resources appropriate for him in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, the gem that Chu Xuanyuan had just handed him was actually capable of helping Chu Feng reach rank one Half Martial Ancestor directly from rank seven Martial Emperor. To be able to reach three breakthroughs at once was something that Chu Feng had not even dared to imagine before.

“All these years, your father has never helped you with your cultivation. The reason why I did that is because I wanted you to be able to personally experience things for yourself so that you can temper your heart.”

“This time around, you can consider this compensation from your father.,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a light smile.

“Thank you father,” Chu Feng stood up and courteously bowed.

“Didn’t I say that there’s no need to be so overly courteous, as we are father and son? Go ahead and refine it.”

Chu Feng tossed the gem he held in his hand, opened his mouth and bit onto the gem. Then, he sat down in a cross-legged position and began to refine the gem.

Soon, surging Natural Energies began to flow through Chu Feng's body. They began to pour into Chu Feng's dantian nonstop; they, were all being refined by Chu Feng's Divine Lightnings.

Under such circumstances, Chu Feng's cultivation began to increase nonstop. Rank eight Martial Emperor, rank nine Martial Emperor... n--012e1**b**1n

At the moment when a total of eight lightnings were surging out from Chu Feng's body before entering his body again, Chu Feng's cultivation reached rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

Everything was as Chu Xuanyuan had said. The Natural Energies contained in that gem were truly capable of allowing Chu Feng to directly reach rank one Half Martial Ancestor from rank seven Martial Emperor.

Without using his Thunder Armor or Thunder Wings, or any other method to increase his cultivation, Chu Feng currently gave off the aura of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. He had become an actual Half Martial Ancestor-level expert in one go.

Furthermore, it was not only Chu Feng's cultivation that had increased to rank one Half Martial Ancestor. He had also obtained another level of heaven-defying battle power. In other words, his heaven-defying battle power was now capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his hand. Immediately, the surrounding Ancestral-level martial power surged forth and entered Chu Feng's body, waiting to be used by him.

"How do you feel?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

"I am finally able to grasp Ancestral-level martial power. As expected from Half Martial Ancestor, they are truly incomparable to Martial Emperors."

“Furthermore, my battle power is currently capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation. I am not just only a bit stronger than before. This sort of sensation is truly fabulous,” Chu Feng said excitedly.

“Half Martial Ancestors are naturally more powerful than Martial Emperors. As for your heaven-defying battle power, while it is correct to say that it is capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation, it would be more reasonable to say that it is capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation?” Chu Feng was puzzled.

“Those capable of becoming Martial Emperors all possess heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Not to mention the Upper Realm, even in the Ordinary Realm, Martial Emperors are countless.”

“In the Outer World, the Martial Emperor realm is a dividing line. Only those capable of becoming Martial Emperors are considered to be qualified to be considered martial cultivators. All those that fail to step into Martial Emperor realm are known to be extremely inferior in the Outer World. They are people that are looked upon with disdain by others.”

“As for Martial Emperors, since they all possess at least a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, your heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation is only capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation when compared to even the most ordinary Martial Emperors.”

“Furthermore, the opponents that you will face in the future will definitely not be Martial Emperors or those below them. They will all be people with cultivations surpassing Martial Emperor. Thus, from this point on, you must remember this. Even if your opponent is only ordinary, your dominance would only be a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Never would I have expected that the Martial Emperors that were capable of covering the sky with their hands in the Holy Land of Martialism are only people that have just become qualified as martial cultivators in the Outer Realm.”



After hearing his father's words, Chu Feng came to realize even more why the Holy Land of Martialism, the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, was the weakest among the countless Lower Realms. It turned out that the cultivators there were utterly inferior when compared to cultivators in the vast Outer World.

"Feng'er, you are still young. After you enter the Outer World, you will discover that... even though you possess three additional levels of heaven-defying battle power when compared to ordinary Half Martial Ancestors, you are not the strongest among those of your generation."

"Not only are there many Heavenly Clans in the Outer World, there are also, in addition to the humans that possess Heavenly Bloodlines, monstrous beasts that possess powerful Inherited Bloodlines."

"Furthermore, when you reach the Outer World, you will discover that the actual Divine Bodies there are also extremely powerful," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Could it be that Divine Bodies in the Outer World are so powerful that they can contend against our Heavenly Bloodlines?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng had encountered many Divine Bodies in the Holy Land of Martialism. Although they were very powerful, Chu Feng only felt them to be powers on par with Imperial Bloodlines. When compared to his Inherited Bloodline, they were much inferior. In fact, they were simply not on the same level.

"That differs from individual to individual. The weak Divine Bodies would be the same as the ones you met here. They are only comparable to Imperial Bloodlines. In fact, some of them are inferior to even Imperial Bloodlines."

"However, by the same account, there are Divine Bodies that are extremely powerful. Not to mention those that are capable of contending against our Heavenly Bloodline, some Divine Bodies have grasped powers that surpass even ordinary wielders of Heavenly Bloodlines."

"In the Outer World, there are a relatively large amount of such Divine Bodies," Chu Xuanyuan said.

Suddenly, Chu Feng took a long sigh.

"Feng'er, what's wrong?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Having lived in this world for so long, although I always knew how small and ignorant I was every time I looked to the vast starry sky, when the truth is verified, when it is determined that I am truly small and ignorant, that sensation is truly unpleasant,” Chu Feng said with a wry smile.

He was able to realize that while he remained an exceptional genius in this place, he would become an ordinary person upon entering the Outer World.

Even though he had a Heavenly Bloodline, there were many people that could contend against him in the Outer World.

In fact, there were many people much more powerful than him. It would be extremely difficult for him to become the strongest among the younger generation.

What awaited him was destined to be a challenging journey.

“Feng’er, there is also a difference between the strengths of one’s Heavenly Bloodline. As the Self-punishment Mysterious Technique that you trained in is the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, you will obtain a Divine Mark when you become a Martial Ancestor and obtain the Nine Lightnings Fusion.”

“At that time, even in the Outer World, you will still be a brilliant nova.”

“Merely... even though you are only nine levels of cultivation away from becoming a Martial Ancestor, it is an extremely difficult cultivation journey.”

As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he took out another twenty gems that contained a dense amount of Natural Energy. He tossed those gems to Chu Feng and said, “Refine all of them at once.”

“Yes,” Chu Feng did not hesitate and directly refined all twenty gems completely. However... he did not manage to successfully reach a single breakthrough. His cultivation... remained that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

He was able to sense that the dense amount of Natural Energies were gathered in his dantian. Originally, those Natural Energies would have been enough for him to reach a breakthrough.

Merely, there was an invisible wall separating the Natural Energies from his Inherited Bloodline. If that wall was not broken through, his Inherited Bloodline

would not be able to refine the boundless Natural Energies. In turn, Chu Feng would not be able to reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that Natural Energies no longer remained the most crucial aspect to him reaching a breakthrough in cultivation.

From this point forward, his cultivation journey would become completely different.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2137 - A Mission**

“The Natural Energies contained in your dantian right now are sufficient enough for you to reach rank three Half Martial Ancestor.”

“However, you are unable to even reach rank two Half Martial Ancestor. And that is you... being bottlenecked. You will need to rely on your own comprehension of the way of martial cultivation and think of a way to use your Inherited Bloodline to break through that bottleneck.”

“However, after you reach a breakthrough, you will not be able to directly reach a breakthrough in cultivation like you did before.”

“You will bring forth the arrival of a catastrophe, Divine Lightnings capable of causing massive destruction will descend from the sky to strike at your body.”

“Only by withstanding them will you be able to truly reach a breakthrough. The reason for that is because... you have successfully learned the highest level Self-punishing Mysterious Technique -- the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique!!!”

“That said, there is also an extremely important matter that I must remind you of. Although it will be much more difficult for you to reach a breakthrough in cultivation after learning the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, the Natural Energies you need to reach a breakthrough in cultivation will continue to be more and more frightening.”

“I will not continue to provide you with cultivation resources. I have already given you all that I can. You must go and search, scramble for and seize the remaining cultivation resources yourself.”

“That can be considered the special sort of nurturing method of our family. That is also what your grandfather had me do back then,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand. I will absolutely not disappoint you,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng knew very well that while the cultivation path for the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique would be very difficult, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was most definitely a rare treasure. He was only able to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique because of his father.

This could be considered a blessing, a blessing from his father.

However, more than that, it was a sort of expectation, an expectation that his father had toward him.

What Chu Feng must do was not disappoint the expectations his father held toward him. He planned to obtain his father’s acknowledgement with the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. At the same time, he must obtain acknowledgement from everyone else.

However, if he truly wished to be acknowledged, he couldn’t rely on his father alone. Thus, Chu Feng had already made the decision that he would work hard by himself to make each and every following breakthrough.

“Very well. You are worthy of being my, Chu Xuanyuan’s, son,” Seeing that Chu Feng did not cower in the slightest when faced with such a difficult path for cultivation, Chu Xuanyuan smiled with joy and pride.

“I already know that you plan to go to the Outer World. Thus, there are some things that I must tell you first.”

“While the Chu Heavenly Clan are heartless toward us father and son, we father and son cannot be disloyal to the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Everything cannot be generalized. While there were indeed people from the Chu Clan that secretly attacked us father and son, it does not mean that all the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan wish to bring harm upon us.”

“In fact, when the Chu Clan’s Clan Chief decided to imprison us father and son in the Chu Clan’s forbidden area, there were many people in the Chu Clan that pleaded for us.”

“Thus... upon entering the Outer World, should you encounter people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, it would be best that you not treat them with hostility.”

“However... if there are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that wish to cause you harm, you must not be benevolent toward them either,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, please rest assured, I understand your intentions. What I am going to do is not to take revenge against the Chu Heavenly Clan. Instead, I am going to make them realize that their decision back then was mistaken.”

“However, if there are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that wish to cause me harm, I will absolutely not be lenient toward them. Regardless of whether they might be people that might attack me in the future, or people that secretly attacked father before, I will definitely not spare any of them,” Chu Feng said earnestly. As he spoke those words, a faint coldness flashed through his eyes.

“Very good. To be able to distinguish between gratitude and grudges, that is what my, Chu Xuanyuan’s, son should be like.”

Seeing Chu Feng’s reaction, Chu Xuanyuan nodded his head in satisfaction. Then, he said, “After you exit this place, the place that you will arrive in will not be the Upper Realm where our Chu Heavenly Clan is located. Instead, it will be the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is a place that all of the people from the Lower Realms under the administration of our Chu Heavenly Clan must reach.”

“Thus, every year, there will always be countless people from the Lower Realms entering the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to start tempering themselves anew.”

“The implication behind the name Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm precisely means to refine and temper oneself hundreds and thousands of times over. If one cannot pass through the trials in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, one will not be able to enter the Upper Realm, and will end

up staying in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for the rest of their lives. At the very most, they will be able to enter the other Ordinary Realms. However, even if they do, they will remain unable to enter the Upper Realm without sufficient qualifications.”

“Precisely because of that, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm has set up a Hundred Refinements Stage. The Hundred Refinements Stage is the place that practically all the people entering from the Lower Realms must reach.”

“The Hundred Refinements Stage is normally closed, and will only be open once every year. In other words, all the people from the Lower Realm that reach the Hundred Refinements Stage within that year will end up cultivating together in the Hundred Refinements Stage.”

“After the gate of the Hundred Refinements Stage is opened, the people from the Lower Realm will be ranked according to their strength.”

“Every year, the various powers outside of the Hundred Refinement Ordinary Realm will wait outside of the Hundred Refinements Stage for that ranking.”

“They will choose their disciples according to that ranking list. Without a doubt, the people from the Lower Realm with a higher ranking will be more highly sought after.”

“If you are to directly enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm through the Stairway to Heaven from the Realm of Gods, you will be able to directly reach the Hundred Refinements Stage.”

“However, I do not suggest that you go and strive for a high place on the ranking. After all, you do not belong to the Lower Realm. Instead, you belong to the Upper Realm. Thus, there is no significance in you competing with a bunch of people from the Lower Realm.”

“Thus, I’m going to give you this,” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he hand a world spirit key to Chu Feng.

“Father, this is?” Chu Feng asked.

“This world spirit key is capable of helping you create an opening through the spirit formation around the Hundred Refinements Stage. After entering the Hundred Refinements Stage, you do not have to stay there. Using this key,

you can leave that place and experience the outside world,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Got it,” Chu Feng carefully put the key away. However, he suddenly thought of something, and asked, “Then, what about the Eastern Sea Region’s Stairway to Heaven?”

“The Eastern Sea Region also possesses a Stairway to Heaven?” Chu Xuanyuan asked in astonishment. He evidently did not know about that.

“There is indeed one in the Eastern Sea Region,” Chu Feng said.

“The track of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm’s Stairway to Heaven’s teleportation has already been changed. Unless the Stairway to Heaven that you mentioned was set up by an extremely powerful person, unless that Stairway to Heaven was able to conceal itself from everything, it would still lead to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, in that case, can you give me another world spirit key? I have a friend here. If she is to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and decide to not stay in the Hundred Refinements Stage, I hope...”

“That’s no issue,” Before Chu Feng could finish, Chu Xuanyuan took out another world spirit key and handed it to Chu Feng.

“Thank you father,” Chu Feng received the world spirit key and expressed his thanks emotionally.

As a world spiritist, Chu Feng was able to tell how powerful that world spirit key was merely by looking at it. If his father had not handed him a world spirit key, he would likely also be unable to leave the Hundred Refinements Stage.

As for the second world spirit key, he had requested it for Xian Miaomiao.

“Feng’er, although the Ordinary Realm cannot compare to the Upper Realm, it is still definitely not something that the Lower Realm can compare with.”

“Entering the Ordinary Realm from the Lower Realm means entering a new world. Before you obtain a certain amount of strength, it would be best that you not provoke powers that are extremely strong.”

“Among them, you must pay attention to a power called the Infant Soul Sect. It is the most dangerous among all the powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. When you encounter them, you must be extra careful. You absolutely cannot afford to be careless toward them,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Infant Soul Sect?” Chu Feng felt a burst of cold upon hearing that name. He felt that that sect was most definitely not a righteous sect. Thus, Chu Feng said, “Father, please rest assured. I will definitely be careful.”

“Mn,” Chu Xuanyuan nodded. Then, he said, “Although you will have to be low-key after entering the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, father will still hand you a mission.”

“What is the mission? Father, please tell me,” Chu Feng said.

“Eliminate the Infant Soul Sect,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ahh?!!!” Chu Feng was immediately stunned by those words.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2138 - A Request**

“Why do you want me to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect? Could it be that there are grudges between you and the Infant Soul Sect, father?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng was surprised. He did not expect that his father would want him to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect after warning him about how dangerous it was.

However, he felt that his father most definitely possessed a reason to give him such a task. He felt that the most likely reason would be that the Infant Soul Sect was his father’s enemy.

“There are no grudges between the Infant Soul Sect and me. Merely, the Infant Soul Sect is an evil power. Do you know why they are called the Infant Soul Sect?”

“The reason for that is because everyone in the Infant Soul Sect uses the souls of newly born infants as cultivation resources. The longer the Infant Soul Sect continues to exist, the more innocent infants will die by their hands. Thus, the Infant Soul Sect should be eliminated,” Chu Xuanyuan said.



"They truly deserve to die," Chu Feng detested those that bullied the old, weak, sick or disabled the most. Furthermore... the Infant Soul Sect was a power composed of people that harmed innocent infants.

Thinking about it, lives that have just been born to this world, before they could experience the wonders of this world, before they could even get to know this world, ended up being killed by those fiends. Oh how cruel the people from the Infant Soul Sect must be.

"While the Infant Soul Sect should be eliminated, there are a lot of powers that use those sorts of malicious techniques to cultivate. It is extremely difficult to eliminate all of them."

"Thus, to help the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm eliminate evil is merely one of the reasons why I want you to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. Apart from that, there's another reason that's the most important," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Father, please continue," Chu Feng said earnestly.

"In order to nurture outstanding members of the younger generation, the Chu Heavenly Clan has also used some extreme measures. That is, they will have their younger generation accept and complete missions."

"As far as I know, there are many missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"Thus, even though the Chu Heavenly Clan exists in the Upper Realm, there are also people from the Chu Heavenly Clan in the Ordinary Realms. Furthermore, they are mostly members of the younger generation."

"Furthermore, there is a rule in the Chu Heavenly Clan. As long as the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation are daring enough to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and carry out missions there, they will no longer be protected by the Chu Heavenly Clan. Even if they should encounter fatal dangers, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan will not interfere."

"In other words, when in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the life and death of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation will only be their own problem."

“With all that said, one of the highest level missions, one that is the most difficult, is to eliminate the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Infant Soul Sect.”

“Merely, so far, none of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation have been able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. On the contrary, many of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s elites from the younger generation were killed by the Infant Soul Sect.”

“As time passed, the Infant Soul Sect no longer feared the Chu Heavenly Clan. After all... they remained safe even after killing so many of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s geniuses,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“It is the Chu Heavenly Clan that has deliberately ignored the Infant Soul Sect? They have done so... all for the sake of nurturing their younger generation?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’re right. The Infant Soul Sect could be said to be a power that has done all sorts of evil in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, if the Chu Heavenly Clan wishes to eliminate them, it would be an effortless task for them.”

“The reason they have not eliminated the Infant Soul Sect and instead tasked their younger generation with eliminating the Infant Soul Sect repeatedly, is precisely because they hoped that there would be a younger generation from the Chu Heavenly Clan that could eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.”

“Ever since the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect appeared, there has not been a single member of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation capable of completing that mission,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand your intention,” Chu Feng said. He truly understood.

Eliminating the Infant Soul Sect was a mission that none of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation was capable of accomplishing.

If Chu Feng was able to accomplish it, it would mean that he would’ve given the Chu Heavenly Clan a ruthless slap to the face. After all, he was deemed to be trash that did not possess the Heavenly Bloodline of the Chu Heavenly Clan; he was someone that had been stripped of his status as a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“There is an age requirement for eliminating the Infant Soul Sect. Members of the Chu Clan older than forty are not allowed to accept that mission. Feng’er, your age is still well within the requirement. After all, you are not even thirty years old.”

“However, you do not have to accept that mission from the Chu Heavenly Clan. It would do if you were to just eliminate the Infant Soul Sect directly. After all, you are nominally no longer a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“That said, to the Chu Heavenly Clan, regardless of who it is that did it, it would be a disgrace for the Chu Heavenly Clan as long as it is a member of the younger generation younger than forty years old that eliminates the Infant Soul Sect,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Sure enough, what he had in mind was exactly what Chu Feng was thinking. He planned to humiliate the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Although he did not plan to kill people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Xuanyuan wanted the Chu Heavenly Clan to know that their decision back then was a mistake.

“That said, Feng’er, I have a matter that I must warn you about. While I sent someone to secretly protect you in this place, once you enter the Outer World, I will absolutely not act to help you. You must rely on yourself for everything,” Chu Xuanyuan warned Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

“I understand. I will absolutely not do anything reckless. Although the actions of the Infant Soul Sect are truly infuriating to the heart, I will definitely not make them an enemy before I possess sufficient strength to take them on,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, in that case, go on ahead to the Outer World. I have already taken Zi Ling as my disciple. When it is time, I will have her assist you in the Outer World,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, you’ve truly taken Zi Ling as your disciple?” Chu Feng was overjoyed.

Chu Feng did not know how powerful his father was. However, he was able to guess that his father must be extremely powerful.

If Zi Ling truly became his father's disciple, Zi Ling's strength would definitely advance by leaps and bounds. To both Chu Feng and Zi Ling, that would be something good.

"Why would I lie to you about something like that? Zi Ling's foundations are pretty decent. If she is properly nurtured, she will be able to attain accomplishments even in the Outer World."

"However, Feng'er, there are actually a lot of people who possess decent foundations. However, if they are unable to expand upon them themselves, it would all be useless. The reason for that is because there is no one in this world with the time to assist others to expand their foundations. Zi Ling belonged to the sort that needed another's assistance."

"Thus, I think that you should be able to understand why I am helping her," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"I understand."

Chu Feng naturally understood that Chu Xuanyuan was spending that much effort to help Zi Ling because of him. After all, Zi Ling was his lover.

"It's good that you know. Zi Ling's potential needed me to develop it. However you... you must develop your potential yourself."

"Actually, I am able to wholly nurture you and let you leave after you are capable of contending against others."

"However, I fear that while you might be able to become very powerful in a short period of time under my umbrella, your future prospects will instead be limited. If that is the case, the gains will not make up for the losses."

"After all, one must look at the long-term. Thus, I hope that you are able to understand my intentions," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Father, please rest assured. I will definitely go and comprehend the path of martial cultivation diligently," Chu Feng said.

"Mn, I know that my Feng'er is a person with perseverance. That part of you resembles both me and your grandfather," Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Hehe...” Chu Feng laughed proudly. He felt those words to be the greatest praise.

After all, both his grandfather and his father were grand existences with renowned reputations in the Outer World.

“Father, you said that you will no longer help me once I reach the Outer World. I am still not yet in the Outer World now, are you able to still help me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Feng’er, if you want more cultivation resources, you do not have to bother asking,” Chu Xuanyuan said decisively. His tone was very cold and grim. It seemed that he was determined to not help Chu Feng increase his cultivation.

“Father, please rest assured. I will only rely on myself for my cultivation. I will not ask you for assistance.”

“What I wanted father’s assistance with is something else,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it? Go ahead and tell me,” Chu Xuanyuan said after finding out that it was not related to Chu Feng’s cultivation.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2139 - Good Or Bad noVE/b-In**

“I have three things that I wish father’s assistance in.”

“First, I hope that you can help me find out where the Moon Immortal has gone to. She has seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies. I wish to seize them back from her.”

“Second, I hope you can help me check out the Four Great Divine Bodies to see if there is anything wrong concerning their physical bodies. The reason for that is because the Magma Emperor declared that they would not live for long. Yet, I was unable to discover anything wrong with their bodies,” Chu Feng said.

“The Moon Immortal has already entered the Outer World. If you wish to search for her, you’ll have to do so in the Outer World,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Entered the Outer World?” Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression.

“She should not have used the Stairway to Heaven. Instead, it should have been some sort of treasure that let her enter the Outer World.”

“Stairways to Heaven are formations that can be used many times. However, the method she used to enter the Outer World should be a sort of treasure that can only be used once,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“In that case, does that mean that the Moon Immortal is currently in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Hundred Refinement Stage?” Chu Feng asked.

“That might be the case, yet might not be the case. It depends on who created her treasure, and where that treasure will take her.”

“That said, that so-called Moon Immortal is someone from the Outer World to begin with. Furthermore, her nature should be good. Else, she would not have assisted you. She did not help you out of righteousness. Rather, it was because she felt that she owed you.”

“I don’t think someone like her will harm Su Rou and Su Mei. Thus, you do not have to worry about them too much,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I understand,” Chu Feng was very surprised. He did not expect the Moon Immortal to be from the Outer World. However, since his father said it like that, there would definitely be no mistake about it. Thus, he continued to ask, “Then, what about the Four Great Divine Beasts? Do they really possess fatal dangers?”

Chu Feng wanted to know about the situation with the Four Great Divine Beasts. This was also why he decided to bring the Four Great Divine Beasts here with him. Chu Feng had wanted to have his father check out the Four Great Divine Beasts from the very beginning.

After Chu Feng said those words, Chu Xuanyuan turned his gaze toward the direction where the Four Great Divine Beasts were. After surveying them for some time, he said, “The Azure Dragon, the White Tiger, the Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise are the legendary Four Symbols Divine Beasts. If they truly exist, they should possess overwhelming strength. How could they only be mere Half Martial Ancestors?”

“Thus, those four that you know are merely lifeforms created from the separation of a Divine Power.”

“They are not Divine Beasts, nor are they Sacred Beasts. In fact, they cannot even be considered to be beasts.”

“They should have been a Divine Power that accompanied their master. If they cannot accompany their master, they should have disappeared,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In that case, they truly will not be able to continue to live for long?” Chu Feng asked.

“If it is to continue like this, they will indeed not be able to live for long. If you want them to continue living, you’ll have to have them abandon their physical bodies and freedom to return to becoming secret skills that would exist in your body,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

At that moment, Chu Feng grew silent. He did not know how he was to mention such a thing to the Azure Dragon and the others.

After all, if Chu Feng were to tell them that, it would mean that the Magma Emperor hadn’t been lying, that Qing Xuantian had truly abandoned them.

“I possess the method to turn them back into secret skills so that they can return to your body. If you wish for them to continue to exist, you must tell them the truth.”

“Furthermore, Feng’er, although they are not the legendary Four Symbols Divine Beasts, they do indeed possess Four Symbols Divine Power. They are extremely powerful among the many Divine Powers.”

“I do not understand why their master would brave dangers to his life to separate them from his body, to personally strip himself of his exceptional gift,” Chu Xuanyuan said in a puzzled manner. Evidently... he still did not know about the matter concerning Qing Xuantian and the Four Great Divine Beasts.

“Father, I heard this is what happened...”

Chu Feng told Chu Xuanyuan everything regarding Qing Xuantian, the Four Great Divine Beasts and what the Magma Emperor said.

He wished for his father to help him analyze the situation and figure out exactly why Qing Xuantian decided to abandon the Four Great Divine Beasts.

After all, with all the things that Qing Xuantian had done, he did not resemble an evil person no matter how Chu Feng saw it.

“The way I see it, that Magma Emperor’s words cannot be fully trusted. However, they possess a certain degree of credibility.”

“After all, what martial cultivators seek is power. To make decisions for stronger power is something that martial cultivators oftentimes face.”

“For example, Feng’er, if there is a bloodline even more powerful than your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline, a bloodline that could allow you to grow stronger faster, would you abandon your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline?” Chu Xuanyuan asked Chu Feng.

“I...” Chu Feng didn’t know how to answer that question. He had never thought of something like that. As such, he was at a loss as to what he would end up doing.

“I think that you would decide to abandon your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. There is nothing disgraceful about that. For example, there’s your friend, Jiang Wushang. To speak of it pleasantly, his Inherited Bloodline gained a promotion from Royal Bloodline to Imperial Bloodline.”

“However, the truth is that he abandoned the power that his parents bestowed upon him. The reason for that is because he wished to pursue an even stronger power.”

“If one were to judge it from a certain viewpoint, he might appear to be in the wrong. However, no one blamed him for it. Instead, all of his clansmen viewed him as their pride. Why is that? The reason for that is because he had obtained the power that everyone yearned for.”

“The way I see it, that is the same reason why Qing Xuantian abandoned the Four Symbols Divine Power; in order to pursue an even stronger Divine Power,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Father, in that case, you mean to say that senior Qing Xuantian was not a bad person?” Chu Feng asked.



“One’s moral character cannot be determined from one’s surface.”

“For example, if there are two men.”

“One man is very honest and kindhearted. He has done many good deeds and secretly helped a lot of people. Merely, due to the fact that he did not seek fame and riches, he did everything secretly, not letting anyone know about it.”

“Furthermore, he deeply loved his wife. However, his wife betrayed him, and even wanted to kill him to swallow up his wealth and property with another man.”

“After that man discovered what his wife planned to do, he was filled with grief. Thus, he got into an argument with his wife, and tried his hardest to keep her. However, he accidentally ended up killing her.”

“After others found out about this, he naturally would have to explain himself. However, due to the fact that he did not possess any proof, no one trusted him.”

“Instead, people all started to declare that he had a bad moral character, that he killed his good wife and was even making excuses for his actions to slander his wife. They felt him to be a degenerate among men, someone lower than pigs and dogs. Furthermore, many of the people that were cursing him were people that he had helped.”

“As for the other man, he appeared to be very good toward his wife, and very good toward others; he appeared to be very kind and charitable, doing all the good things.”

“Many people praised him as a great philanthropist, praised him as having a great moral character, and even told their children to learn from him.”

“However, he was actually someone who would frequently beat up his parents and his wife. He was someone that would frequently entrap his friends in the shadows, someone who would frame another for their money, someone who killed innocents for their wealth. Merely, no one knew about all these things that he did.”

“Say, which of the two men do you think is good?” Chu Xuanyuan asked Chu Feng.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.

There will be early access to future chapters :).

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2140 - Ranked Third - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2140 - Ranked Third**

### **Chapter 2140 - Ranked Third**

“It’s naturally the former,” Chu Feng said without the slightest hesitation.

“You are naturally able to determine who is good since you know the truth. However, if you do not know the truth, and can only judge from how things appear on the surface, how would you know whether that Qing Xuantian is good or bad?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, thank you for your advice. I understand now,” Chu Feng truly understood. Chu Xuanyuan’s intentions were very clear. He was telling Chu Feng not to jump to conclusions regarding whether someone was good or bad before knowing about the truth of what had happened.

One such example would be Qing Xuantian. He must not deem him a good man just because all of the legends said that he was a good man.

Likewise, he should not deem Qing Xuantian to be a bad man just because of what the Magma Emperor said, and because Qing Xuantian had abandoned the Four Symbols Divine Power.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng was more willing to believe that Qing Xuantian was a good man.

After all, it was true that he had obtained a lot of benefits from Qing Xuantian.

Merely, even though Qing Xuantian had helped him, Chu Feng only felt gratitude toward Qing Xuantian, and not blind adoration.

After all, what Chu Feng had obtained were also things that he had obtained with a great amount of effort. Qing Xuantian had not unconditionally provided assistance to him of his own accord.

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan said, “Although I do not know what sort of character Qing Xuantian is, there are certain aspects that can be determined.”

“What are they?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Qing Xuantian is very amazing. I believe that he most definitely entered the Outer World successfully. Merely, he did not use the Stairway to Heaven, but instead used a method similar to that which the Moon Immortal used.”

“The reason why I feel that he is very amazing is not because he successfully entered the Outer World. Rather, it is because he was able to obtain that sort of height by himself in this sort of place with a talent that is not extremely high.”

“After all, at that time, he only possessed an ordinary heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. In terms of talent, the Qing Xuantian from back then was truly inferior to him. Else, he would have been capable of defeating the Magma Emperor as a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng’s true cultivation right now was also only that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. However, after using his various abilities, Chu Feng was able to contend against even ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors, much less ordinary rank one Half Martial Ancestors.

His strength was much stronger than Qing Xuantian’s.

“However, it is precisely because of that that I am certain that Qing Xuantian had not completely comprehended the Four Symbols Divine Power’s true power. At the same time, he also did not know how powerful the Four Symbols Divine Power was,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, you mean?...” Chu Feng seemed to have thought of something.

“What I mean is that Qing Xuantian most likely regretted his decision in the future. Regardless of what sort of Divine Power he might have obtained, it would not be more powerful than his Four Symbols Divine Power,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a smile.

“Father, in that case, the Four Symbols Divine Power is a very powerful sort of Divine Power?” Chu Feng asked.

“I once came across a Divine Powers ranking chart.”

“The top ten Divine Powers on the ranking chart have never once appeared in our Starfield.”

“However, the Four Symbols Divine Power was ranked third on that ranking list,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ranked third? The Four Symbols Divine Power is actually that powerful?” Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression.

He had truly never expected the Four Symbols Divine Power to be that powerful.

After all, the vast Outer World contained a countless number of martial cultivators. Thus, there would naturally be a countless amount of Divine Powers too.

The Four Symbols Divine Power was ranked third. In other words... the Four Symbols Divine Power was the third strongest existence among all the various Divine Powers.

“That ranking was not mistaken. However, according to the various rumors of what happened back then, Qing Xuantian’s talent could be said to be overwhelmingly brilliant. However, if he were to be placed in the entire Outer World, he could only be said to be extremely mediocre, and even weak.”

“The only explanation for that would be that he had yet to completely grasp the power of the Four Symbols Divine Power. That was what caused him to mistakenly think that the Four Symbols Divine Power was very weak and inferior to the other Divine Powers.”

“Looking at it that way, that Qing Xuantian is quite lamentable. He spent so much effort to obtain a stronger power. Yet, he did not know that what he tried so hard to abandon, tried so hard to replace, was actually the truly strong power,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“If that truly is the case, then it is truly a bit...” Chu Feng suddenly felt that Qing Xuantian was lamentable too.

If the Four Symbols Divine Power was truly ranked third among the Divine Powers, then regardless of how powerful the Divine Power he had obtained back then might be, it would still be inferior to the Four Symbols Divine Power.

“Feng’er, if we are to look at it from this angle, then our banishment to this place could also be said to have brought us fortune.”

“After all, you are currently the master of the Four Symbols Divine Power. If such a Divine Power were placed in the Outer World, countless experts would disregard everything to madly scramble for it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Indeed,” Thinking about it that way, Chu Feng was able to realize how precious the Four Symbols Divine Power was even more.

“However, father, if the Four Symbols Divine Power is to continue to exist, they can only return to being Secret Skills. But, it seems that they will not be able to truly reveal their power as Secret Skills,” Chu Feng said.

“Secret Skills are naturally unable to truly unleash the strength of a Divine Power. However, if they are to return to being a Divine Power, they would be able to unleash their true power,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, are you telling me to help them find Qing Xuantian and have them return to Qing Xuantian’s body?” Chu Feng asked.

“Foolish child. How could you give away a third ranked Divine Power to someone else? You must know that it is something that you can only encounter, and not seek after.”

“Thus, rather than having them return to Qing Xuantian, why don’t you become their true master and have them truly work for you?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, you!!!” Chu Feng had thought of a possibility, However, that possibility came as an astonishment for Chu Feng.

“That’s right. I want you to grasp that Divine Power and become a Divine Body,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, father, I already possess the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. How could I... become a Divine Body on top of that? Could it be... that you want me to abandon my Heavenly Lightning Bloodline?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, I want you to grasp the Divine Power while being a possessor of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“To grasp two powers at the same time, this... is it truly possible?” Chu Feng revealed even greater astonishment. However, he also revealed great anticipation.

Chu Feng had envied Divine Bodies before too.

Even though Chu Feng now realized how powerful his Inherited Bloodline was, and no longer felt envy for Divine Powers, Chu Feng still felt a great yearning toward the third ranked Divine Power.

Most importantly, if Chu Feng truly obtained the Four Symbols Divine Power and truly grasped the Four Symbols Divine Power, he would be able to let Qing Xuantian know that he was mistaken to renounce his Four Symbols Divine Power.

Like that... he would also be able to obtain revenge for the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Merely, was something like this truly possible to accomplish?

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2141 - Four Symbols Divine Power**

“In theory, it is possible. Merely, it is very difficult to accomplish.”

“However, Feng’er, just think about it. Since Divine Powers are capable of separating themselves from their original masters’ bodies, by the same logic, they should... be able to be transferred to other people’s bodies.”

“In fact, there are already many people capable of allowing a person to grasp multiple Divine Powers and increase their strength in that manner.”

“However, it appears that the body constitution of the Divine Bodies seems to be innately different from us who do not possess Divine Powers.”

“Thus, Divine Powers were capable of being transferred to other Divine Bodies. However, it is very difficult for them to be transferred to ordinary people.”

“However, I know of a person who is capable of accomplishing that. After you arrive in the Outer World, you can go and search for that person. If he is willing to help you, you will have the chance to become the true owner of the Four Symbols Divine Power.”

“You will be able to become a super expert that possesses both a Divine Power and a Heavenly Lightning Bloodline,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Who is that person?” Chu Feng asked.

“Ox-nosed Old Daoist,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ox-nosed Old Daoist?” Chu Feng remembered that name.

“That’s right, that is his name. Merely, that fellow is very difficult to get along with. If you wish to have him help you, you’ll have to put forth a great amount of effort.”

“However, those are all things for the future. What you must do right now is persuade the Four Symbols Divine Power to obediently return to being Secret Skills,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, should I go and do that now?” Chu Feng said.

“Go ahead,” Chu Xuanyuan waved his hand. Then, Chu Feng felt his surroundings turn fuzzy. When his sight returned to normal, he had arrived at the location where the Four Great Divine Beasts were. n.-OvelB1n

The Old Ape seemed to have realized something with Chu Feng’s arrival. He stood up and went deep into the forbidden area.

At that moment, only Chu Feng and the Four Great Divine Beasts remained.

“Chu Feng, how was it? Did you meet your father?” The Four Great Divine Beasts asked with great concern upon seeing Chu Feng.

“I did. Seniors, I have something that I wish to speak with you all about,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” The Four Great Divine Beasts asked together. Their gazes turned serious. They all realized that something was amiss for Chu Feng to say that he had something to tell them the moment he returned.

“If the four of you are to continue on like this, you might not be able to live for long,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the Four Great Divine Beasts immediately grew silent. They seemed to all have thought of a lot of things after hearing only those words.

Naturally, what the Magma Emperor said was among the things running through their minds.

At that moment, Chu Feng saw extreme grief in the eyes of the Four Great Divine Beasts.

However, even with that being the case, the Four Great Divine Beasts looked to one another, then raised their heads. With smiles on their faces, they said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, if that is the case, we’re afraid we will not be able to accompany you into the Outer World.”

“That said, even if the four of us are to accompany you, we would not be able to provide any assistance to you. We might even have to be looked after by you. This is actually a good thing. At least, we would no longer be your burden.”

“Chu Feng, the four of us truly hope that you can make great accomplishments in the Outer World, that you can show your clan that their decision to cast you here was an enormous mistake.”

They were pretending to be happy, they were most definitely pretending to be happy. However, their blessings were from the bottoms of their hearts. They truly wished that Chu Feng would be able to accomplish great things.

“Seniors, if you all are willing, you all will be able to accompany me into my Outer World campaign.”

“There is a method that can allow you all to continue to live. Merely... I’m afraid that you all will have to return to being Secret Skills again,” Chu Feng said truthfully.

“Chu Feng, is what you said the truth? There is truly a way to allow us to continue to be Secret Skills?” Hearing those words, the expressions of the Four Great Divine Beasts changed enormously. A trace of excitement appeared on their faces.



It could be seen that the four of them also wished to continue to live and not die like that.

Merely, they knew very well that they were no longer the same as they were before, that it was very difficult for them to return to becoming Secret Skills. Compared to before, it was many times more difficult now. In fact, it could even be said to be impossible to accomplish.

“My father is capable of helping seniors return to being Secret Skills,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, if it’s possible, we’ll have to trouble your father,” The Four Great Divine Beasts nodded.

“I’ll go and inform my father right away,” Chu Feng turned around and prepared to leave to find his father.

Suddenly, the White Tiger said, “Chu Feng, wait a moment,”

“Senior White Tiger, what’s wrong?” Chu Feng turned around and asked.

“After entering the Outer World, do not bother to find Qing Xuantian. Before, I did not believe it. However now, I am certain that he has truly discarded us for the sake of power,” The White Tiger forced a bitter smile as it said those words.

Chu Feng noticed that the Azure Dragon, Vermillion Bird and Black Tortoise also had the same sort of expression.

“I think that senior Qing Xuantian must have had his own difficulties,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, we know Qing Xuantian’s character better than you. For some things, we have also thought about them before. Merely, we were unwilling to accept them, and did not wish to speak of them.”

“However, we now have no more illusions about them. From today on, we will wholeheartedly follow you. Although we will no longer be able to communicate with you like this, it is still a fortunate thing for us to be able to fight together with you,” The Azure Dragon said.

“That’s right. Being an abandoned Divine Power, it is our luck that we can continue to live. Moreover, we are lucky enough to accompany a master like you,” The Vermilion Bird added.

“Seniors, I’ve heard from my father that there is someone in the Outer World that is capable of transferring Divine Powers to ordinary people.”

“In other words, after we reach the Outer World, there is a chance in having seniors return to being a Divine Power. If you all are willing, I hope to become your new master,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, is what you said the truth?” The Four Great Divine Beasts revealed expressions of excitement.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng said.

“Great, this is truly what we hoped for,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said in unison. They revealed ecstatic expressions.

Seeing that the Four Great Divine Beasts were so excited to be able to serve him, Chu Feng felt joy from the bottom of his heart.

“Great. In that case, I’ll go and call my father to have him help seniors return to being Secret Skills,” Chu Feng prepared to go and call for his father

“Four sirs, thank you all for looking after Chu Feng these years,” Right at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan’s voice sounded. At that moment, the gazes of the Four Great Divine Beasts all changed. The reason for that was because Chu Xuanyuan was standing right beside Chu Feng.

Upon seeing Chu Xuanyuan, the Four Great Divine Beasts all revealed serious expressions. They were all able to tell that Chu Xuanyuan was so powerful that his strength was simply incapable of being estimated.

“Those words are reversed. In terms of looking after, it is Chu Feng who is looking after us,” Facing Chu Xuanyuan, the Four Great Divine Beasts acted very modestly.

“You all can rest assured, it is most definitely the correct choice to choose Feng’er as your master,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“We also think that to be the case,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said in unison.

“If you four are ready, we can begin now. The reason for that is because even I am uncertain how long you all can remain in your current forms,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“We’ll have to trouble you,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, Chu Xuanyuan began to move his arms, and many streams of boundless power began to appear. In an instant, they covered the entire region.

At that moment, the dazzling light caused Chu Feng some difficulty to keep his eyes open. Merely, the light persisted only for a moment before disappearing.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes again, he discovered that the Four Great Divine Beasts’ bodies were still present. However, they had died.

The reason for that was because their souls were no longer in their bodies. Instead, they were floating in the sky. They had once again returned to being Secret Skills.

“Thank you,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said to Chu Xuanyuan.

“If thanks must be said, it should be me who should thank you all. After all, after entering the Outer World, I will have to trouble you four with looking after Feng’er,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a light smile.

“Please rest assured. We will definitely give our all to protect Chu Feng,” After the Four Great Divine Beasts said those words to Chu Xuanyuan, they all started to fly toward and enter Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to sense that the four Secret Skills that he had lost had once again returned to his body; Chu Feng had once again grasped the power of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.

Merely, Chu Feng was unable to calm his heart. He knew that his father was very powerful. However, he had never expected for his father to be this

powerful. In merely an instant, he had turned the four Great Divine Beasts back into Secret Skills.

“Father, thank you for helping me with this,” Chu Feng suddenly said to Chu Xuanyuan. He was not saying those words out of courtesy. Rather, he felt gratefulness from the bottom of his heart,

“You’re thanking me already? In that case, are you going to thank me for this too?” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he flipped his palm, and a strange substance that appeared to be made of light floated out of his hand,

“This is?” Seeing that substance, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. Even though he did not know exactly what that substance was, Chu Feng was able to tell that it was a very powerful spirit formation.

“This is a spirit formation capable of resurrecting the people of the Chu Family,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2142 - Chu Feng’s Mother**

“Resurrect my family?” Chu Feng looked to the spirit formation in his father’s hand with a stunned expression. His heart was tense, and his mind was filled with explosive excitement.

“As long as you bring this formation to the Golden Purple City and unleash it there, you will be able to gather the souls of your adoptive father and the others. If you are to then create bodies for them, you will be able to resurrect them.”

“For you, that should not be a difficult task,” Chu Xuanyuan looked to Chu Feng with a smile and said, “Feng’er, you should be capable of accomplishing that, right?”

“Yes. As long as their souls are gathered, I will be able to revive them.”

“Merely father, I... I truly don’t know how to thank you for this.”

Chu Feng was truly excited upon receiving that formation from his father. He had not expected that his father would prepare such a gift for him.

An enormous gift. To Chu Feng, this was most definitely an enormous gift. To Chu Feng, his greatest desire was to revive his family.

He never thought that his father would have already prepared the resurrection technique for him.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had a feeling. Even though he had failed when he attempted to resurrect the Chu Family before, he felt that the spirit formation his father had prepared for him would definitely succeed.

“Between father and son, there is no need to express thanks. If there are any thanks to be given, it should be me who should thank the people of the Azure Province’s Chu Family. Regardless of how they were, it remains that they were the ones that looked after you and nurtured you as a child,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Seeing his father like this, Chu Feng felt wholly that his father was a great man.

The people from the Chu Family had not treated him well. Yet, Chu Feng’s father felt grateful toward the people from the Chu Family.

This meant his father was someone who could distinguish between gratitude and grudges, someone who possessed a heart that harbored gratefulness toward others.

It was just like how the Chu Heavenly Clan had clearly abandoned both his father and him. Yet, Chu Feng’s father still told him to not carry out revenge against everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

He stated that it was not the Chu Heavenly Clan that were in the wrong. Rather, it was only the people that had persecuted the two of them.

“Feng’er, you said that you have three things that you wished my assistance with, what is the third thing?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Father, the third thing is about the world spirit in my body,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re talking about that Asura World Spirit by the name of Eggy, right? What about her?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Eggy was sealed by my mother. Even now, her cultivation remains sealed, and she is unable to recover it. In the Holy Land of Martialism, I coincidentally ran across an energy. I used that energy to help recover a portion of Eggy’s cultivation.”

“However, even now, Eggy remains asleep. I feel that her condition is a bit fishy. I hope that father can inspect her for me,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, let me have a look.” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he placed his finger on Chu Feng’s forehead.

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s heart moved, and he revealed a shocked expression. His father was actually prying into his world spirit space.

Originally, Chu Feng was planning to release Eggy from his world spirit space and then have his father look at her. However, it would appear that it was unnecessary.

“Mn, a small problem,” Chu Xuanyuan retrieved his finger and said with a light smile.

“Father, you’re saying that Eggy will be fine?” Chu Feng asked.

“Feng’er, there is no issue with your world spirit technique. Merely, the spirit formation that sealed your world spirit is too complicated.”

“That Asura World Spirit’s original cultivation should be that of a rank seven Martial Emperor, the same level of cultivation as you possessed before.”

“However, when the world spirit technique is completely undone, and she regains consciousness, her cultivation should at least be that of a Half Martial Ancestor. Do you know why that is the case?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Why?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked. The reason for that was because he was truly confused.

“Isn’t the speed at which she increases her cultivation after devouring source energies extremely slow?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“It is,” Chu Feng nodded.

“That’s the crucial aspect. It is not that she was so extraordinary that she needed more source energy than other world spirits.”

“Instead, everything was caused by that world spirit technique. That world spirit technique has been devouring the source energies and putting them aside for her.

“In other words, once that world spirit formation that has sealed her power disappears, that little world spirit will be able to break out of her cocoon, attain rebirth and become much more powerful than before.

“While it is true that that spirit formation has harmed her by sealing her cultivation and made her, a Martial Emperor, become extremely weak, that spirit formation is actually also helping her.”

“The reason for that is because if she were to increase her cultivation by herself, it would not necessarily be faster than having the world spirit formation help her accumulate power.”

“Merely, Feng’er, your World Spirit Techniques are still insufficiently powerful. It is because you tried to forcibly undo her seal without sufficient power that you caused her to enter a deep sleep.”

“However, there is no major concern. Merely, she will be sleeping for a relatively long time. Your mother did not try to deliberately make things difficult for you. As long as you are determined to remove the spirit formation that sealed her, the spirit formation would eventually be removed. Merely... as you do not possess sufficient strength, it will take a long while for you to undo that spirit formation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In that case, the spirit formation will be completely undone after Eggy wakes up? Furthermore, she would have become a Half Martial Ancestor?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is the case,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That’s great,” Chu Feng firmly believed what Chu Xuanyuan said. Thus, he was certain that nothing would happen to Eggy. As such, a major boulder weighing down on his heart was lifted.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Father, where is my mother?”

However, right after Chu Feng asked that question, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression changed, and his gaze grew complicated.

In fact, at that instant. Chu Feng felt as if he had fallen into a glacial-filled ravine. Coldness began to assail his body as it covered his surroundings.

However, that coldness only persisted for a moment, and did not cause any change to the objects nearby.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart tightened. The reason for that was because that coldness and his father's complicated gaze disappeared at the same time. This meant that it was very possible that it was his father that had unleashed that coldness.

This made Chu Feng realize that the matter concerning his mother... seemed to be somewhat complicated. That was the reason why his father would have such a response when he asked where his mother was.

"Feng'er, I've mentioned to you before that this place is a Lower Realm, that the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is an Ordinary Realm, and our Chu Heavenly Clan exists in the Upper Realm. Furthermore, I've also mentioned that every world is a star, and that the stars of a region form a Starfield."

"As for your mother, she is in another Starfield. She is not someone from our Starfield."

"As for your mother's name, I cannot tell you that right now. Likewise, I also cannot tell you where she is now."

"However, I'll promise you this. When you obtain the Chu Heavenly Clan's acknowledgement, when you are able to allow me to leave this place, I will tell you everything about your mother," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Very well, father. I understand what I must do," Chu Feng nodded.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart felt very heavy.

Even though his father did not state it clearly, he was able to faintly tell that there seemed to be a need of a certain amount of power in order to take care of his mother's matters.

It was likely no longer something on the Chu Heavenly Clan's level. Likely, it was so important that even his father could not do anything about it.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**



**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2143 - Nine Heavenly Lightnings Stage**

“Feng’er, it is about time now. You should be leaving now,” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan said to Chu Feng.

“Father,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart immediately sunk. Seeing his biological father before him, Chu Feng was truly reluctant to part.

Even though he had been here for some time, Chu Feng still felt that the time had passed too quickly.

Furthermore, once they parted, no one knew how many years it would be until they saw each other again.

“Feng’er, this place is the Chu Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area. There are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan monitoring this place. As I proclaimed that you’ve died, you cannot stay here for too long.”

“Furthermore, after returning to the Outer World, you must not tell anyone that you are my son. At least... you cannot mention it before I inform you that you can,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, please rest assured. The Chu Heavenly Clan has already abandoned me. From that very moment, I was already no longer a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, I will not be so shameless as to proclaim myself to be a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“However, I will not change my name, the name of Chu Feng. After all, that is the name that you and mother gave me. While I might not care about it elsewhere, I am insistent on using this name to campaign in the Outer World.”

“However, I will comply with father’s instructions, and not declare who I really am,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” Chu Xuanyuan nodded.

“Merely, father, what must I do in order to let you leave this place?” Chu Feng asked.

“Feng’er, this place is simply unable to trap me to begin with. I have only come here for the sake of training.”

“Only by being here will I be able to comprehend certain things. Only by comprehending them will I be able to discover what I want to find.”

“Before attaining comprehension, I will not be leaving this place,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. However, he soon revealed a smile on his face, and said, “I understand.”

Chu Feng truly understood. In other words, as not even the Chu Heavenly Clan could trap his father, no one would be able to harm his father. As such, the worry that Chu Feng had toward his father also vanished.

“Old Ape, are the preparations ready?” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan spoke toward the depths of the forbidden area.

“It’s ready,” The Old Ape slowly walked out from the depths of the forbidden area.

“Feng’er, this person here is called Old Ape. You should address him as Uncle Ape. Your Uncle Ape is someone who has campaigned all over the world with your father. Although he is much older than me, he is my closest brother,” Chu Xuanyuan introduced Old Ape.

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Uncle Ape,” Chu Feng hurriedly greeted the Old Ape respectfully. After hearing what his father said, Chu Feng felt a greater respect for the Old Ape.

“Your father has prepared a gift for you. I, as your uncle, will naturally also have to prepare you a gift.”

“Merely, this gift might not necessarily be something that you’ll like,” The Old Ape said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Follow me,” As the Old Ape spoke, he began to walk toward the depths of the forbidden area.

After they journeyed for a short moment, Chu Feng saw the blind old man and Zi Ling again. However, at this moment, the thing that caught his attention the most was an unusual flight of steps.

The reason why this flight of steps was unusual was because it was very large, and each step seemed to be made of glass. There were a total of nine such steps.

Chu Feng felt an usual power from this flight of steps. It seemed to be a kind of testing instrument.

“Feng’er, these stairs are known as the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps. These are the steps that all the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation will have to ascend upon reaching twenty years of age.” n--012elb1n

“The Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps mainly tests the willpower of a wielder of a Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. The reason for that is because willpower is the most crucial aspect of a Heavenly Lightning Bloodline’s cultivation.”

“After all, what is required on the path of martial cultivation is perseverance. That is especially true for us, the possessors of Heavenly Lightning Bloodlines. As long as we train in the Self-punishing Mysterious Technique, we will be punished by lightning with each breakthrough in our cultivation. While one’s body constitution is one aspect to resisting the lightning punishment, one’s willpower is the most important matter.”

“As for this Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps, it will resonate with your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline, bringing you great pain with each step that you ascend.”

“That pain will affect your movements. Retreating will be very easy. However, it will be very difficult to continue to ascend.”

“In other words, the more steps you manage to ascend, the greater your willpower is, and the higher your future accomplishments might be.”

“Although you have long since passed the age when the test is to be conducted, it would still be fine to undergo the test now,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, in that case, what sort of result do people generally obtain from this test?” Chu Feng asked.

“Their results are all different. The majority of people will be able to ascend to the third step. Of course, there are those that are weaker, and cannot even

ascend onto the second step. For the people of our Chu Heavenly Clan, they were all able to ascend to the second step. The great majority of them were able to ascend to the third step.”

“As for the fourth step, only about twenty percent of the people in our Chu Heavenly Clan were capable of that.”

“As for the fifth step, it is even lesser, numbering less than even ten percent.”

“It is much much fewer for the sixth step. Those that are able to reach the sixth step would all be emphasized by the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“As for those capable of reaching the seventh step, they were known to be exceptional geniuses even in the Chu Heavenly Clan. They would be able to enjoy an endless amount of glory and obtain the best treatment from the Chu Heavenly Clan. After all, even the Clan Chief of our Chu Heavenly Clan only managed to reach the seventh step,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Father, what about you then?”

“This... hehe...” Chu Xuanyuan seemed to not know how to respond and merely chuckled.

“Both your father and your grandfather managed to reach the ninth step. They are the only two people in the entire Chu Heavenly Clan’s history who have managed to reach the ninth step.”

“As for the eighth step, only a single person managed to reach that in the entire Chu Heavenly Clan’s history. That was the ancestor of the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Yetianhong.”

“Merely, as the eighth step remains the eighth step, it would naturally be inferior to the ninth step,” The Old Ape said.

“In that case, my father and my grandfather are even more powerful than the Chu Heavenly Clan’s ancestor?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng looked to his father. Pride filled his face.

“It’s merely a test. It wouldn’t be able to prove much. Regardless, the person that has contributed the most to the Chu Heavenly Clan remains our ancestor, Chu Yetianhong,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, in that case, can I attempt it now?” Chu Feng asked. He was filled with impatience to attempt that test.

“You can start whenever you’re ready. If you feel that you are unable to continue, then just come back. Although it is only a trial, it still possesses fatal danger should you force yourself to continue.”

“Practically every year, there are people who overestimate themselves, and they die on the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps,” Chu Xuanyuan warned.

“Father, please rest assured. I am not someone who overestimates my abilities,” Chu Feng nodded with a smile. Then, he stepped onto the first step of the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps.

“Step~~~”

“Roar~~~”

Right after Chu Feng stepped onto the first step, that glass-like step immediately let out a roar. Following that, lightning appeared from the step and entered Chu Feng’s body through his feet. The lightning connected with Chu Feng’s Heavenly Lightning Bloodline.

At that moment, a pain that Chu Feng had never felt before filled his entire body. Chu Feng felt as if his entire body was going numb.

He felt as if his entire body was being struck and tormented by lightning from inside to outside.

However, this sort of pain was something that Chu Feng could tolerate. He bit down upon his teeth and took two consecutive steps upward. In a blink of an eye, he arrived at the third step.

When he reached the third step, it was no longer a single bolt of lightning entering his body. Instead, there were three lightning bolts entering his body.

The pain and torment from the three lightning bolts was much stronger compared to that of a single lightning bolt.

However, they were still unable to stop Chu Feng; Chu Feng continued to proceed upward.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2144 - Disappointing Result**

“Step~~~”

“Step~~~”

Chu Feng took two more successive steps. After those two steps, he arrived on the fifth step.

At that moment, Chu Feng was already sweating profusely, and his complexion had turned pale. The pressure was even harder to withstand than he had anticipated. The pain was even more painful than he had anticipated.

However, Chu Feng did not stop. His foot moved upward. Once again, he took two successive steps and arrived on the seventh step.

The seventh step was something that extremely few people in the Chu Heavenly Clan managed to reach. All those that reached the seventh step would be deemed dragons among men, and be respected by everyone. Even those with status in the Chu Heavenly Clan did not dare to neglect the members of the younger generation that managed to reach the seventh step.

After all, even the current Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had only reached the seventh step.

However, that was not Chu Feng's goal. Chu Feng raised his foot with great difficulty and stepped onto the eighth step.

“Step~~~”

Success. Chu Feng successfully stepped onto the eighth step. He had surpassed the Chu Heavenly Clan's current Clan Chief and countless others.

After all, only three people had ever stepped foot onto the eighth step in the history of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

They were his grandfather, Chu Hanxian.

His father, Chu Xuanyuan.

And the Chu Heavenly Clan's ancestor, Chu Yetianhong.

However, Chu Feng had a goal from the very beginning. That goal of his was not the eighth step. Instead, it was the ninth step.

Chu Feng wanted to reach the same height as his grandfather and his father. Else, he would feel that he had disgraced his grandfather and father's reputations, and brought dishonor upon the inheritance from his father.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng clenched his teeth and began to move his right foot that was still on the seventh step. The right foot of his did not stop on the eighth step. Instead, it began to proceed toward the ninth step directly.

"Step~~~"

Finally, Chu Feng's foot landed. However, it did not land on the ninth step. Instead, it landed on the eighth step.

At that moment, Chu Feng's legs were trembling violently. It was as if he was on the verge of losing balance, as if he would collapse at any moment.

However, Chu Feng's physical appearance was still relatively better off than what he was feeling. The pain brought forth by the eight lightning bolts were simply not something that ordinary people could withstand.

At that moment, Chu Feng's lips had turned purple. He felt powerless from head to toe. He did not even have the strength to move a single step. Furthermore, as the ninth step contained enormous pressure, it would be extremely difficult for Chu Feng to step onto it.

"Feng'er, do not force yourself," Right at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan's voice sounded. He was able to determine that Chu Feng had reached his limit.

As for Zi Ling, the Old Ape and the blind old man, none of them dared to say anything because they were afraid that they would affect Chu Feng. As such, they could only gaze at Chu Feng with worried expressions.

After hearing his father's voice, even though Chu Feng was clearly unable to take another step forward, he suddenly felt as if all the blood his body was boiling and surging. He suddenly felt that there was a strong surge of power in him.

Thus, with his left foot on the eighth step, Chu Feng began to lift his right foot and stride toward the ninth step.

“Step~~~”

It landed. Chu Feng’s right foot landed onto the ninth step. He had successfully ascended to the ninth step.

“Ahh~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng’s right foot landed onto the ninth step, he let out a loud shout. It was a painful scream.

“Boom~~~”

Following that, a loud sound was emitted from the ninth step. Like an arrow that was shot out from a bow, Chu Feng was knocked flying.

However, even though Chu Feng started to fly, he was not shot off. Instead, he started to float over the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps.

After that, the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps let out nine lightning bolts that charged to attack Chu Feng.

“Crap!”

Seeing that, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression changed. His body immediately shifted, and he flew toward the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps.

“Roar~~~”

At the moment Chu Xuanyuan approached, the nine lightning bolts that had shot out from the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps turned into nine enormous lightning beasts that moved to ferociously attack Chu Xuanyuan.

Although those nine enormous lightning beasts were not as astonishing as those from the Heavenly Bloodline’s abnormal sign, their might was still unstoppable. Their power already surpassed that of Half Martial Ancestors.

“Scatter!”



Chu Xuanyuan waved his sleeve. Immediately, space itself started to tremble as golden ripples appeared. The nine enormous lightning beasts turned into countless rays of lightning that scattered in all directions before exploding.

Then, Chu Xuanyuan extended his hand and grabbed. Chu Feng was grabbed by him. His body shifted, and he brought Chu Feng back to the ground.

“Rumble~~~”

After Chu Feng and Chu Xuanyuan landed on the ground, the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps also shattered. The frightening aura from before disappeared completely.

At that moment, what remained of the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was a pile of shattered glass. There was nothing special about it anymore.

“Chu Feng,” At that moment, Zi Ling, the Old Ape and the blind old man all rushed toward Chu Feng with worried expressions on their faces.

Snapping sounds were being emitted from Chu Feng’s body nonstop. Those were sounds of bones shattering.

In fact, it was not only his bones that shattered. Chu Feng’s muscles, veins and organs were all shattered as well.

However, after being treated by Chu Xuanyuan, Chu Feng’s body was soon restored to what it was before. His ugly expression also returned to being rosy. In fact, he appeared even more energetic than before.

“Feng’er, you’re too reckless,” said Chu Xuanyuan after seeing that Chu Feng was fine.

However, Chu Feng suddenly knelt onto the ground with an expression of self-blame. “Father, I am useless. I have shamed you.”

Even though Chu Feng had also managed to reach the ninth step, he had been unable to stand firmly on the ninth step. Thus, Chu Feng knew very well that his final record was only that of the eighth step.

“Shamed me? In the entire Chu Heavenly Clan, how many people were able to reach the eighth step?”

“Not to mention the current Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation, even counting past results, only a few people were able to accomplish that.”

“However, my Feng’er has accomplished that.”

“Feng’er, you have not shamed me. Instead, you have brought honor to me,” Chu Xuanyuan helped Chu Feng back up with a smile on his face.

“But...” Chu Feng still had an expression of self-blame on his face.

The way he saw it, his failure in attaining the same height as his father and grandfather meant that he had tarnished the bloodline that he had inherited from them, and brought dishonor upon their reputations.

Chu Feng felt that their powerful bloodlines had entered a decline when they reached him.

“Feng’er, I’ve said it before. That is only a test, and cannot represent one’s final strength.”

“Throughout history, there were many people with great results from the test that ended up with mediocre accomplishments.”

“However, there were also many that only managed to reach the third step, but ended up attaining very high accomplishments.”

“A test remains only a test. On the path of martial cultivation, while one’s talent is very important, one’s investments and efforts are equally important.”

“Do not forget this. Regardless of whether it is your grandfather or I, neither one of us are able to replace Chu Yetianhong in the hearts of the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Chu Yetianhong is the person with the greatest accomplishments, and the person who contributed the most to our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Thus, our ancestor is our Chu Heavenly Clan’s greatest pride,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

**Chapter 2145 - Surpassing The Old**

“Mn.”

Chu Feng nodded. He naturally understood his father’s intentions. His father was trying to tell him that the result from his test would not necessarily represent how much he would accomplish in the future. However, the self-blame Chu Feng felt in his heart did not decrease.

“Chu Feng, it is late now. You should leave soon. That said, there is one thing that I must remind you of,” Chu Xuanyuan looked to Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack and said, “That Evil God Sword of yours is special. You will likely not be able to control it. However, you should not discard it either. In short, just make sure to be careful when using it.”

“Father, is that Evil God Sword really an Imperial Armament?” Chu Feng asked.

“Imperial Armament? The strength of that weapon cannot be weighed with the ranking of weapons. That said, that sword is very nefarious. If you are able to use it properly, it will become your assistance. However, if you fail to use it properly, it will become a weapon that will end up killing you.”

“That said, it remains a rare treasure. Since you managed to encounter it, it is your fortune. If you were to discard it, it would be a great pity,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand now. I will not discard the Evil God Sword. Instead, I’ll be careful with it,” Chu Feng said.

“As for whether it would be fortune or misfortune, it will depend on your ability to control it. If you are truly unable to control it, do not force yourself. There is no harm in discarding it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I understand,” Chu Feng nodded again.

“Mn, Feng’er, go ahead. Go and temper yourself in the Outer World,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, Uncle Ape, Zi Ling, I’ll be going now,” Chu Feng looked to the three people there with him. Regardless of whether it was Chu Xuanyuan, the Old Ape or Zi Ling, they all had expressions of reluctance to part in their eyes.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the three of them were unwilling to part with him too. This was especially true for Zi Ling. Even though she had a sweet smile on her face, the rims of her eyes were already red.

In Chu Feng's memory, Zi Ling was not a girl fond of crying.

"I'm going now," Chu Feng turned around, and then left with the blind old man.

Chu Feng had truly decided to leave. Even though there were many questions left in his heart, Chu Feng did not plan to ask his father about them.

His father had told him about a lot of things today. From those, Chu Feng was able to tell that his father wanted him to rely on himself. As such, he would comply with his father's desire.

Chu Feng's martial cultivation path would be very difficult in the days to come. However, Chu Feng was determined to rely on himself. He would no longer rely on his father.

"Feng'er," Right at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan's voice sounded.

Chu Feng turned around, and saw that Chu Xuanyuan was looking at him still. With a light smile on his face, Chu Xuanyuan said, "Although I am unable to tell you things concerning your mother right now, you must know that your mother loved you deeply."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's nose started to sting. Tears were about to bubble out of his eyes.

He naturally knew that his mother loved him deeply. Else, why would she go through great pains to leave behind world spirits for him?

Merely, when his father personally said those words, Chu Feng felt extremely moved. His longing for his mother started to slightly go out of control.

"Father, I know. I will work hard in my cultivation so that we can bring mother back," Chu Feng said those words with a smile. He did not cry. He had made the decision at that moment that he would never cry regardless of what sort of hardships he might end up encountering in the future.

He must be strong, even stronger than before. The reason for that was because he knew that the road to the future would become even more challenging.

However, he must continue to move forward, for he had no other choice. For the sake of his family, he must work hard.

Chu Feng and the blind old man left the forbidden area. However, they did not immediately return. The reason for that was because they must continue onward through the Heavenly Path. Only after entering the Holy Land of Martialism would they be able to use that tunnel to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

At that moment, it had been some time since Chu Feng and the blind old man had left. However, Chu Xuanyuan, Zi Ling and the Old Ape were still standing there. Their gazes were fixed onto the direction in which Chu Feng had left.

After Chu Feng left, Zi Ling was unable to contain her tears. Her tears completely drenched her beautiful cheeks.

As for Chu Xuanyuan, he naturally did not cry. In fact, not even the rims of his eyes grew red. However, there was a great amount of reluctance to part in his eyes.

"You're worried, no? If you're worried, you can call him back right now."

"You should know that the Outer World cannot be compared to this place. The perilousness of that place is many times greater than this place," The Old Ape said to Chu Xuanyuan.

"I am naturally worried. After all, he is my son. However, it is precisely because I love him that I cannot keep him by my side. Else, I will only be holding him back," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"That's true too. After all, you have relied on yourself all the way 'til here too. Your father also did not help you either," The Old Ape said.

"Indeed. If he is to have someone to rely on, it is inevitable that his efforts will waver. Even if he possesses even better talent, he would not be able to display it."

“Only through having no one to rely on, having no way to retreat, would one’s potential be aroused. I am doing all this for his sake,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Rest assured. Feng’er’s potential is already very good. After all, the eighth step is not something that just anyone could reach.”

“Furthermore, his personality has been tempered very well over the years. With his talent and personality, he would be fine even after entering the Outer World,” The Old Ape said.

“Who said that was the eighth step?” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan spoke with a smile on his face. There seemed to be a hidden implication behind his smile.

“What’s going on?” At that moment, the Old Ape’s pupils shrunk. He sensed that something was amiss.

Zi Ling revealed a confused expression. She was perplexed by the conversation between the Old Ape and Chu Xuanyuan.

“This Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was personally created by me. Didn’t you notice that there are differences compared to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps when I had you prepare it?” Chu Xuanyuan asked with a light smile.

“How could I possibly see through your tricks? Quickly, tell me, exactly what did you do?” The Old Ape hurriedly asked.

“I did not wish for Chu Feng to become overly conceited. Thus, I decided to deliberately strike at his confidence. This will make him more cautious in the Outer World.”

“Thus, the pressure from that Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was much stronger compared to ordinary Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps. The eighth step was actually the ninth step,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In that case, Chu Feng had already stepped onto the ninth step?” The Old Ape asked.

“Of course. Not only did he step onto it, he also stood there very firmly,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Then, what about that ninth step? If this Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps’ eighth step is already equivalent to an ordinary Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps’ ninth step, then what about that ninth step? What was with that?” The Old Ape asked.

“The ninth step would naturally be the tenth step,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ah? In that case, the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps that Chu Feng ascended today was the Ten Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps in that remnant that not even you could ascend?” The Old Ape revealed a face filled with astonishment.

“Indeed. Although Chu Feng failed to truly ascend it, it remains that he managed to touch it with his foot. The me back then was unable to even touch it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Haha, if that is the case, then it would mean that Chu Feng’s talent is not inferior to yours and your father’s. Instead, his talent surpasses both of you,” The Old Ape was very excited. After all, this was no small matter.

“Strictly speaking, that is the case. Although it is only willpower, that sort of willpower is not something that ordinary people could compare with.”

“Feng’er has truly surpassed us,” Chu Xuanyuan revealed an expression of pride.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2146 - Resurrection Again**

“Hahaha, great, this is truly great. I had originally thought that Chu Feng being able to ascend to the eighth step was already pretty decent.”

“But it turns out this Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was actually strengthened. Chu Feng’s performance actually surpassed even yours.”

“Haha, surpassing the old, this is most definitely surpassing the old. Great, this is truly great,” The Old Ape was extremely excited, and smiling widely from being incapable of concealing his happiness. In fact, he was even slapping his thigh.

At that moment, Zi Ling had managed to understand what had happened from the dialogue. At that moment, she was also smiling sweetly. She was truly feeling happy for Chu Feng.

“Zi Ling, Feng’er will meet great hardships after entering the Outer World. However, you will not necessarily be able to live more comfortably than him here.”

“Likely, you will not be able to rest for all of the following days. The intensity of the training that I’ve prepared for you will surpass everything that you’ve ever experienced.”

“However, this is the only path that you can take to become stronger. I will remold your Divine Power. It will be a pain that you’ve never experienced before.”

“If you wish to attain a rebirth, you must first transform yourself. If you wish to transform yourself, this is the only method.”

“Are you prepared?” Chu Xuanyuan said as he looked to Zi Ling.

“Mn,” Zi Ling nodded her head resolutely. Unwavering determination flashed through her beautiful eyes.

.....

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng finally arrived at the Eastern Sea Region’s Nine Provinces Continent.

He once again arrived at the Golden-purple City. He discovered that all the people present that day did not proceed to the Azure Dragon School to rest. Instead, they all remained in the Golden-purple City to wait for Chu Feng’s return.

The reason for that was because after they saw Chu Feng’s return, the expressions of the crowd all turned serious.

After seeing Chu Feng returning by himself, Xian Miaomiao stepped forward and asked, “Chu Feng, where are the Four Great Divine Beasts?”

Thus, as Chu Feng explained what happened, he revealed the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.



“This... they were turned into secret skills?” Xian Miaomiao asked in astonishment. The others also revealed expressions of shock.

“To be exact, they’ve returned to being secret skills. They were only resurrected for the sake of helping me. However, they were unable to keep that sort of state for an extended period of time. Returning to being secret skills is currently for the best,” Chu Feng explained.

“So that’s the case,” Hearing Chu Feng’s explanation, the crowd revealed relieved expressions.

“Chu Feng, this is strange, your aura!!!” Right at that moment, Xian Miaomiao looked at Chu Feng with an astonished expression. Her beautiful eyes were opened extremely wide .

“Chu Feng, you... you’re actually a rank one Half Martial Ancestor now?” At the very next moment, all of the crowd were astonished. They discovered that Chu Feng’s aura was no longer that of a rank seven Martial Emperor. Instead, he had become an actual rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

“W-W-What the hell is w-w-with this? You w-w-were away f-for only a s-short period of time, y-yet you gained three l-levels of c-cultivation. A-Are y-you trying to k-k-kill me here?” Wang Qiang also had an expression filled with astonishment.

Originally, as Wang Qiang was already a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, he was much more powerful than Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng had now managed to catch up to him.

“It is because of my father’s help,” Chu Feng did not conceal this matter from the crowd. After all, they all knew that he had entered the Heavenly Road to meet his father.

“Ssss~~~” At this moment, everyone sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

Those that knew Chu Feng all knew how difficult it was for him to reach a single breakthrough in his cultivation. It was already extremely unimaginable that Chu Feng was able to become a rank seven Martial Emperor.

However, Chu Feng’s father had managed to let him become a rank one Half Martial Ancestor that easily. From that, the crowd were able to conclude how powerful of a person Chu Feng’s father was.

“Chu Feng, what kind of fun did you enjoy in the Heavenly Road? Quickly, tell me about it. I have never been through the Heavenly Road before,” Xian Miaomiao asked with a curious expression. Of course, she was mainly asking that because she wanted to know about Chu Feng’s father. This girl was truly filled with curiosity.

As for Chu Feng, he did not bother to conceal anything. He answered all the questions from the crowd. After all, the people here were all people he trusted. Although they were not related to him by blood, they were, to Chu Feng, no different from relatives.

Suddenly, Bai Ruochen asked, “Chu Feng, in that case... are you planning to leave for the Outer World now?”

Once Bai Ruochen’s question was heard, the entire crowd grew quiet. Regardless of whether they were men or women, young or old, they all revealed expressions of reluctance to part.

Chu Feng was not someone that could be kept in this pond. Entering the Outer World was something he would do sooner or later. Furthermore, he had already done all that he should do here. As such, it was indeed time for him to leave for the Outer World.

“Yes, I’ll be leaving. However, before leaving, I must first revive my family members,” As Chu Feng spoke, he landed in Golden-purple City.

Seeing that, the crowd all revealed serious expressions. Worry could be seen in their eyes. At that moment, everyone turned their gazes toward Chu Guyu, Chu Yue and the others from the Chu Family.

“Little brother, don’t bother attempting it again,” Chu Guyu arrived beside Chu Feng.

“Little brother Chu Feng, the dead cannot be revived. You shouldn’t cling to the dead like this. It will end up holding you back.”

“Chu Feng, you still have a lot of things that you must do. Furthermore, everyone’s deaths cannot be blamed on you. Thus, you don’t have to continue to blame yourself.”

Chu Yue, Chu Zhen and the others also arrived beside Chu Feng and began to persuade Chu Feng against it in succession.

It turned out that everyone was worried that Chu Feng would harm himself and even die by insisting on using the resurrection secret technique repeatedly.

After all, everyone had noticed how determined Chu Feng was when he used the secret resurrection technique last time around.

If it wasn't for the fact that the Heavenly Road was about to open before, it was likely that no one would be able to persuade Chu Feng to stop. Thus, they truly did not wish for Chu Feng to continue to attempt using the secret resurrection technique to revive the Chu Family.

They were all afraid that Chu Feng would fail again should he try once more, that he would refuse to give up and ruin his grand future prospects here.

"I know what you all are thinking," Seeing the worried expressions of the crowd, Chu Feng started to smile.

"However, you all can rest assured, because it is definitely going to succeed this time around. The reason for that is because this resurrection technique is something that my father gave me," As Chu Feng spoke, he flipped his palm and revealed the spirit formation that was presented to him by his father.

"That is?" Seeing that spirit formation, everyone's gazes started to shine.

However, Chu Feng did not give the crowd the time to ponder it. Instead, he directly activated the spirit formation. The reason for that was because he was extremely determined to resurrect the Chu Family as quickly as possible.

"Buzz~~~"

Once the spirit formation was activated, a dazzling light immediately covered the entire region. Following that light, layer upon layer of ripples visible to the naked eye began to be emitted from the spirit formation.

The ripples were very strong. Everyone was able to sense that the spirit formation Chu Feng was using right now was many times more powerful than the secret resurrection technique Chu Feng had used before.

However, the extremely powerful energy ripples did not affect any object or harm any of the people present.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Not long after the ripples began to spread, transparent bodies of light soon began to fly toward it.

The bodies of light grew more and more numerous. Furthermore, they started to fuse with one another. Soon, they formed many complete bodies of light.

To be exact, those were spirit bodies.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2147 - Overwhelming Emotions**

“Heavens, t-t-that’s my father!” n).0velbIn

Suddenly, someone among the Chu Family’s younger generation shouted and began to jump in excitement. Silent tears began to roll down that person’s eyes.

Following that moment, more and more bodies of light began to appear. Each and every one of them were people from the Chu Family that died back then.

In fact, even Chu Feng’s adopted father, Chu Yuan, his big uncle, Chu Renyi, and the former Family Head, Chu Yuanba, appeared.

One by one, familiar silhouettes began to appear.

“It actually worked. It actually worked!”

Seeing their family members that had died all appearing, all of the Chu Family’s younger generation started to shiver and were all overwhelmed with emotions.

Not to mention them, even the bystanders revealed expressions of astonishment. They had seen many things. However, they had truly never seen anything like resurrecting the dead.

At that moment, the person that was the most emotional was none other than Chu Feng. However, he had to suppress his excitement.

Although the souls of these people had been gathered, they were in a state of unconsciousness.

At that moment, Chu Feng was continuing to activate the formation his father gave him while forming physical bodies for everyone. Only by having the souls enter the bodies would he be able to resurrect them.

In fact, with Chu Feng's current strength, forming bodies for others was something extremely simple for him. In merely a moment, he would be able to form several hundred bodies.

However, due to the fact that they were all people from the Chu Family, Chu Feng was extremely attentive when forming bodies for them, which made it so that it took him a long time to form a single body.

"Chu Feng, if you do not mind, may I help you?" The Heaven Reaching Immortal stepped forward and said to Chu Feng.

"I'll trouble you, senior," Chu Feng said with a nod. The Heaven Reaching Immortal was, after all, the number one world spiritist in the Holy Land of martialism. Thus, Chu Feng was confident in his abilities.

"We'll help too," Following that, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Snow-haired Immortal, Compass Immortal and World Spiritist Immortal, these Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, also stepped forward to assist Chu Feng.

Perhaps it was due to the fact that they knew what Chu Feng wanted, but it took them much longer to form physical bodies than Chu Feng. Of course... in exchange for their slow speed, they were able to form even more exquisite bodies.

In the end, all of the bodies were completed, and all of the souls were instilled into the bodies.

Merely, after the souls and bodies were fused, the bodies were still not breathing. They had yet to be truly resurrected.

The reason for that was because regardless of what sort of technique Chu Feng might use, he would not be able to restore their pulse.

“Chu Feng, what are we to do now?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked Chu Feng. Although the Heaveneing Reaching Immortal, according to his name, should possess heaven reaching abilities, he was powerless when faced with such a situation.

At that moment, Chu Feng frowned and said, “I also don’t know.”

He truly didn’t know. After all, Chu Feng’s father only told him to form bodies and place the souls into the bodies to resurrect the people of the Chu Family.

He had done all that now. Furthermore, each and every body was formed so perfectly. Yet, none of these people showed any signs of reviving.

For the sake of letting them revive sooner, Chu Feng attempted several methods. However, they were all useless.

As of now, Chu Feng had exhausted all of his abilities. However, these people remained dead. This caused Chu Feng to feel that he was powerless.

“But, the souls have already been gathered. Could it be that even this will not suffice?” At that moment, the people from the Chu Family started to panic. Some of the females were so worried that they started to tear up.

Earlier, they had not believed that the resurrection technique would work. However, after actually seeing their family members’ souls, and how their souls had entered their newly formed physical bodies, they all felt that their family members would be able to be revived.

Yet, after reaching this point, their family members had yet to be revived. This caused them to be filled with anxiety.

“Bang~~~”

Right at that moment, the spirit formation that Chu Xuanyuan had given Chu Feng suddenly exploded. It turned into silvery light that soared into the sky, covering it.

Then, the silvery light began to sprinkle down from the air before gently falling onto the bodies of the people from the Chu Family.

“Wuu...”

After the silvery light entered their bodies, the previously-motionless Chu Family members started to breath. In fact, they even started to emit sounds.

Finally, all of the people from the Chu Family opened their tightly closed eyes, and woke up.

“They’re alive, they’re alive!!!”

Seeing that, everyone present started to shout emotionally.

Resurrection, something that surpassed one’s imagination, was actually possible.

“Father!!!”

“Mother!!!”

“Grandfather!!!”

“Little brother!!!”

“Little sister!!!”

At that moment, all of the Chu Family’s younger generation that were alive were unable to contain themselves. While wailing with tears, they threw themselves at their newly revived relatives and tightly embraced them.

Tears were falling down like rain. At that moment, their longing for their family members was all unleashed.

“Father.”

As for Chu Feng, he immediately arrived before his adoptive father Chu Yuan’s side. Chu Guyu had also followed him.

“Guyu, Feng’er.”

“What is going on? I... didn’t I die?”

“Or, could it be that I was muddleheaded, and ended up dreaming all of that?” Chu Yuan was confused by the situation before him.

“Father, you indeed died. However, you were resurrected. It was Chu Feng, my little brother Chu Feng, that resurrected you all,” Chu Guyu said.

“Resurrected? Everyone from our Chu Family was resurrected?” After hearing what Chu Guyu said, Chu Yuan began to survey his surroundings. It was only then that he discovered that the people that had been massacred back then, including those that he saw being killed before his very eyes, were all standing there.

Merely, like him, those people all had perplexed and confused expressions on their faces.

“Who are those people? They...”

Suddenly, Chu Yuan revealed a frightened gaze. He had discovered the people from the Eastern Sea Region and the Holy Land of Martialism.

Even though those people had all concealed their cultivations, Chu Yuan was able to determine that they were extremely powerful merely by looking at them. After all, after one’s cultivation reached a certain level, one would emit an aura that surpassed that of ordinary people.

“Father, please don’t be afraid. Those people are all Chu Feng’s friends. They were brought here by Chu Feng,” Chu Guyu explained.

“Feng’er, they are truly your friends?” Chu Yuan had an astonished expression on his face. He did not dare to believe his ears.

Even though his son Chu Feng was indeed very powerful in his memories, it should be impossible for him to be that powerful, no?

How could he possibly become acquaintances with so many powerful people? In Chu Yuan’s eyes, those people were simply akin to gods. They were most definitely not existences that belonged to the Nine Provinces Continent.

“No, it’s greater than friends. Chu Feng is a benefactor to all of us. We all owe our lives to him,” Xian Miaomiao said with a smile.

While Xian Miaomiao spoke those words jokingly, they were the truth. Thus, many people nodded their heads upon hearing her words.



In fact, the King Monstrous Dragon Race's Clan Chief even added, "My dear friend, you have truly adopted an amazing son. Your son is currently the most powerful existence in this world."

"Most powerful?"

"Heavens! Exactly how powerful did my Feng'er become?" Chu Yuan looked to Chu Feng. Excitement filled his gaze.

He had come to believe all this, come to believe that it was Chu Feng that had brought them all back to life. Merely, how powerful must one be in order to resurrect the dead?

Although Chu Yuan was incapable of determining Chu Feng's strength, he knew that the current Chu Feng was so powerful that he had most definitely surpassed his imagination.

"Chu Feng, he..."

The conversation between Chu Yuan and Xian Miaomiao was also heard by the others from the Chu Family. When they realized that it was truly Chu Feng that had resurrected them, the gazes from the people of the Chu Family all became extremely complicated.

Back when Chu Feng was young, no one in the Chu Family other than Chu Yuan and Chu Guyu thought highly of Chu Feng. Even the Family Head, Chu Yuanba, had been like that.

Back then, a great majority of them beat and cursed Chu Feng. Regardless of whether they were adults or children, they all bullied Chu Feng.

Even though Chu Feng proved his talent with his strength later on and started to gradually obtain the acknowledgement and respect of the Chu Family, none of them expected that Chu Feng would become so powerful.

None of them expected that he would actually become the most powerful expert in the world!

At that moment, they were filled with overwhelming emotions.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## Chapter 2148 - Departure Banquet

"Father, regardless of what sort of cultivation I might have, I will always remain your son," Chu Feng said to Chu Yuan.

"That's right. You are my son. You will forever be my son," Chu Yuan nodded his head repeatedly. He was truly feeling proud of Chu Feng.

"Big brother, father and the others have just woken up. They should properly rest themselves. You should bring them back to the Azure Dragon School first," Chu Feng said.

"Very well, we'll be returning to the Azure Dragon School right away," Chu Guyu said.

"Father, I forgot to mention this to you. Big brother is currently the Azure Dragon School's headmaster," Chu Feng said to Chu Yuan.

"Really? Guyu joined the Azure Dragon School? Furthermore, he became the headmaster?" Chu Yuan asked in astonishment.

"Yes, that's right," Chu Feng nodded.

"Great, this is great. My two sons truly make me proud," Chu Yuan said happily.

While Chu Yuan knew that he had died, he had felt very muddleheaded in death, and did not manage to possess much of any awareness.

Over the years, he felt as if he had dreamed a long and hazy dream. However, there was no substance to that dream.

Thus, he did not know about the things that had happened over the years. As such, he would naturally be extremely happy to be met with this much good news right after being revived.

Afterward, Chu Feng, as well as everyone from the Chu Family and the many guests from the Eastern Sea Region and the Holy Land of Martialism, all proceeded toward the Azure Dragon School to rest there.

In order to celebrate the revival of the people from the Chu Family, as well as to welcome the many guests, the Azure Dragon School naturally held a grand banquet.

Furthermore, Chu Feng sent invitations to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Jiang Royal Dynasty and many other powers.

To Chu Feng, this might be his final banquet before entering the Outer World. Thus, he wished to see the people that had helped him before.

Finally, all of the guests from the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent arrived. As such, the banquet officially began.

In the banquet, regardless of whether they were elders or disciples, grand characters or new disciples, everyone was filled with excitement and happiness.

Not to mention that the Azure Dragon School had managed to invite over this many legendary grand characters from the Holy Land of Martialism.

The pride of their Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng, was actually so heaven-defying that he could even resurrect his family members that were killed. He was simply omnipotent.

Most importantly, the important guests that came for Chu Feng were all extremely extravagant. They bestowed everyone from the Azure Dragon School grand gifts.

Regardless of whether they were elders or disciples, they all obtained many gifts. Naturally, this made them extremely overjoyed.

After all, treasures casually given by those grand characters were all capable of being things that they could not obtain in their entire lifetimes. *noVe/lb*)In

During the banquet, Chu Feng gave a general description of what had happened over the years to Chu Yuan.

Actually, Chu Feng was not the one who personally told Chu Yuan what had happened. Xian Miaomiao and the others were truly talkative.

When the people in the Nine Provinces Continent came to find out what Chu Feng had experienced and accomplished, they felt even greater admiration for Chu Feng.

The younger generation that once grew up alongside Chu Feng all realized that the distance between them and Chu Feng was truly growing further and further apart.

If they were to be said to have just learned how to run on the ground, then Chu Feng was already soaring in the ninth heaven.

Suddenly, Chu Yuan asked in a very shocked manner, “Feng’er, you’re going to the Outer World?” Reluctance to part filled his gaze.

He had already come to know that Chu Feng had become the overlord of this world. In this world, there was already no one capable of fighting against Chu Feng.

As Chu Feng carried a heavy responsibility, he was prepared to make for the vast and starry sky, the so-called Outer World.

“Yes father, I am going to the Outer World. However, I will one day return. I will return to see you and everyone else,” Chu Feng said.

“Feng’er, I know that I am unable to stop you. Thus, I will only tell you one thing. After entering the Outer World, you must be careful. There is nothing more important than your life,” Chu Yuan said with great reluctance.

“It’s enough, Feng’er is someone with great prospects. As his father, you should support him.”

“Come, Feng’er, grandfather will offer you a toast of wine. I hope that you will be able to accomplish what you have done here in the Outer World too,” Chu Yuanba raised his wine cup to toast Chu Feng.

Back then, Chu Yuanba had not thought highly of Chu Feng. It was only after Chu Feng gradually emerged in power and gained honor for the Chu Family that he started to think highly of Chu Feng.

And now, after knowing about Chu Feng’s various achievements, Chu Feng had already become the pride of the Chu Family in his heart.

He was very glad that he had decided to allow Chu Yuan to adopt Chu Feng in the end.

“If someone must offer a toast, it should be me offering grandfather a toast,” Even though Chu Yuanba had not treated Chu Feng well, Chu Feng did not blame Chu Yuanba, nor did he blame the others from the Chu Family. The only thing he felt toward them was deficiency. Thus, after Chu Feng finished drinking that cup of wine, he said to Chu Yuanba, “Grandfather, I was the one in the wrong back then. It was all because of me that caused you all to die.”

“Alas, Feng’er, what are you saying? Let the past be the past. Aren’t we all properly living now?” Chu Yuanba said indifferently with a smile on his face.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, no one blames you for what happened back then. After all, it was not your fault to begin with. It’s those vile people that were the ones at fault,” The others from the Chu Family also voiced their opinions.

In response, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Suddenly, he grabbed a large jug of wine, and swept his gaze over the crowd.

His family: Chu Yue, Chu Yuan, Chu Guyu and the others...

His masters: Zhuge Liuyun and Qiu Canfeng.

His seniors from the Nine Provinces Continent: the Azure Dragon Founder, Li Changqing, Monstrous Monkey Brother and the others...

Those from the Eastern Sea Region: Huangfu Haoyue, Qiushui Fuyan, Lady Piaomiao and the others...

From the Holy Land of Martialism: Baili Xuankong, Dugu Xingfeng and the others...

As well as the seniors from the various powers: the Azure Dragon School, the Jiang Royal Dynasty, Misty Peak, the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Cyanwood Mountain, the King Monstrous Dragon Race, the World Spiritist Alliance, the Elf Kingdom and the others...

When Chu Feng saw those familiar faces, the scenes of what had happened back then seemed to flash before his eyes once again. Chu Feng’s mouth lifted into a smile.

He said, “Seniors, all of you are people that have helped me, all of you are benefactors to me. In fact, many among you are people that have saved me before.”

"I, Chu Feng, am only able to be here this day because of you all. Even thousands of words would not be able to express my gratitude toward you all."

"Seniors, I, Chu Feng, shall offer you all a toast here," After saying those words, Chu Feng gulped down the entire jug of wine.

In response, all of the seniors that had helped Chu Feng also grabbed a jug of wine each and gulped down the wine. They did not regret helping Chu Feng. The reason for that was because helping Chu Feng had been worth it in the end.

After gulping down that jug of wine, Chu Feng grabbed another jug of wine. He looked to Wang Qiang, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Xian Miaomiao, Bai Ruochen, Sima Ying, Tantai Xue and the many fellow members of the younger generation, "This toast is for my good brothers and friends. It is for the trials and tribulations that we all have endured together through the years."

"Toast!" Xian Miaomiao and the others all stood up and toasted with Chu Feng.

On this night, the crowd drank all the way till dawn.

In fact, this banquet continued for ten days and ten nights straight.

Chu Feng knew that this was the final time that he had to accompany these friends and relatives. Thus, he cherished this moment even more.

However, there was no such thing as a never-ending banquet in this world. As such, even though the crowd was reluctant to part, even though there were people shedding tears, the banquet still ended up ending.

After the banquet ended, Chu Feng proceeded toward the Eastern Sea Region's Misty Peak.

Chu Feng was prepared to leave. There were many people that followed him to see him off.

Practically all the people capable of following him went with him. They were all planning to see Chu Feng off personally.

However, not everyone was able to enter the Immortalization Road. After all, the path to the Stairway to Heaven on the Immortalization Road was very dangerous.

In the end, only a small portion of the people were able to see Chu Feng off in the Immortalization Road.

“Miaomiao, keep this. After entering the Outer World, if you do not wish to stay in the Hundred Refinements Stage, you can use this to escape from the binding of the Hundred Refinements Stage,” Chu Feng handed the world spirit key to Xian Miaomiao.

“Mn,” Xian Miaomiao accepted the key with a beaming smile.

“After reaching the Outer World, use this to contact me,” Chu Feng also handed her a Golden Flash Bird.

“Okay,” Xian Miaomiao nodded again. Then, she said to Chu Feng, “You must be well. Make sure to not die. Don’t make it so that there is no one in the Outer World for this princess after she arrives.”

“Definitely,” Chu Feng nodded with a smile.

“H-Hey, e-enough of the d-d-dillydally. A-A-Are we g-going or not?” Suddenly, a voice was heard. It was Wang Qiang.

Merely, the current Wang Qiang was already above the clouds and standing on the Stairway to Heaven. The Stairway to Heaven had been activated, and Wang Qiang had ascended onto it.

“Seniors, Chu Feng shall take his leave now,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward the crowd.

“Safe journey,” The crowd also clasped their fists.

Chu Feng smiled again. Then, his body shifted, and he flew toward the Stairway to Heaven. With rapid steps, he began to ascend it. Soon, he caught up to Wang Qiang.

“D-D-Do you s-see that? If w-we g-go any f-f-further, this S-Stairway to Heaven w-will send us to the O-Outer World.”

“A-At that t-time, we will be completely l-leaving this place. A-Are you p-p-p-prepared?” Wang Qiang pointed toward the top of the Stairway to Heaven. The energy ripples in that place were somewhat different.

Chu Feng took a glance downward. He was filled with reluctance to part. However, in the end, he turned around and said, “Let’s go.”

“Woosh~~~”

Once Chu Feng said those words, the two men both soared ahead.

“Buzz~~~”

When the two men stepped onto that region, waves of power began to pound against them from below the Stairway to Heaven.

“Woosh~~~”

When the light coming from below covered Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, the two of them were quickly brought to the depths of the sky. Soon, their figures disappeared.

When the Stairway to Heaven calmed back down, all the people present knew that Chu Feng... had already entered Outer World.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2149 - Newcomer**

Everything in around him was rapidly changing. However, Chu Feng was not moving at all. It was as if his hands and legs were restricted; as if he was in a river current, and could only blindly follow it.

However, Chu Feng was able to see the changes happening to his surroundings. At the beginning, his surrounding had been covered with golden light. However, the golden light soon turned into darkness. Even though it had turned to darkness, there were many faint lights passing through him nonstop. In fact, he was even able to sense that there were a lot of such lights; so many that they were simply innumerable.



Merely, the speed at which Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were traveling was simply too fast. As such, Chu Feng was simply unable to see anything clearly.

However, Chu Feng had a guess in his heart. He felt those lights to be stars. Chu Feng had already left the Eastern Sea Region. To be exact, he had left the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm and entered the vast starry sky.

That is, he had entered the Outer World.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, the place before Chu Feng was no longer an endless tunnel. Instead, a ray of light appeared.

That ray of light appeared like the bright sun. Blazing heat was soon felt.

Soon, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were basked in the light and heat. It was as if they had entered the sun itself. That sort of feeling was very unpleasant.

However, that feeling persisted for only a split second before disappearing. At the same time, the dazzling light also disappeared.

Soon, Chu Feng discovered that the binding feeling on his hands and legs had also disappeared.

Furthermore, when he looked to his surroundings, he was joyous to discover that he was currently on a sea floor.

“We’ve a-a-arrived at the O-O-Outer World?” Wang Qiang asked Chu Feng. Unconcealable excitement filled his face.

“Wouldn’t we know once we go out?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, his body shifted as he and Wang Qiang rapidly soared upward.

“Splash~~~”

Waves of water splashed across the sea as Chu Feng and Wang Qiang soared into the sky like two dragons.

However, there was no one in their surroundings. Above them was a vast blue sky and white clouds. Below them was a sea as far as the eye could see. The waves of the sea surged high into the sky and rumbled as they crashed back into the sea.

“T-the h-hell?! I-I-Isn’t this the E-Eastern Sea R-Region?!” Wang Qiang’s mouth was wide open. He had a disappointed expression.

“No, this place should be the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Chu Feng said.

“H-How do you k-know that?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Sense the Natural Energies in this place. They’re so plentiful and dense. Not to mention the Eastern Sea Region, even the Holy Land of Martialism is greatly inferior to this place,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Wang Qiang closed his eyes and began to carefully sense the Natural Energies in his surroundings. Then, he opened his eyes and revealed an excited expression. He said, “It’s t-true! In t-that case, this place is r-really not the Eastern Sea Region but the H-H-Hundred R-Refinements O-Ordinary Realm?”

“T-Then, where are we at now? Is this t-the H-Hundred Refinements S-Stage or w-whatever that y-you spoke of? B-But, why are o-only the two of us h-here?” Wang Qiang asked curiously.

“There’s only two possibilities for that...”

“One, this place is enormous. Thus, even though we are in the Hundred Refinements Stage, we are unable to find anyone in our surroundings.”

“Two, the Stairway to Heaven that we used avoided the guidance power. Thus, while we are in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, we have simply bypassed the Hundred Refinements Stage,” Chu Feng explained.

“T-That’s true. F-Forget about it. D-Doesn’t matter w-where this is, let’s g-go check t-things out,” Wang Qiang surveyed his surroundings. Then, his body shifted. He pointed to a direction and said, “Come, I-let’s go t-this way. It’s c-closer to the coast.”

After he finished saying those words, Wang Qiang began to proceed toward the direction he chose.

‘Quite skillful.’

In response, Chu Feng praised in his heart. Although they were both world spiritists, being able to differentiate one's surroundings and determine which direction was closer to the coast when placed in the middle of a vast sea like this was not something that everyone could accomplish.

While Chu Feng was able to accomplish it, he did not expect that Wang Qiang would also be capable of it.

After seeing that Wang Qiang possessed this sort of ability, Chu Feng grew a bit more confident. After all, it would be beneficial for the two of them to possess more abilities when entering this unknown Outer World together.

The two men flew toward the direction Wang Qiang had indicated. Sure enough, as they approached the coast, a city came into view.

The city was not very large. However, there were plenty of people moving about in it. It was a very lively city.

After seeing the people in the city, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were both extremely excited. It was as if they had discovered a new world.

Although they were all humans, it remained that the people of this place were from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

The first thing Chu Feng did was to survey the cultivation of these people. He wanted to have a general understanding of what sort of cultivations the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possessed.

Upon surveying the crowd, Chu Feng discovered that the people in this city, regardless of their gender or age, were practically all martial cultivators. As for their cultivations, they numbered from high to low.

However, a thing worthy of being mentioned was that even the weakest adults were Martial Kings. Furthermore, there were a lot of Half Martial Emperor-level experts.

Of course... there were also Martial Emperor-level experts. Merely, they numbered very few.

Furthermore, whenever a Martial Emperor appeared, the rest of the people looked to them with gazes of reverence. This meant that Martial Emperors were people with a certain amount of status in this place.

It should also be pointed out that the majority of the people in Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's line of sight that were capable of becoming Martial Emperors were older than a hundred years old.

As rank one Half Martial Ancestors, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were much superior to the people here.

Merely, as the two men did not deliberately reveal their auras, no one took notice of them.

After all, the two of them were only two young men in their early twenties. They were still very young even for the younger generation.

To the people that had lived for hundreds or thousands of years, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang could not even be considered youngsters. In fact, they were no different from two babies.

"W-What's this? H-Here I t-thought this p-place would be a-a-amazing. Turns out i-it's only this much."

"With o-only these g-guys here, I can c-crush a w-whole bunch w-with a s-single f-f-fart. S-Sigh, t-this is n-no c-c-c-challenge at all," Wang Qiang said with a disappointed expression.

"We've just arrived here. What we are seeing here is merely the tip of the iceberg. As such, we naturally cannot determine much from this."

"Furthermore, Martial Emperors were grand existences in the Holy Land of Martialism. They are not people that were easily encountered."

"Yet, this place is merely a city. However, this mere city possesses Martial Emperors. Doesn't this mean that this place has a lot of Martial Emperors?"

"The way I see it, the people here might only be ordinary martial cultivators. For ordinary martial cultivators to be able to become Martial Emperors, that in itself is extremely extraordinary," Chu Feng said.

"I-If y-you say it like that, it d-does seem to b-be the case," Wang Qiang felt what Chu Feng said to be very reasonable.

"Clank~~~"

"Clank~~~"

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, an ear-piercing tolling of bells could be heard. They were sounding from the direction of the sea.

“This is bad! It’s the people from Luyang’s Pavilion. Everyone, quickly, run away.”

After hearing that bell, two distinct reactions emerged from the people in the city. One was panic, and the other was joy.

Chu Feng discovered that some people were already kneeling on the ground. They were kneeling and kowtowing in the direction where the tolling was coming from. They were all people with joyous expressions on their faces.

“Quickly, we gotta go, we gotta go.”

At the same time, the people that had panicked expressions on their faces hurriedly escaped to take shelter.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2150 - Lord Pavilion Master - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2150 - Lord Pavilion Master**

### **Chapter 2150 - Lord Pavilion Master**

“W-W-What’s going on?” Wang Qiang asked in a puzzled manner.

“Hey, brats, are the two of you trying to die? You must kneel and kowtow to the people of Luyang’s Pavilion when they pass by. If you do not wish to kneel, you must hide yourself immediately.”

Suddenly, from not far away, an old middle-aged man with sideburns shouted at Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

Although that man had the appearance of a middle-aged uncle, his actual age was at least two hundred years old. He had already surpassed the age range of the younger generation.

“W-What? W-We need to k-kneel and k-kowtow just from t-them passing by? T-They a-are this a-arrogant?”

“I r-refuse. I-I’m not going to k-kneel. I s-shall see w-w-what they can do t-to me,” Hearing the advice from the middle-aged uncle, Wang Qiang instead decided to go against it. He placed his hands on his hips and held his head high up. It was a fearless appearance.

“The hell! You ugly fellow without clothes on, have you truly grown tired of living?” Seeing that Wang Qiang was refusing to hide, and instead revealed such an arrogant appearance, the middle-aged uncle grew worried.

“A-Aiyah! W-Who a-are you calling u-u-ugly?” Wang Qiang was immediately displeased by the middle-aged uncle’s insult. As he spoke, he began to walk toward that uncle.

Seeing that, Chu Feng started to shake his head with a smile on his face. He was able to tell that Wang Qiang did not really plan to beat up that uncle. After all, he had warned them out of kindness.

Wang Qiang was merely giving himself a reason so that he could get off the stage. He actually also wanted to hide.

As for Chu Feng, as he was not familiar with what that so-called Luyang’s Pavilion was, he would naturally not take risks. After all, they had just arrived in this place. As such, they should do things with care.

Thus, Chu Feng followed Wang Qiang and arrived at that uncle’s hiding place.

“What is this? You’re planning to attack me after I warned you out of kindness?”

“Come, come, come. Although I am not fond of bullying the weak or the young, I, Liu, will not pamper such a shameless bastard as you.”

That uncle was not made afraid by Wang Qiang walking toward him aggressively. He placed both hands on his waist, raised his neck and emitted the aura of a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and secretly laughed. Both him and Wang Qiang had seen through that uncle’s cultivation long ago.

However, that uncle was actually still showing off his aura at such a time. It was clear that he was very confident in his cultivation.

At the very least, he did not place Chu Feng and Wang Qiang in his eyes.

“Uncle, please don’t be m-mistaken. I am n-not planning to f-f-fight you. I have m-merely come to r-r-reason with you.”

“T-Tell me, t-there are n-neither g-grievances nor g-grudges between us, w-why w-would you a-attack me personally a-after j-just meeting me?” Wang Qiang said with an expression of unreconciliation.

“My, what is this? I can’t speak the truth?” The uncle was also unreconciled. However, his expression suddenly changed. With a lowered voice, he said, “Brat, we’ll settle this later.”

After he finished saying those words, the uncle carefully turned his gaze toward the sky. At the same time, he started to hide himself even further away.

Seeing that, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang also turned their gazes toward the sky.

At this moment, not only was the ear-piercing bell growing louder and louder, a large group of troops were moving about in the sky in a majestic manner.

This group of people were covered by purple clouds. It was simply impossible to see through the clouds. Other than the many Luyang’s Pavilion’s banners that fluttered in the air, one could only heard the grandiose sound of footsteps. Those footsteps were from people walking in the air.

However, after Chu Feng unleashed his Heaven’s Eyes, he was able to see through everything.

Monstrous beasts and humans were traveling together in the purple clouds. However, regardless of whether they were monstrous beasts or humans, they were all wearing the same sort of outfit. From this, it could be seen that they should be from the same power.

Merely, in the Holy Land of Martialism, the monstrous beasts and humans possessed their respective powerful factions. Only very rarely would there be a power composed of both monstrous beasts and humans.

Furthermore, the people in this power all possessed very powerful cultivations. Regardless of whether they were monstrous beasts or humans, they were all Martial Emperor-level experts. Furthermore, there were more than eight thousand of these sorts of experts in total.

A total of over eight thousand Martial Emperors. Just thinking about it, once could very well imagine how terrifying this sort of disposition of forces was. Furthermore, the overall quality of these Martial Emperors was not low either. In fact, many among them were peak Martial Emperors, existences a single step away from becoming Half Martial Ancestors.

In addition, there were several tens of war chariots among this group of people. Furthermore, all of the war chariots were headed by Half Martial Ancestors.

Among the war chariots, one was the most dazzling. It had the appearance of a mobile castle. Through his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see that the war chariot was truly splendorous and majestic.

Not mentioning the precious ornaments all around the chariot, there were also several tens of beautiful young women around it.

Those women were wearing exposing clothing. Their cultivations ranged all over. Generally, they were all not very powerful.

Furthermore, there was a common aspect to them; they were all very young. Even the oldest among them should not be more than thirty. As for the youngest, they were only in their teens.

These women were either serving tea or showing their grace. They were all surrounding a single man.

To be exact, it was a young man wearing gorgeous clothing. His appearance was very distinguished and elegant. Although Chu Feng was unable to see through his cultivation, he had a faint sensation that man's actual age was most definitely not as young as his appearance. That man was most definitely an old codger that had lived for hundreds of years.

A several hundred year-old man was actually being served by this many young women. Chu Feng felt truly disgusted by it.



It would be one thing if he took care of the women serving him. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that this man viewed the women to be nothing more than playthings.

“That is?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze shone.

He was shocked to discover that the man was wearing an unusual headdress, That headdress should be a treasure. Most importantly, on that headdress was a single character.

The character ‘Chu!!!’

At the moment when Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression, the crowd kneeling on the ground started to shout in unison.

“We pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master!!!”

“We pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master!!!”

“We pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master!!!”

.....

.....

The people from Luyang’s Pavilion came rapidly and left rapidly.

In merely a short moment, they were already far away in the distance. Hearing the tolling of the bell grow further and further away, the people kneeling on the ground began to stand back up.

“I wasn’t chosen again. If this is to continue, I’m not kneeling again.”

At this moment, some of the people who had knelt on the ground earlier sighed and complained. However, for the great majority of them, they reacted as if nothing had happened, and continued on with what they were doing earlier.

They actually did not feel the slightest humiliation in kneeling and kowtowing to the people from Luyang’s Pavilion. It was as if what they had done was only natural.

“Hey, u-uncle, w-what’s going o-on here?” Wang Qiang asked that uncle.

“The two of you have just arrived, right?” That uncle was frowning as if he had seen a monster as he looked to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

“Y-Y-Yep,” Wang Qiang nodded his head with on his face. That fellow’s attitude changed extremely fast.

It was no wonder that he would end up being knocked around in the Sealing Ancient Village even though he was extremely powerful. At this moment, Chu Feng truly pondered whether Wang Qiang was someone fond of being mistreated.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2151 - Eating With One’s Life On The Line**

“Since you’re newcomers, I will not bicker with you.”

“Forget about it, I’ll explain to you two what happened. What just passed by us is the strongest power in this place, Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Furthermore, when that bell sounds, it means that the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master is passing by.”

“When the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master passes by, everyone must greet him by kneeling and kowtowing. Furthermore, they must loudly shout, ‘we pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master.’”

“Else, if they are to be discovered by the people from Luyang’s Pavilion, they will be killed on the spot.”

“Thus, if one does not wish to kneel, one must hide. To stand in the middle of the crowd like the two of you were doing earlier would simply be akin to courting death, understand?” The middle-aged man said.

“So that’s the case. T-Then, I must thank you for your w-warning, u-uncle.”

“W-Wait, s-something’s amiss. Since a-all those that do not wish to kneel have hidden t-t-themselves, why w-would those kneeling be so h-happy? H-Hell, a-aren’t they d-d-demeaning themselves?” Wang Qiang said with a confused expression.

“As I said, Luyang’s Pavilion is the strongest power here. Many people want to join them. After all, they would be able to strut around should they be able to join.”

“There have been times in the past that people were chosen from those that were kneeling and brought directly to Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Those people that were kneeling were all people that wanted to join Luyang’s Pavilion,” The middle-aged man said.

“I u-understand. I-Indeed, they w-were demeaning t-themselves,” Wang Qiang said in disdain.

“Uncle, may I ask who it is that created that Luyang’s Pavilion?” Chu Feng asked curiously. He was unable to forget the headdress that man was wearing.

After all, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had also worn one such headdress. However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s headdress had the character Ying on it.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the headdress with the Ying character on it meant that the person wearing it was from the Ying Heavenly Clan.

If so, it might be possible that the man wearing the Chu character headdress would be from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Hehe, speaking of the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master, he is truly an amazing character. He is someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan,” That uncle said.

“Chu Heavenly C-Clan?” Hearing those words, Wang Qiang immediately opened his mouth and involuntarily turned his gaze to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had already told Wang Qiang the fact that he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan on their way to the Outer World. Thus, Wang Qiang already knew about the complicated relationship Chu Feng had with the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Ugly fellow, don’t tell me you don’t even know about the Chu Heavenly Clan? They are the rulers of an Upper Realm. They are an existence that controls countless Ordinary Realms and Lower Realms. To us, the people from the

Chu Heavenly Clan are not humans. Rather, they are gods. Do you understand?" The middle-aged man said to Wang Qiang.

"G-Got it, got it. H-How could I not e-even know about the Chu H-Heavenly Clan?" Wang Qiang said with a teehee laughter.

"With how fearless and ignorant the two of you were acting, it is truly possible that you do not know about the Chu Heavenly Clan."

"Well, it is fate that brought us together. Thus, I'll give you two this advice. While you can offend anyone, you must not offend the people from Luyang's Pavilion."

"In truth, Luyang's Pavilion was not able to become the hegemon of this place because they possessed absolute strength. Rather, it was precisely because the Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master is from the Chu Heavenly Clan."

"Thus, there were barely any powers that dared to fight him head on. Upon finding out that he planned to proclaim himself hegemon over this region, many powers capable of contending against him decided to leave this region. That is how he managed to become the hegemon here," The middle-aged man said.

"Uncle, w-where d-do you find the tastiest f-food here?" Wang Qiang asked.

"Ugly fellow, are you listening to me or not?" Seeing that Wang Qiang was not paying much attention to the many things he said, the middle-aged man revealed an expression of anger.

"U-Uncle, I am l-listening to you. M-Merely, I am t-truly hungry," Wang Qiang held his stomach and exclaimed miserably.

"How could martial cultivators be hungry? The way I see it, you're feeling gluttonous, no?" The middle-aged man said with disdain.

"Hehe, y-yes, yes, yes," Wang Qiang did not bother to refute him, and nodded his head repeatedly. He was smiling very shamelessly.

"If you want to eat fine food, then it would naturally be the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant. The food there is the most delicious." n/(0)-v((e--  
l--b-(1--n

“Unfortunately, the food there is also truly expensive. Even I am unable to afford it. As for you two brats, you are even more unable to afford it,” The middle-aged man said.

“N-N-Nonsense! T-This person here is a r-rich fellow. How c-could we not even b-be able to afford f-food? U-Uncle, lead the w-way, we’ll t-treat you,” Wang Qiang said while pointing to Chu Feng.

“Are you for real or just joking around?” The middle-aged man revealed a skeptical gaze.

“T-Truly. U-Uncle, we are truly a-able to afford t-the f-f-food,” Wang Qiang said.

“No, what I’m asking if whether or not you two are really going to invite me to a meal,” The middle-aged man said.

Hearing those words, Wang Qiang’s expression immediately changed. He thought to himself that this uncle was actually a glutton.

“Uncle, what is the most important thing between people?” Chu Feng asked the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man was puzzled. Thus, he asked, “What is it?”

“It’s trust. The two of us are both honest and good young men. As such, we will not deceive you,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, boy, you appear to be more trustworthy, much more trustworthy than that stutterer.”

“Very well, I’ll lead the way for you two,” The middle-aged man said.

“The hell! T-This is d-discrimination!” Wang Qiang had a displeased expression.

However, the middle-aged man ignored Wang Qiang and started to chat with Chu Feng.

As they chatted, they arrived before a restaurant.

That restaurant was very extravagant. It was the tallest restaurant in the city, with a total of a hundred floors.

Furthermore, all of the tiles, bricks and ornaments were red. It possessed a very distinguished characteristic.

This was the famous Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant.

Most importantly, several tens of guards stood at the entranceway of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant. Furthermore, the majority of them were peak Half Martial Emperors.

Their leader was actually a Martial Emperor-level expert. Although his cultivation wasn't very high, it remained that he was a Martial Emperor.

A Martial Emperor that could move about unhindered in the Holy Land of Martialism actually ended up being a gatekeeper in this place.

From this, one could tell that the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant possessed quite a remarkable background.

"See, I didn't deceive you two. This Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant is ran by our City Master. If you two don't have the money, it's best that you not dine in there."

"The reason for that is because our City Master is vicious and merciless. He is not someone that the two of you can afford to offend. If you are to offend him, you will be killed," The middle-aged man started to panic slightly after seeing the guards. He began to urge Chu Feng and Wang Qiang to go elsewhere.

"Uncle Liu, don't be afraid. We can afford to eat here."

Chu Feng smiled calmly. After chatting on their way here, he had already come to know that this middle-aged man was called Liu Yue. He was a native to this city, and did not belong to any sect or power. Although his cultivation was relatively decent, he possessed no status in the city.

Chu Feng felt that this Liu Yue possessed a good nature, and was a character with integrity. Else, he would not be one of those people that refused to kneel to Luyang's Pavilion.

Furthermore, as he was the first person Chu Feng and Wang Qiang got to know after entering into the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Chu Feng truly wished to invite him to a proper meal.

“Chu Feng, think about it properly. This is truly not a joke,” Liu Yue was still not at ease. After all, from what had happened earlier, he felt that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were being overly confident.

“Uncle Liu, have you forgotten what is the most important between people?” Chu Feng asked.

“Forget about it. At the very most, I’ll just die. Come, I’ll show you two the way,” Liu Yue agreed half doubtingly. Uncertainty still filled his heart.

Thus, even though Liu Yue was walking toward the entrance of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant confidently, he was mumbling nonstop, “This is truly ridiculous. For the sake of a meal, I’m gambling even my life.”

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2152 - Looking Down Upon Others With Dog’s Eyes**

“Stop!” However, right after Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue approached the restaurant, several tens of guards blocked their path.

The guard with the Martial Emperor-level cultivation was standing at the forefront of the guards. He had a very fierce and ill-intended gaze.

“Liu Yue, is this a place where someone like you can set foot? Scram!” It turned out that those people had not come here for Chu Feng. Rather, their target was Liu Yue.

“Is this the way that such a big restaurant does business, the way that it entertains its guests?” Chu Feng’s eyebrows narrowed as he asked coldly.

“We would naturally be refined and courteous when entertaining guests. However, for little bandits like you who only plan to stir up trouble, there is no need for us to show you any etiquette,” Seeing that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had arrived together with Liu Yue, the guards also did not place them in their eyes.

Suddenly, the leading guard shouted at them, “Scram immediately. If you don’t scam immediately, do not blame us for being impolite!”

“Chu Feng, let’s go,” Seeing that, Liu Yue became even more panicky. He grabbed Chu Feng and Wang Qiang with his hands and tried to pull them out of this place.

However, the moment he grabbed them, Liu Yue was startled. He was surprised to discover that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were standing firmly like Mount Tai; he was simply unable to move them at all.

“I shall see how you all are going to be impolite,” Chu Feng said coldly.

“Truly one who refuses a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit. You are courting a beating,” In response, the leading guard snorted coldly. Then, a layer of boundless oppressive might swept forth.

“Huuu~~~”

The oppressive might of a rank two Martial Emperor swept across. Immediately, violent whistling wind could be heard. Like a fierce tiger descending from the mountain, the surrounding space started to distort.

After that oppressive might was revealed, the corners of that guard’s mouth lifted involuntarily.

Naturally, this oppressive might was not the limit of his power. However, he felt that this oppressive might was more than sufficient to blow Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue rolling and crawling on the ground and leaving them bruised and bloodied.

Not only would they suffer external injuries, they would also suffer internal injuries. Without at least eight or ten years, they would not be able to recover from those injuries. In fact, it might even be possible that their future prospects would be ruined.

However, that guard did not feel that he was being excessive at all. The way he saw it, this was the consequence of offending him. Chu Feng and the others had brought this upon themselves.

“.....”

However, after that powerful oppressive might dispersed, the guards present all revealed astonished expressions. This was especially true for that Martial



Emperor-level guard; he was so shocked that his mouth was wide open. His expression was uglier than even someone who had just been fed swine feces.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were not moved in the slightest; they were not at all affected by his oppressive might. Furthermore, even Liu Yue, a mere Half Martial Emperor, was completely unharmed.

“Are you done?” Chu Feng asked.

“Ah?” That guard’s expression changed. He was at a complete loss.

“Then it’s my turn,” As Chu Feng spoke, coldness flashed through his eyes. Then, his rank one Half Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might swept forth.

“Boom~~~”

Immediately, heaven and earth started to tremble. The guards present were all like fallen leaves as they were knocked flying by the shaking. Ruthlessly, they crashed into the Hundred Levels Red Sparrow’s Restaurant.

The powerful impact caused even the Hundred Levels Red Sparrow’s Restaurant to tremble violently. As for those guards, they all vomited out mouthfuls of blood; they were seriously injured.

“T-T-T-This...” At this moment, Liu Yue was struck dumb. No matter what, he had never expected Chu Feng, a mere young man, to be this powerful.

After all, he knew very well that the leader of the guards was a Martial Emperor, an actual Martial Emperor.

Chu Feng was actually able to send a Martial Emperor flying with merely his oppressive might. He was truly stunned by this.

“What audacity!!!” Right at this moment, a white-haired old man walked out from the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant. This old man wore gorgeous clothes, and revealed a golden gaze. Furthermore, he possessed the cultivation of a rank seven Martial Emperor.

“C-Crap, quickly, we need to escape,” Seeing that old man, Liu Yue revealed a frightened expression. He turned around and tried to leave.

As someone from this place, he knew how powerful that old man was. He was the master of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant, the City Master of this city. He was the strongest person in this city.

Since Chu Feng had actually injured his subordinate, it was obvious that Chu Feng would end up suffering.

Even though the aura Chu Feng emitted was extremely powerful and had deeply astonished Liu Yue, his cultivation was too low. Thus, he was simply unable to tell that Chu Feng's aura was that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

Thus, the way he saw it, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, he would not be more powerful than that City Master. If they did not escape now, the only thing that awaited them would be death.

"Insolent fools, you are truly filled with overwhelming audacity!"

However, right at this moment, that City Master suddenly turned around and angrily berated the guards lying on the floor.

Not only did he berate them, he even raised his hand and gave the guards resounding slaps to their faces, leaving them with bloodied noses and swollen faces.

"Quickly, apologize to the three guests immediately!" The City Master shouted.

"Dear guests, please spare us, please spare us," The guards did not dare to hesitate. They immediately crawled back up while grunting with pain, and then kneeled before Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue. With snot and tears, they began to kowtow and beg for forgiveness.

It was a truly wretched and miserable scene.

However, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang completely ignored the begging from the guards. It was as if they did not even see them.

The two of them knew very well that dogs like them who would threaten others based on their master's power were unworthy of their sympathy.

“You bunch of dogs who look at others with contempt with your dog eyes, continue to kneel!” Seeing that, the City Master shouted again. Then, he put a smile on his face, turned to Chu Feng and said, “Dear guests, please come in. The inconsiderate reception of the guards was my fault. Today, the meal’s on me. Please, eat as you wish.”

At this moment, Liu Yue was completely baffled. He thought to himself, ‘What the hell is this? The fierce and vicious City Master had always been someone who shields his people. If anyone dares to attack his subordinates, he’d definitely skin them alive.’

‘What Chu Feng did just now most definitely triggered the anger of the City Master. Yet, why did what I anticipate not happen? Instead, everything’s turned around. The City Master is actually greeting them with a smile on his face?’

“That’s more like it,” Chu Feng had an expressionless face as he walked into the restaurant.

Although Liu Yue was confused by why the City Master was acting in such a servile manner, Chu Feng knew why very well.

That City Master had noticed the disturbance outside the moment the guards had blocked their path.

Merely, he had not concerned himself with it. From this, it could be seen that the City Master was also looking down on Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue, and was deliberately allowing his guards to drive them away.

As for his current behavior, it was naturally because he was scared by Chu Feng’s strength. n//Ove1b1n

Although that City Master was also a Martial Emperor, he should know very well how meek his status was before Chu Feng, a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. He knew very well whether or not he could afford to offend Chu Feng.

Then, that City Master personally led the way for Chu Feng and the others. He brought them to the most luxurious room in the restaurant.

“Dear guests, what might you all wish to eat? All of the food that we serve here is made with the best quality materials. We then have Royal-cloak World

Spiritists create medicinal pellets that our top-notch cooks use to make the food.”

“Not only is our food delicious, it also smells extremely good, and can strengthen one’s body and replenish one’s martial power,” the City Master introduced his restaurant.

“Y-Y-You g-got dumplings?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Naturally. Dumplings are a specialty of our restaurant. We have all kinds of dumplings,” The City Master said proudly.

“G-Good, b-bring me a s-shit load,” Wang Qiang said.

“This...” Hearing those words, the City master started to frown. He said, “I’m sorry, while we have all kinds of dumplings, we do not possess excrement dumplings.” [1. The way Wang Qiang said large amount sounds exactly the same as saying number two.]

“Puu...” Hearing those words, the tea that Chu Feng just drank was sprayed out with his laughter. Furthermore, by pure coincidence and unlucky seating, his tea was sprayed directly onto Wang Qiang’s face.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2153 - Wang Qiang’s Charm**

“Bang~~~”

Wang Qiang slammed his palm onto the table. Then, he used his sleeve to wipe away the tea Chu Feng had sprayed all over his face. n/(0)-v((e--l--b-(1--n

With an angry expression on his face, he looked to the City Master, “W-W-What is w-with your comprehension a-ability?”

“I’m t-telling you to bring me a l-lot of dumplings, not to b-bring me dumplings with e-excrement filling.”

“Did you t-take me a-as a c-crazy man? W-W-Why would I e-eat excrement dumplings?”

“Eh... it is this old man’s fault. I will go and prepare the dumplings right away. Dear guests, please wait.”

At this moment, that City Master’s face turned green with fear. Evidently, not only was he afraid of Chu Feng, he was also very afraid of Wang Qiang. Thus, even though he had yet to ask what Chu Feng and Liu Yue wanted to eat, he immediately left to escape from Wang Qiang’s anger.

“T-Truly, w-what is w-with his c-comprehension ability?” Wang Qiang continued to complain.

As for Chu Feng, he was laughing nonstop. He felt that Wang Qiang was truly amusing. Traveling with him truly made the journey a lot more fun.

Then, a server arrived so Chu Feng and Liu Yue could order their food. Chu Feng was completely unrestrained, and practically ordered all of the delicious specialities this place offered.

However, even with this being the case, the City Master still added many additional delicious delicacies for Chu Feng and the others.

When the delicacies began to arrive, filling the table and piling up like a small mountain, even Chu Feng nearly drooled. It must be said that the aroma of the food was truly good.

As for Wang Qiang, he began to eat large mouthfuls of food. That fellow did not even use chopsticks when eating. He was actually grabbing the food with his hands. Even when drinking his soup, he would use his hand. It was truly a disgusting sight.

That being said, Liu Yue, who had been very offended and carefree earlier, appeared to be very awkward and silent right now.

“Uncle Liu, don’t be afraid. This City Master will not dare to do anything to you today. Likewise, he will not dare to do anything to you in the future,” Chu Feng managed to guess what Liu Yue was worried about.

“Chu Feng, Wang Qiang, may I know exactly what sort of origin the two of you possess?” Liu Yue asked. As he spoke those words, he took a deliberate glance at Wang Qiang.

Evidently, he was not only afraid of the City Master, he was also scared of Wang Qiang. After all, he had been very rude toward Wang Qiang earlier, and even declared him to be ugly and a stutterer. It could be said that he had insulted Wang Qiang's shortcomings without any restraint.

It was as Wang Qiang said, what Liu Yue had done was make discriminative personal attacks.

Originally, Liu Yue had not cared about insulting Wang Qiang. However, after he realized that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were not simple, he began to regret his decisions. In the end, he was worried that Wang Qiang would take revenge on him.

"Our origins are not important. What is important is that we are your friends."

"Wang Qiang, say, am I correct?" Chu Feng was able to see through what Liu Yue was worried about. Thus, he used his hand to push Wang Qiang.

"R-Right, U-Uncle Liu, it's a-all thanks to you. If n-not for you, we w-w-would not have been able to find t-this much good f-food," Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile. As a carefree individual, Wang Qiang did not hold a grudge against Liu Yue.

Seeing Wang Qiang's reaction, Liu Yue smiled in a relieved manner.

"Come, Uncle Liu, let me offer you a toast of wine," Chu Feng raised his wine cup.

"I-I-I'll offer you a t-toast too," Wang Qiang also joined in.

"Good," In response, Liu Yue raised his own wine cup too.

After drinking the wine and several more cups of wine, Liu Yue let go of all the worries in his heart and became more and more merry.

As the saying goes, after wine, one's true nature will show. Liu Yue was a typical such individual. After several cups of wine, he became very talkative and started to say all sorts of things.

"Chu Feng, Wang Qiang."

"Listen to me. I can tell that the two of you are extraordinary people. It is no wonder that you are so bold."

“However, I must still advise the two of you. This place is not a safe place at all.”

“Not mentioning Luyang’s Pavilion, a demonic woman also appeared here in recent days. That demonic woman is extremely malicious. She goes around to seduce men all over the place. Then, she’ll eat the flesh of those men. The two of you must be careful.”

“Especially you, Chu Feng. Look at how soft-skinned and tender-fleshed you are. It’s not safe at all out there.”

“By comparison, Wang Qiang would be much safer,” Liu Yue said drunkenly.

“The hell! Uncle Liu, what are you i-i-implying with that? A-Are you s-saying that I am n-not as handsome as C-Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, Wang Qiang was displeased.

“I’m not trying to insult you. Merely, you are truly not as handsome as Chu Feng,” At this moment, Liu Yue was extremely bold. He spoke without any worry.

“A-Aiya, if y-you say it like that, I’ll be u-u-un-unhappy. I don’t k-know about Chu Feng, but i-in terms of being charming, I, W-Wang Qiang am definitely the first under heaven.”

“Here, I-let me e-explain it like this. I-In this world, t-there is no woman t-that I, Wang Qiang, c-cannot handle. Not t-to mention a demonic w-woman, even if it is a woman that is as b-beautiful as a flower, she w-would not be able to e-escape should I, Wang Qiang, w-want to c-c-capture her,” Wang Qiang smirked while patting his chest.

“Puu...” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself and burst into laughter.

Although the time Chu Feng and Wang Qiang knew one another could not be considered an extremely long time, it was not short either.

Thus, Chu Feng knew whether or not that fellow was popular with women.

At the very least, Chu Feng knew that Wang Qiang had tried to hit on Xian Miaomiao, Tantai Xue, Bai Ruchen, Sima Ying and even the Misty Peak’s Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu and Dong Xue, all those beautiful women.

Merely, not a single one of them felt a favorable impression toward Wang Qiang.

Even when conversing with Wang Qiang, they only did so because they were unwilling to offend Wang Qiang, as he possessed a high level of cultivation and was Chu Feng's friend.

In fact, for Xian Miaomiao, she would rain ruthless insults at Wang Qiang should he dare to approach her. She would refuse to even give him the chance to approach her.

Thus, Chu Feng knew very well that Wang Qiang was boasting.

He simply possessed no fate with women.

"C-C-Chu Feng, y-you're actually laughing at me? I h-have considered you a b-b-brother in vain," Seeing Chu Feng bursting into laughter, Wang Qiang was displeased.

"Wang Qiang, I am truly not laughing at you. I am just unable to contain myself," Chu Feng said while laughing.

Wang Qiang sighed. "It would a-appear that you w-will not trust me u-unless I s-show you some proof."

"S-Since that is the c-case, I, W-Wang Qiang, will s-show great k-kindness and b-broaden y-your horizons t-today," As Wang Qiang spoke, he took out a box from his Cosmos Sack.

Although Wang Qiang's outfit was extremely tattered, that box was extremely exquisite. After Wang Qiang opened that box, a red jade bottle appeared within it.

"H-Here, the two of you, l-look carefully. M-Make that e-extremely carefully. T-This is my t-treasure."

"W-With this, r-regardless of how p-proud and aloof a w-woman might be, even if she is fond of w-women and p-possesses no interest for m-men, s-she will still f-fall for m-me completely once I u-use this treasure. F-For the rest of h-her life, s-she will re-refuse to leave me," Wang Qiang held the bottle and said proudly.



“Puu~~~” Seeing that jade bottle, Chu Feng burst into more laughter. Even Liu Yue burst into laughter.

The reason for that was because the red jade bottle had a slip of paper pasted onto it. On that paper were several words. The handwriting of the words was extremely ugly. However, that was not the important aspect. Most importantly was the content of the words:

‘Whoever this hits shall fall in love with me!!!’

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2154 - That Is The Demonic Woman**

“F-Fuck! Chu Feng, U-Uncle Liu, the two o-of you a-are truly r-refusing to believe me here.”

“F-Forget about it. If you d-don’t believe me, so b-be it. T-Those with s-strength do not necessarily need to p-prove themselves.”

“I, Wang Qiang, am a l-low-key i-individual,” Wang Qiang placed away the bottle.

Chu Feng and Liu Yue seemed to have anticipated this action from Wang Qiang. Thus, the two of them did not bother to expose him. However, they were still unable to contain their laughter.

“No, i-it would s-seem that I must prove m-myself.”

“E-Else, the t-two of you w-will really t-t-take me, Wang Qiang, as s-someone who boasts.”

As Wang Qiang spoke, he moved to the window and looked outside. Evidently, he was planning to find a beauty to test out his charm so that he could prove himself to Chu Feng and Liu Yue. nove/lb-1n

Originally, Chu Feng did not take Wang Qiang’s action to heart at all. Based on his understanding of Wang Qiang, he determined that Wang Qiang was putting on an act, that he would not do anything.

Even if he did do something, it would only be a farce. In fact, he might end up concluding with a tragedy.

“Wow, t-that beauty, s-she’s beautiful enough,” However, not only was Wang Qiang becoming more and more serious, he even started to shout loudly.

“Where? Let me see,” Seeing that, Uncle Liu also stood up and rushed to the window.

“Aiyah, when did such a beauty appear in our city? This is the first time I’ve seen someone like her,” To Chu Feng’s surprise, even Uncle Liu reacted with excitement.

With both of them acting like this, Chu Feng became curious too. Thus, Chu Feng walked to the window to look. He discovered that a large group of people were standing around the city gate.

The great majority of them were men. Densely packed, they formed a small sea of people. In the center of that sea of people was a woman.

That woman was truly beautiful, devastating beautiful, in fact. Her enchanting figure and curvy outline could be said to be perfect. Her fair and exquisite skin seemed to be extremely soft.

A rarity. She was truly a rarity. Especially when she wore that red dress, she appeared extremely hot and sexy.

“Haha, the h-heavens a-are helping me. T-That girl is m-mine,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he planned to leap out through the window.

“Wait,” However, Chu Feng grabbed Wang Qiang. He said, “Something’s fishy about that woman. With how beautiful she is, why would she be standing there and exposing her beauty to that many men? Someone like her should be extremely conceited. Ordinary men should not be able to enter her discerning eyes.”

“Aiya, y-you’re o-overthinking it. I-Isn’t a w-woman’s beauty f-for men to s-see? D-Don’t tell me that t-their beauty is for t-themselves to see,” Wang Qiang brushed it off.

“That’s only one of the reasons. Most importantly, I am unable to see through her cultivation,” Chu Feng said solemnly.

“Doesn’t matter. Just w-watch my p-performance.”

“N-No m-matter how powerful she might be, t-today, I, y-your brother am going t-to conquer her,” Wang Qiang leapt out through the window of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant and landed in the sea of people.

Then, Wang Qiang passed through the crowd and arrived at the center of the crowd. Suddenly, he shouted, “Ahhh!!!”

Not only did his shout successfully capture the attention of that woman, he also captured the attention of everyone around him.

Although that red-dressed woman was extremely beautiful, Wang Qiang’s outfit was truly strange. Thus, his appearance caused the crowd’s gaze to shine with shock.

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang started to look at that red-dressed woman with an adoring gaze. Slowly, he began to walk toward that woman one step at a time.

Not only was he walking toward her, he was even reciting poetry as he walked toward her.

“Ahh!!!”

“M-M-My d-dear beauty.”

“I am w-willing to b-be t-turned into a s-stone bridge and endure five hundred years of wind, sun and r-rain. I w-wish for n-nothing m-more than you w-walking over me so t-that I might s-see the color of y-your p-panties.”

Wang Qiang’s words stunned not only the surrounding crowd, but even Chu Feng and Liu Yue who were still far away.

“The hell!? A hoodlum!”

“Scoundrel! Animal! Simply a pervert!”

Immediately, the crowd burst into an uproar. The men present were all enraged. They rolled up their sleeves and planned to attack Wang Qiang.

They had the appearance of masses beating up a hoodlum to help out a beauty.

However, that red-dressed woman did not reveal the slightest trace of anger. Instead, her eyes narrowed into two beautiful crescents as she asked Wang Qiang, "To dare speak to me like that, do you not fear death?"

"To d-die by a t-t-tree peony, e-even in d-death, I w-will f-feel accomplished," Wang Qiang said proudly.

"What about you all?" The red-dressed woman looked to the other surrounding men.

"I'm willing."

"I'm also willing to die for you."

In response, the men all began to shout their willingness to die. They even began to swear upon the heavens to express their determination.

"Very well. Since you all are willing to die for me, then go ahead and die for me," Suddenly, that red-dressed woman's eyes shone with crimson light, revealing a frightening killing intent.

At the same time, her beautiful body started to change.

Her alluring figure immediately grew fatter by more than tenfold. Her fair skin turned fiery red.

Her black hair turned red as well, and started to flutter about everywhere in a demonic manner.

Her delicate, ruby-lipped mouth became enormous. As she opened that mouth, sharp teeth were revealed.

"This is bad," Seeing this scene, Chu Feng's expression immediately changed. His body shifted, and he began to fly toward where Wang Qiang was standing.

"Roar~~~"

However, right at the moment Chu Feng moved, a beast-like roar sounded. Then, a violent wind began to sweep around in all directions.

Faced with that violent wind, Chu Feng was actually unable to approach it. In fact, he was pushed back repeatedly.

After the violent wind passed, Chu Feng was shocked to discover that many of the buildings in the city had collapsed. There were countless casualties.

The men that had surrounded that red-dressed woman earlier had all disappeared.

This included Wang Qiang.

“Damn it!”

Chu Feng flew into the sky and used his Heaven’s Eyes and spirit power to survey the surroundings. However, he was simply unable to find that red-dressed woman nor Wang Qiang.

The woman had disappeared. Wang Qiang had also disappeared, along with all of the men that had surrounded that woman.

In that moment of chaos, Chu Feng suddenly recalled what Liu Yue had mentioned earlier. He said that a demonic woman that specialized in capturing men had appeared in this area in recent days.

Thus, Chu Feng returned to the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant and asked Liu Yue, “Uncle Liu, was that woman earlier the legendary demonic woman?”

“I, I, I don’t know either. Merely, that seemed to resemble it,” At this moment, Liu Yue was deeply frightened. After all, the might emitted by the red-dressed woman earlier had been truly frightening.

“Dear guest, that was indeed that demonic woman,” Right at this moment, the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant’s owner, this city’s City Master, appeared.

“You know about that demonic woman?” Chu Feng asked.

“Dear guest, this old man does know a bit about that demonic woman,” The City Master said.

“Tell me about it,” Chu Feng said.

“No one knows whether that demonic woman is a demon or a ghost. All we know is that woman originates from the Darknight Ghost Forest,” The City Master said.

“Darknight Ghost Forest?” Chu Feng started to frown. He felt amiss merely by hearing the name of that place.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2155 - Move Aside**

“The Darknight Ghost Forest is a very frightening place. It possesses many spirit formations from the Ancient Era. It is simply impossible for ordinary people to set foot in there. Thus, no one dares to enter that place. It is a forbidden area.”

“In truth, other than that demonic woman, practically no living creature could survive in the Darknight Ghost Forest.”

“The demonic women have always been feeding on young men. It seems to be capable of increasing their cultivation. However, no one knows exactly why they need to do that.”

“Wait a moment, you said they? There’s more than a single demonic woman?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. However, the number of demonic women is not a lot either. One would generally appear once every several hundred years,” The City Master said.

“One every several hundred years? Could they be the same one?” Chu Feng asked.

“That shouldn’t be possible. The reason for that is because all of the demonic women that appeared before were killed. Thus, it’s impossible for them to be the same demonic woman.”

“Furthermore, even though the demonic women that appeared before were strong, they were still at a level that we could handle. However, the demonic woman that has appeared this time around is exceptionally powerful.”

“Dear guest, I am able to tell that you are a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. However, you should have also sensed that demonic woman’s strength

earlier. She is most definitely not an ordinary Half Martial Ancestor,” The City Master said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded. Earlier, as he was worried for Wang Qiang’s safety and only wanted to save Wang Qiang, he had forgotten about that.

With his strength, if he were to truly fight against that demonic woman, he might really be no match for that demonic woman.

After all, that demonic woman was able to capture that many people in front of Chu Feng without him being able to do anything. Instead, Chu Feng was shook back several meters by a single scream from that demonic woman.

From that, it could be seen that that demonic woman was extremely powerful. Her strength greatly surpassed Chu Feng’s.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to frown. He couldn’t just ignore Wang Qiang. After all, Wang Qiang was his friend.

However, with how powerful that demonic woman was, Chu Feng would be no match for her. As such, how was he to save Wang Qiang?

“Dear guest, although the demonic woman that appeared this time around is much more powerful than the ones that appeared before, the demonic women that appeared before were all very strong too.”

“Actually, there is a method to eliminate demonic women,” That City Master said.

“What is the method?” Chu Feng asked.

“Across from the Darknight Ghost Forest is a mountain called Radiance Immortal Mountain.”

“Inside Radiance Immortal Mountain is a spring. That spring is called the Demon Subduing Spring.”

“The water of the Demon Subduing Spring is capable of restraining the demonic women.”

“As long as you sprinkle the spring water from the Demon Subduing Spring onto the demonic woman, the demonic woman’s strength will decrease enormously,” The City Master said.

“Where is that Radiance Immortal Mountain?” Chu Feng asked.

“Dear guest, please wait a moment,” As the City Master spoke, he took out a map. He marked three locations on the map with circles. Then, he drew a line and handed the map to Chu Feng. He said, “Dear guest, please have a look. This is where our Red Sparrows City is located. As for this here, it is the Radiance Immortal Mountain. Opposite from the Radiance Immortal Mountain is the Darknight Ghost Forest.”

“The demonic woman is in the Darknight Ghost Forest. That place has always been their lair. No one knows how the demonic women are able to survive in the Darknight Ghost Forest.”

“As for the Demon Subduing Spring, it is located in the Radiance Immortal Mountain. Merely, its exact location is very hard to tell.”

“The reason for that is because the location of the spring changes constantly. Thus, no one knows its exact location.”

“Furthermore, dear guest, if you plan to go there, you must be careful. Although the Radiance Immortal Mountain might sound very upright, there are many ferocious beasts living in it. Many of the ferocious beasts even possessed Half Martial Ancestor-level cultivations. It is a truly dangerous location,” The City Master said.

Chu Feng put away the map, and then asked, “Why are you helping me?” Chu Feng had already managed to see through the nature of the Red Sparrows City’s City Master and knew that he did not seem to be an individual who would help others out of kindness of his heart.

“That demonic woman is extremely cunning. Instead of committing her crimes in the vicinity of the Darknight Ghost Forest, she instead came here to commit her crimes.”

“It’s actually very simple. She is afraid of the powers in the vicinity of the Darknight Ghost Forest and the Radiance Immortal Mountain. That is why she came to bully us, who are weak.”

“Dear guest possesses the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor at such a young age. It means that Dear Guest most definitely possesses an extraordinary origin. If you are willing to help take care of that demonic woman, it would be a blessing for us.”



“As for me, I have not done much. I have only provided dear guests a bit of useful information,” The City Master explained himself in a very deferential, honest and sincere manner.

Chu Feng smiled indifferently. He stared at the City Master with his sharp gaze and said, “I hope that what you have said is the truth.”

“Uncle Liu, let’s go,” After Chu Feng said those words, he turned around and a light wind swept through the room. Then, Chu Feng and Uncle Liu disappeared.

Right after Chu Feng left, that City Master’s complexion turned deathly pale. Pea-sized beads of sweat began to drip down his face like rain.

Then, his body grew weak and, with a ‘putt,’ he fell to his butt. He began to involuntarily and violently tremble.

“Lord City Master, what’s wrong?” Seeing that, a large amount of guards rushed in.

“I’m fine,” The City Master waved his hand. Then, he said, “Today, you all have nearly brought forth a great calamity for me. You bunch of bastards with no eyes. We are not people that can afford to offend just anyone.”

“Lord City Master, exactly who is that man?” Some curious guards asked.

“I also do not know exactly who he is. However, he is most definitely not someone that we can afford to offend. Not to mention the power that might be standing behind him, merely he himself with his cultivation of rank one Half Martial Ancestor would be able to completely destroy our Red Sparrows City with a wave of his sleeve,” The City Master said.

Hearing those words, the guards all revealed expressions of fear. One by one, they began to feel lingering fear.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?”

After moving several miles away from the Red Sparrows City, Liu Yue held a Cosmos Sack and looked to Chu Feng with an excited yet embarrassed expression.

That Cosmos Sack was given to him by Chu Feng. Contained within it were weapons, cultivation resources and a large amount of treasures.

To Liu Yue, the things in that Cosmos Sack might be things that he would not be able to gather in his entire lifetime.

At this moment, Liu Yue finally realized why even the Red Sparrows City's City Master was afraid of Chu Feng. Chu Feng was no ordinary person.

Merely, Liu Yue felt embarrassed to accept such an enormous gift. After all, he and Chu Feng were neither related nor friends. Furthermore, he had not provided any enormous assistance to Chu Feng. They were merely strangers that only recently became acquainted with one another.

"Uncle Liu, my identity might end up bringing you disaster in the future. Take that Cosmos Sack and move far away from Red Sparrows City, far away from this place," After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around and left without waiting for Liu Yue's response.

While Chu Feng and Liu Yue had only recently been acquainted, he did not wish for this short while of knowing him to bring harm upon Liu Yue.

Chu Feng knew that although he was still a nobody right now, he would one day have enemies.

Perhaps, at that time, wanted posters for Chu Feng would be spread all over. If Liu Yue were to continue to stay in Red Sparrows City, someone like the Red Sparrows City's City Master might end up selling Liu Yue out for the sake of personal benefits.

Chu Feng journeyed according to the map and passed over mountain ranges. He traveled without sleeping or eating.

He did so because he wanted to arrive at Radiance Immortal Mountain quickly. He wanted to rescue Wang Qiang; he did not want Wang Qiang to be eaten by that demonic woman.

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped. He looked to the vast and limitless mountain range before him. A surprised expression appeared in Chu Feng's gaze.

That mountain range could be said to be the most enormous mountain range Chu Feng had encountered so far. Even the giant continuous mountain ranges in the Holy Land of Martialism were not as vast as the one before him.

As for this mountain range, it was that Radiance Immortal Mountain.

“Move aside!” Suddenly, a shout sounded from behind Chu Feng.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2156 - Bizarre Ferocious Beast**

Chu Feng turned around and discovered that there were several hundred silhouettes on the distant horizon. They were speeding toward him through the air.

Those people were all riding a sort of horse-like animal. However, those were not horses, nor were they monstrous beasts. Instead, they should be a sort of special mount. The mounts possessed extremely fast speed; they were actually able to reach the speed of Half Martial Ancestors.

Thus, although they were very far away when they shouted at Chu Feng, they were already less than ten thousand meters away from Chu Feng after a mere moment passed.

“Hey, are you deaf or what? I said move out the way, can you not hear me?!” The woman leading the group shouted at Chu Feng angrily.

That woman appeared to be only eighteen or nineteen years old. Her appearance could be said to be very young. That said, she was quite a beauty. However, her eyes were filled with hostility.

Chu Feng completely disregarded that woman. The reason for that was because she was only a rank one Martial Emperor. Although that cultivation was very strong for someone her age, she could not amount to anything before Chu Feng.

However, although that woman was weak, the people following behind her were all very strong.

The great majority of them were peak Martial Emperors. However, there were also Half Martial Ancestors among them. The strongest in the group were two white-haired old men.

Those two old men possessed the exact same appearance. They should be twin brothers. Although they were wearing ordinary clothing, they were unable to contain their extraordinary air. The two of them were rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

“Is this place your home? Why must I move aside just because you demand it?”

“Furthermore, with how vast the sky is, why don’t you all move around me? Why must you move through where I am standing? Are you all fine in the brain?” Chu Feng ended up refuting them.

Although there were two rank six Half Martial Ancestors among his opponents, and their overall strength was very strong, likely originating from an extraordinary power, Chu Feng was not scared of them.

Although Chu Feng was not fond of stirring up troubles, he was not one to cower from troubles. Chu Feng would not tolerate someone picking a fight with him.

“Aiyo, you have truly grown tired of living. Do you know who I am?”

“Kneel immediately. Else, I’ll break your legs,” That woman raised her whip and lashed at Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

As there was a distance of ten thousand meters between her and Chu Feng, her whip would naturally not reach Chu Feng. However, after martial power was instilled into the whip, it turned into a ten thousand meter-long golden whip. Like a giant dragon, the whip lashed toward Chu Feng.

However, how could such an attack possibly injure Chu Feng?

“Humph.”

Chu Feng stood where he was without moving at all. He merely snorted coldly.

“Huu~~~”

Immediately, the oppressive might of a Half Martial Ancestor swept forth. The ten thousand meter-long giant golden whip was instantly shattered by Chu Feng’s oppressive might.

“Rank one Half Martial Ancestor?”

Sensing Chu Feng’s aura, the expressions of many of the people in the group changed. Even the two white-haired old man who stood aloof and remote from the group turned their gazes toward Chu Feng. A trace of surprise was present in their eyes.

Evidently, they had not expected someone of Chu Feng’s age to have that sort of cultivation.

“You dare go against my younger sister? I shall cripple you!” However, a robust black haired man shouted angrily.

Once he said those words, other than the two white-haired old men with cultivations of rank six Half Martial Ancestor, the rest of the Half Martial Ancestors all unleashed their dense killing intent. They were planning to attack Chu Feng.

They were planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at this moment, an ear-piercing roar sounded from the depths of the Radiance Immortal Mountain.

Once that roar was heard, the mountain range started to tremble, and thousands of birds soared into the sky. It was a magnificent sight.

Seeing this scene, the robust man immediately shouted, “It’s the Ghostfiend Beast.”

“Heeah!!!” [1. Sound of telling one’s horse to run.]

He kicked the saddle of his mount fiercely, causing it to rapidly run toward the direction of that roar.

“Heeah!!!”

.....

.....

Following that, the others also kicked their saddles and rushed into the Radiance Immortal Mountain.

In the blink of an eye, the furious crowd had all rushed into the vast Radiance Immortal Mountain.

“Humph,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng snorted coldly.

The way Chu Feng saw it, those people were lucky to leave.

If they were to truly fight earlier, Chu Feng would likely massacre all of them.

As they had already aimed their killing intent at Chu Feng, if Chu Feng didn’t kill them, he would instead be killed by them.

Furthermore, Chu Feng would have had to eliminate all of them. Else, if they were to escape to their power, they would cause him no end of trouble.

However, they left, and Chu Feng was not someone who planned to pursue them relentlessly. After all, he was not someone who refused to spare others.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng’s body shifted. He also entered the vast Radiance Immortal Mountain. **noV&/lb-In**

Wang Qiang was captured by that demonic woman, and might end up being eaten by her at any moment. As such, Chu Feng was in a battle against time. He had to find that Demon Subduing Spring quickly.

After entering the Radiance Immortal Mountain, Chu Feng spread out his spirit power and activated his Heaven’s Eyes to survey his surroundings. He wanted to quickly find that Demon Subduing Spring.

However, the Radiance Immortal Mountain was too enormous. It was larger than even the ten Nine Provinces Continents.

With how enormous that mountain range was, it would be very difficult for even Chu Feng to search for something.

In the blink of an eye, three days and night passed. However, Chu Feng... had yet to discover anything.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s eyebrows moved.

He discovered a ferocious beast.

This Radiance Immortal Mountain was just like the Red Sparrows City’s City Master had described it. There were a lot of ferocious beasts in here. Over the course of the past three days and nights, Chu Feng had encountered a lot of ferocious beasts.

Generally, Chu Feng would not waste time on them. Thus, he would conceal his aura and dodge the ferocious beasts.

Merely, this ferocious beast was somewhat different.

Although it was not very large, being only around ten meters tall, it had a very fierce appearance.

Its body was completely pitch-black, and looked like a metal frame. Just by looking at it, one could tell that it was very strong.

Especially that face, it was like that of a ghost; it was extremely frightening.

Furthermore, this ferocious beast also possessed a very strong cultivation. It was emitting the aura of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

At this moment, that powerful and strange ferocious beast was currently eating. Upon careful inspection, it was actually eating a person.

It was a ferocious beast that fed on people.

Ferocious beasts were very commonly seen. It was also very common for ferocious beasts to eat people, let alone someone who was already dead.

However, Chu Feng was still very surprised. The reason why Chu Feng was so surprised was because he discovered that the flesh of that ferocious beast was cultivation resource.

Furthermore, the Natural Energy contained in its flesh was extremely dense. If Chu Feng were to eat its flesh, he would be able to gain a great amount of Natural Energy.

Even though Chu Feng already possessed enough Natural Energy to break through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor in his dantian, Chu Feng could not be too relaxed because of that.

Instead, he had to continue to accumulate Natural Energy. He could not let any opportunity to accumulate Natural Energy slip by him. Thus, he would naturally not let this ferocious beast get away.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shot forth rapidly like an arrow leaving a bow. He was rushing toward that ferocious beast.

“Woosh~~~”

To Chu Feng’s surprise, after that ferocious beast sensed Chu Feng approaching it, it did not charge to attack Chu Feng like the other ferocious beasts.

Instead, that ferocious beast actually turned around and rapidly fled. Furthermore, its speed was extremely fast.

It had actually managed to throw Chu Feng far behind.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2157 - To Save Or Not**

“Zzzzz~”

Upon seeing that, lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes as his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared on his body.

With the assistance of the power of the Divine Lightnings, Chu Feng’s cultivation increased by two levels in succession. From rank one Half Martial Ancestor, he became a rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

After his cultivation increased, Chu Feng’s speed also increased enormously. His speed was many times faster than lightning itself.



However, even with that being the case, he was unable to close the distance between him and that strange ferocious beast.

The speed of that ferocious beast was simply astonishing. It had already surpassed the speed that it should possess based on its cultivation.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, a roar sounded from the forest, alarming the vicious ferocious beasts inside the forest and causing them to flee in all directions.

At this moment, a majestic, enormous azure dragon appeared underneath Chu Feng with overwhelming imposingness.

That was his Supreme Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

After Chu Feng unleashed the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, his speed immediately increased by many times.

At this moment, Chu Feng stood on the head of the azure dragon. The azure dragon turned into a ray of azure light that shuttled rapidly through the forest. It was so astonishingly fast that it could raise one’s hackles.

Under this sort of situation, the distance between Chu Feng and that ferocious beast finally began to shorten. After a short moment, the distance between them was less than a thousand meters.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

.....

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, right after he caught up to that ferocious beast, the ferocious beast suddenly turned around, opened its fierce mouth and shot forth many black bodies of light that appeared like black meteors at Chu Feng.

Those bodies of light all possessed very strong Ancestral-level martial power. After they approached Chu Feng, they exploded on the spot, scattering their power everywhere. Their might was extremely shocking.

“Rank four Half Martial Ancestor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation?”

Seeing that, Chu Feng started to frown. He finally understood why that ferocious beast was so fast that he could only catch up to it after unleashing all of his strength.

It turned out that this ferocious beast’s battle power surpassed that of ordinary Half Martial Ancestors by two levels of cultivation.

One must know that when compared to ordinary Martial Emperors and Half Martial Ancestors, Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

As for that ferocious beast, it possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation, one level less than Chu Feng. This meant that this ferocious beast was a special and powerful foe. It was no wonder that it stood out.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to rejoice. He rejoiced at the fact that ferocious beast was only a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. If it was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, it would be very difficult for Chu Feng should he encounter it.

After all, this ferocious beast possessed the cultivation of rank four Half Martial Ancestor, and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. When added together, it possessed the same battle power as an ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

That level of battle power was equally matched to Chu Feng when he went all-out. If that ferocious beast possessed a higher level of cultivation, Chu Feng would be no match for it.

“Regardless of what sort of origin you might have, your life will be mine today.”

As Chu Feng spoke, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader appeared in his hand. Then, while standing on the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he brandished the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader and began to attack the ferocious beast head on.

“Roar~~~”

However, that ferocious beast was not to be outdone. Seeing that it could not escape Chu Feng, it brandished its two sharp claws and pounced at Chu Feng. It was planning to meet Chu Feng with force.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

In an instant, rumbles and energy ripples sprang up everywhere. The ferocious power caused enormous waves that wreaked havoc through their surroundings.

The battle between the two lasted for an entire hour. The surface area of the forest that was destroyed by their battle was simply incapable of being estimated. The only thing visible were surging black smoke and enormous toppled trees.

However, in the end, that ferocious beast was still defeated by Chu Feng. One thing worthy of mentioning was that Chu Feng did not unleash his Incomplete Ancestral Armament to defeat this ferocious beast with battle power on par to him. He had used merely the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader to defeat it.

However, without a doubt, for this ferocious beast to force Chu Feng to this state meant that it was very extraordinary.

That was definitely a very powerful ferocious beast.

“How strange. It would be one thing for a ferocious beast to not attack others of its own initiative, but its flesh is actually a cultivation resource too.”

“Oh, how great it would be if I could encounter a couple more,” Chu Feng mumbled.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, rumbling sounded from the distance. Chu Feng began to feel trembling from his feet nonstop.

In response, Chu Feng turned around and used his Heaven’s Eyes to survey what was happening in that direction.

Under the Heaven’s Eyes, everything became clear. In a forest like this, there was practically nothing capable of blocking Chu Feng’s line of sight. Even

though the distance was very far, Chu Feng was still able to clearly see what was happening.

Upon seeing what was happening with his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng's gaze changed. He was surprised to discover that a group of ferocious beasts was pursuing several tens of martial cultivators.

At this moment, the ferocious beasts held absolute superiority. They were killing those fleeing cultivators.

While being pursued as they ran away, cultivators were dying nonstop. As for those people, they were the same ones that had gotten into a quarrel with Chu Feng outside the Radiance Immortal Mountain.

That woman who had held the whip with the intention to lash Chu Feng earlier was also among them.

The rest of the cultivators were all giving their lives to protect that woman. Merely, the difference between their strengths was too wide. If this were to continue, all of them would be eliminated by the ferocious beasts.

"Serves you right," Chu Feng mocked.

From the actions of those people earlier, he was already able to tell that they were scum who would bully others using their superior status and strength.

The continued existence of these people might cause countless innocent people to suffer by their evil hands. The way Chu Feng saw it, it was better that they die.

Although Chu Feng did not act to save them, he continued to survey them with his Heaven's Eyes. Chu Feng wished to see exactly how they would meet their deaths.

"Mn?" Suddenly, Chu Feng's gaze changed slightly.

He was surprised to discover that the woman was crying. Tears were rolling down her eyes and fluttering everywhere as she ran for her life. Chu Feng seemed to be able to hear the sound of her weeping. That sort of sensation caused Chu Feng to feel soft-hearted.

Had it been before, for people like her, Chu Feng would not be touched even should they start crying. *novel/1n*

However, at this moment, when Chu Feng saw the tears filling that woman's face, he began to enter a mental struggle as to whether he should save them or not.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng could read the woman's lips as she cried. Chu Feng was able to tell that she was not crying for help, but instead urging.

That crafty and unruly woman was actually urging the people that had pledged their lives to protect her to escape without her.

This thawed Chu Feng's ice-cold heart.

Chu Feng felt that a woman like her should be extremely selfish, that she would not be someone who cared about the lives or deaths of others. However, it would appear that that woman was not like that.

"Sure enough, I am still unable to ignore those that need help."

Suddenly, Chu Feng stood up. He put the corpse of the ferocious beast away in his Cosmos Sack. Then, he turned into a ray of light and rapidly charged toward the direction of that group of people.

"Everyone, quickly, save yourselves! Do not concern yourselves with me! Quickly, run away!"

Sure enough, that woman was shouting for the others to escape. It was as Chu Feng had seen. She was urging the people that had pledged their lives to protect her to disregard her and escape.

"We shall protect young miss with our lives. All those behind, stop and hold them back!"

"Those in the front, quickly bring the young miss away! Do not fly in the sky, but run, run through the forest! It'll be easier to escape that way!"

However, the urging from that woman only caused her guards to be even more determined to protect her with their lives. One by one, they began to

fiercely fight against the ferocious beasts. Even if they were badly mutilated by the ferocious beasts, they would refuse to cower.

Those people were most definitely using their lives to buy time for their young miss.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2158 - Become My Bodyguard**

“Quickly, save yourselves. Do not throw away your lives for nothing because of me.”

Seeing that everyone was staking their lives for her, that woman started to cry even more desperately. Her sparkling tears and expression of self-blame did not seemed to be a disguise.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, a roar was heard. Following the roar, a rank one Half Martial Ancestor-level ferocious beast rushed out. It broke through the barricade of guards and, with its bloody mouth wide open, pounced toward that woman.

“On no!” Seeing this scene, the expressions of the guards all changed enormously. Even that woman was so frightened that her body started to tremble.

The strongest among the group of people they had here were peak Martial Emperors. Practically none of them could stop a rank one Half Martial Ancestor-level ferocious beast. All of them would end up dying here.

“Buzz~~~”

However, at this moment of imminent peril, an invisible power suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

That power was so strong that it was simply capable of reversing heaven and earth, toppling all living things. It was so strong that... it caused all of the ferocious beasts present to freeze on the spot.

Regardless of whether they were currently brandishing their sharp claws or leaping into the air, all of the ferocious beasts were frozen in place, as if petrified.

“What’s going on?”

“What is this?”

“The heck’s going on?”

The sudden change stunned all of the people present. They were all at a loss as to what was going on.

“Animals that dare harm people shall be killed.”

At the moment when the crowd was confused, a voice suddenly sounded. After that voice was heard, a boundless killing intent appeared.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

Suddenly, all of the ferocious beasts started to explode. They turned into puddles of blood. They were all killed by someone with a single strike.

“It’s you?”

At this moment, the woman revealed an incomparably shocked expression.

She had noticed the person that had attacked the ferocious beasts. However, she had never expected that person to be him.

That person was naturally Chu Feng.

“It’s actually him?”

Immediately after her, all the rest of the people present noticed Chu Feng too.

At the beginning, they were shocked, as they had not expected Chu Feng to be this powerful.

However, their shocked expressions soon turned into expressions of fear.

They had not forgotten their clash with Chu Feng several days ago. When recalling that clash now, they realized how unlucky they were.

If Chu Feng were to attack them now, all of them would definitely be killed.

Panic. Not to mention the guards, even that woman revealed panic in her eyes.

"I was the one that attacked you that day. It is not related to them. If you wish to kill someone, then kill me alone."

Surprisingly, at such a time, that woman actually stood before the rest of the people and planned to shoulder all the blame from that day.

"Tsk~~"

However, Chu Feng ignored them and snorted lightly. Then, he turned around and prepared to leave.

Seeing that Chu Feng did not plan to attack them, that woman summoned up her courage and asked, "Why did you save us?"

"You wish to know?" Chu Feng turned around.

"Mn," That woman nodded.

"A sudden impulse, that's all," Chu Feng left those words and prepared to leave again.

"Wait a moment," However, that woman rushed toward Chu Feng and asked, "I'm sorry. I was in the wrong earlier. I hope that you will not mind it."

"Heh..." Chu Feng laughed lightly. He said, "If a single sorry is all that was required, would you not look further into it should I kill your family and then tell you sorry afterward?"

"I..." That woman bit down on her lip tightly. She did not know how to respond.

"Forget about it, I am not a narrow-minded individual," Chu Feng did not wish to make things difficult on her. He casually waved his hand to express his intention of not planning to do anything to her.

"May I know your name?" That woman moved toward Chu Feng again.

"My name is none of your concern, for you and I are only strangers," Chu Feng said.



“If you refuse to tell me your name, I’ll address you as Lord Benefactor.”

“Lord Benefactor, I am called Tang Ying. I am from the Flowing Stream City’s Tang Family. I am sorry that I offended Lord Benefactor earlier. As Lord Benefactor has saved me, I must repay you.”

“If Lord Benefactor needs my assistance in the future, you can come to our Tang Family to find me. Regardless of what it might be, I will definitely assist you,” That woman said in a very sincere manner. Her attitude was completely opposite from the time when she first encountered Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly at the woman’s hundred-and-eighty-degree change in behavior.

Originally, he had planned to dismiss her. However, Chu Feng suddenly thought of his purpose in coming to this place: to find the Demon Subduing Spring.

It had been several days now. Yet, Chu Feng have yet to discover anything. It would not do for him to continue on like this.

Chu Feng had saw the map and knew that the Flowing Stream City was located not far away from this Radiance Immortal Mountain. Perhaps they would know about the location of the Demon Subduing Spring.

Thus, Chu Feng turned around and asked, “Do you know where the Demon Subduing Spring might be located in this Radiance Immortal Mountain?”

“Lord Benefactor, you’re searching for the Demon Subduing Spring Water?” Hearing those words, Tang Ying’s expression immediately turned to one of joy.

Seeing Tang Ying revealing an expression that seemed like she knew about it, Chu Feng continued to ask, “Mn, do you know where I can obtain it?”

“I do, I do. However, if you wish to know about it, you must first tell me your name,” Tang Ying said while putting her hands behind her back. *novel/1b/1n*

“Hey! Didn’t you say that you would help me regardless of what it might be? Is this how you treat your benefactor?” Chu Feng said with a frown.

“Of course I’ll help. But, Lord Benefactor, you should at the very least have some trust in me, no? It would be too narrow-minded for you to refuse to tell me even your name.”

“Unless... you are a narrow-minded individual, and are still angry from what happened several days ago.”

“I doubt that’s the case, right? After all, you’re a grown man, and thus should be a magnanimous individual, right?”

“Furthermore, although I attacked you, my attack did not reach you,” Tang Ying looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. Her smile was quite beautiful. However, that gaze of hers was simply one of contempt.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to frown even more. He discovered that this girl by the name of Tang Ying was not as simple as he thought her to be. She was most definitely someone hard to deal with.

However, for the sake of saving Wang Qiang, Chu Feng had no choice but to compromise with her. Thus, he said, “Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng, your name is quite pleasant to hear,” Tang Ying nodded in a satisfied manner. After hearing Chu Feng’s name, she smiled even more happily.

“Enough of this, tell me about the Demon Subduing Spring,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, I’ll address you as Chu Feng. Chu Feng, the Demon Subduing Spring that you are searching for can only be encountered by chance, and not sought after.”

“The Demon Subduing Spring is naturally in the Radiance Immortal Mountain. However, if you wish to search for it, it will all depend on luck. If you are lucky, you might find it just by turning around. If you are not lucky, you might not be able to find it even after searching for eight or ten years.”

“The reason for that is because the location of that Demon Subduing Spring is ever-changing,” Tang Ying said.

“It’s actually that difficult to find?” Chu Feng was able to tell that Tang Ying didn’t seem to be lying to him. However, it was precisely because she was not lying to him that Chu Feng became even more anxious.

After all, Wang Qiang had been captured by that demonic woman and could end up losing his life at any moment. Chu Feng did not have time to waste. Any moment he wasted could lead to Wang Qiang being killed by that demonic woman and becoming her meal.

At this moment, Chu Feng could only pray, pray that the demonic woman would think Wang Qiang to be too ugly, and eat the other men she had captured first, leaving Wang Qiang for last.

“However, there’s good news too. The people from our Tang Family have encountered the Demon Subduing Spring by chance before. Furthermore, we have collected a lot of the Demon Subduing Spring Water.”

“Thus, there is a lot of Demon Subduing Spring Water in our Tang Family.”

“If you want some, you can accompany me to the Tang Family. However, there will be a condition for that,” Tang Ying said.

“What is the condition?” Chu Feng asked.

“You must become my bodyguard and protect me,” Tang Ying said.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2159 - Ghostfiend Beast**

“Is this how you repay your benefactor? If I had known this was what you were going to do, I would’ve let the ferocious beasts eat you alive,” Chu Feng said in a displeased manner.

He felt that since Tang Ying’s family possessed Demon Subduing Spring Water, she should be giving him some should she really want to repay him. Yet, she had actually brought forth another condition. Her actions were truly too excessive.

“Aiyah, don’t get angry. I’m not asking for much. You merely need to protect me for ten years,” Tang Ying said.

“Don’t even think about it,” Chu Feng said.

“Then five years.”

“One year.”

“Half a year.”

“One month. One month should be fine, no?”

“You must know that it’s the Demon Subduing Spring Water that I’m talking about here. It’s extremely precious. If you do not do something that would assist me, I will not have any excuse to ask my father for it,” Tang Ying said with a difficult expression.

“Fine, I’ll agree to it. However, I will only protect you for a month, and not a day more.”

“Furthermore, you must bring me to retrieve the Demon Subduing Spring Water right now. I need it urgently,” For the sake of Wang Qiang’s safety, Chu Feng decided to compromise.

“Haha, great, this is truly great.”

“But, you must wait a moment. After my Third Brother returns, we can go together,” Tang Ying said.

“How long must I wait? I do not have too much time to waste,” Chu Feng said.

“We already sent out the signal for help when we were being hunted by the ferocious beasts earlier. I believe that they will soon arrive,” Tang Ying said.

“If that’s the case, I’ll wait for a bit,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes.

He was actually planning to comprehend the way of martial cultivation, and see if he could attempt to reach a breakthrough the bottleneck. After all, as long as he broke through the bottleneck, he would reach a breakthrough in his cultivation, becoming a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

Although Chu Feng was already a Half Martial Ancestor now, he knew that a rank one Half Martial Ancestor would not amount to much in the Outer World. As such, he must quickly reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

“You all, take this medicine. It will be able to cure your injuries,” Right at the moment when Chu Feng planned to attempt to comprehend the way of martial

cultivation, he discovered that Tang Ying was treating the injuries of her guards.

As those people had been injured by ferocious beasts, their injuries were absolutely not limited to superficial wounds. The way Chu Feng saw it, even though the medicinal pellets that Tang Ying took out were decent quality medicine, they were not sufficient to heal those people's injuries quickly.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng extended his finger, pointed to the distance and made a circular motion with it. He drew a circle on the distant ground, pointed to it and said, “All of you, enter that circle.”

“Eh... sir, w-what are you planning to do?” Hearing those words, the guards were startled.

Although Chu Feng could be considered to be someone in their camp now, they were still unable to accept it that easily. As such, they were still on guard against Chu Feng.

“Aiya, just do as you're ordered. Go, go, go, don't dillydally around,” Tang Ying said.

Those people seemed to not dare to go against Tang Ying. One by one, they entered the circle Chu Feng had drawn on the ground.

“Chu Feng, exactly what are you planning to do?” Then, Tang Ying asked curiously.

However, Chu Feng ignored her, instead looking directly to those people.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After all the people entered the circle, Chu Feng's hands began to change in rapid succession. Many rays of boundless spirit power began to fly toward the circle, entering it and forming a spirit formation.

“Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit Power?”

After seeing the spirit power that Chu Feng had unleashed, the crowd present were all stunned.

However, Chu Feng did not bother with them. Instead, he wholeheartedly continued to set up his spirit formation. It was a healing spirit formation.

Being within that healing spirit formation, those people's badly mutilated bodies were soon healed. Furthermore, their pain also completely disappeared. It could be said that their injuries had been completely healed.

"Done," Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and that spirit formation vanished like smoke in thin air.

At this moment, the people inside that circle were all healthy and energetic. They possessed even more vigor than when before they had been injured.

"Many thanks," At this moment, those people hurriedly clasped their fists to express their thanks. They all had slightly ashamed expressions on their faces.

After all, they were on guard against Chu Feng earlier when Chu Feng was actually doing so to treat them.

"Wow, Chu Feng, you're amazing. Not only is your martial cultivation strong, you're actually also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Amazing, you are simply my idol. For me to have such a powerful bodyguard, I have truly picked up a treasure!" Tang Ying ran toward Chu Feng and shouted excitedly.

"Can you quiet down?" Chu Feng cast an eye at her. Then, he added, "At most an hour. If your brother does not come in an hour, you must bring me to your Tang Family."

"Okay, okay, okay, that's no problem," Tang Ying said with a beaming smile. After knowing that Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, her impression of Chu Feng grew even more favorable. In fact, there were even traces of adoration in her gaze.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Not long after, over a hundred figures flew over from the sky.

These were all people that Chu Feng had seen before; they were the people from the Tang Family that Chu Feng had run into several days ago. Merely, this group of people were composed of a lot of experts. Practically all of the

Half Martial Ancestor-level experts were in that group. Those two old rank six Half Martial Ancestors were also present.

“Little sister, you have truly scared me to death. When I saw that distress signal that you sent out, I thought that something had happened to you.”

“Eh? Why are there so few people? Where did they all go?” The black-haired robust man was evidently the third brother that Tang Ying had spoken of. After he approached them, he immediately started to question her nonstop.

Suddenly, his gaze landed on Chu Feng. After he discovered Chu Feng, boundless killing intent immediately surged forth.

He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “So it was you!”

“Kill him!!!”

Once his order was spoken, those Half Martial Ancestor-level experts all unleashed their weapons and prepared to attack Chu Feng.

Upon seeing that, Tang Ying hurriedly said, “Big brother, what are you doing?! He is my savior!”

“What?!” Hearing those words, not only was that robust man surprised, the others that had just arrived with him were also surprised.

“Big brother, he indeed saved us. Furthermore, he has become my bodyguard,” Tang Ying said.

“Little sister, what are you talking about? Why am I unable to make sense of what you’re saying?” That robust man revealed an expression of confusion.

Then, Tang Ying began to explain all that had occurred to that robust man.

Merely, even after he learned of what had happened, the impression that robust man had of Chu Feng did not change. There was still hostility in his gaze. Furthermore, he said to Tang Ying, “Little sister, our Tang Family is currently under special circumstances. How could we bring such an unknown stranger to our Tang Family?”

“Big brother, isn’t our Tang Family raising an army right now? Haven’t those two people also been invited to our Tang Family?” Tang Ying pointed to the two old rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

“Nonsense! Who are these two seniors, and who is that boy? How could he possibly compare to these two seniors?” The robust man spoke with a low voice. From his words, one could tell that he looked down on Chu Feng deeply.

“Humph,” The two old men also uttered light snorts. It was as if they were agreeing to that robust man’s words.

However, as Chu Feng only cared about saving Wang Qiang, he simply did not take their words to heart. Instead, he stood up and said, “Hey, Tang Ying, since your brother has arrived, we can go now, right?”

“Go? Where?” The robust man spoke with an unpleasant tone.

“Big brother, I have already promised Chu Feng that we will immediately set off for the Tang Family after you arrived,” Tang Ying explained.

“That won’t do. We have yet to capture the Ghostfiend Beast. We cannot return like this,” The robust man said.

“Why are you all trying to capture that Ghostfiend Beast?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is none of your concern,” The robust man spoke coldly.

“Big brother, how could you speak to Chu Feng in such a manner? He is someone that saved me,” Tang Ying cast a side eye at her brother. Then, she said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, we have actually come here with the intention of capturing the Ghostfiend Beast.”

“I know that. I’m asking why you all want to capture that Ghostfiend Beast,” Chu Feng said.

“To cure my father. My father is seriously injured. Only the Ghostfiend Beasts’ bone powder can cure him,” Tang Ying said.

“In that case, does it mean that as long as that Ghostfiend Beast is captured, we will be able to return to your Tang Family immediately?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right,” Tang Ying nodded.



“Tell me the characteristics of that Ghostfiend Beast,” Chu Feng said.

In response, Tang Ying hurriedly began to explain what she knew of the Ghostfiend Beast to Chu Feng.

After hearing what Tang Ying said, Chu Feng immediately revealed a joyous expression. Actually, he had already guessed that the so-called Ghostfiend Beast that Tang Ying and the others were talking about might be the strange ferocious beast he had killed.

After Tang Ying explained its characteristics and appearance to him, Chu Feng was certain that the strange ferocious beast he had killed was that Ghostfiend Beast.

“That makes it simple. We can leave for the Tang Family now,” As Chu Feng spoke, he placed his hand on his Cosmos Sack.

“Yoh, based on your words, you seem to be indicating that the Ghostfiend Beast is easy to capture? It is not that I am looking down on you. But, with your mere cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, a single spit from the Ghostfiend Beast would be able to drown you alive,” The robust man mocked Chu Feng.

The two old rank six Half Martial Ancestors also snorted disdainfully as they looked to Chu Feng with gazes of contempt.

“Oh?” Chu Feng was not angered by those words. Instead, he sat on the ground and said, “In that case, go and have it spit a mouthful of saliva to drown me to death.”

“What did you say? Say it again?” The robust man thought that Chu Feng was provoking him and became enraged. He had the appearance of wanting to attack Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored that man’s words. Instead, he retrieved a Cosmos Sack from his waist, and tossed it upward. As light flickered from the Cosmos Sack, a loud “boom” was heard. Then, something crashed onto the ground.

Upon seeing the thing that was on the ground, all the people present, including even the robust man and the two old men, revealed stunned, tongue-tied expressions.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.

There will be early access to future chapters :).

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2160 - Terrifying Everyone - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2160 - Terrifying Everyone**

### **Chapter 2160 - Terrifying Everyone**

Upon seeing the silhouette on the ground, the crowd all blurted out together, "Ghostfiend Beast?!"

They all managed to recognize that it was the Ghostfiend Beast that they had been painstakingly searching for.

"D-d-did you kill it?" The robust man asked while looking at Chu Feng with an astonished expression.

"Who else then? You?" Chu Feng sneered as he cast an eye at the robust man. Chu Feng had managed to return all the mockery from that robust man with merely that one sentence.

Hearing those words, the robust man's expression changed to one of awkwardness.

After all, he knew very well that he would not be able to kill the Ghostfiend Beast with the strength that he possessed.

"Wow, Chu Feng, aren't you too powerful? Do you know how much effort we have put into capturing that Ghostfiend Beast? Even when senior Luo Tian and Luo Di encountered the Ghostfiend Beast, it still managed to escape from them multiple times."

Tang Ying had an excited expression. As for the Luo Tian and Luo Di that she spoke of, they were naturally the twin rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level old men.

"Humph," Hearing those words, the two brothers snorted coldly. Evidently, they were displeased by Tang Ying's words.

Then, that Luo Tian even said to Chu Feng, "Little friend, one must be honest."

"What are you implying?" Chu Feng asked.

"You know very well what I'm implying. You know very well that the Ghostfiend Beast is not only a rank four Half Martial Ancestor, it also possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. Its true battle power is on par with rank six Half Martial Ancestors."

"As for you, you are merely a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Although it is very inconceivable that you would be able to obtain that level of cultivation at your age, that is not a cultivation level where you can kill the Ghostfiend Beast."

"Tell the truth, who was it that killed the Ghostfiend Beast, and where did you manage to find the corpse of that Ghostfiend Beast?" Luo Tian asked with a cold tone. Earlier, he had completely disregarded Chu Feng. However, after Chu Feng took out that Ghostfiend Beast, he completely viewed Chu Feng as his enemy.

"That's right. Although he is strong, that Ghostfiend Beast is stronger. It is impossible for him to have killed that Ghostfiend Beast," At the same time, the others present also managed to react. One by one, they expressed their disbelief that Chu Feng had killed the Ghostfiend Beast.

At this moment, Chu Feng, who had been sitting on the ground, slowly stood up. He gently patted away the dust on his buttocks, and then began to walk toward the twin old men, Luo Tian and Luo Di.

When Chu Feng was less than two meters from the brothers, he stopped and said, "I collected this corpse in the Radiance Immortal Mountain. As for the person that killed that Ghostfiend Beast... he stands before you."

"Hahaha, little friend, it is truly not that I am looking down on you. Rather, your strength is clearly present before us. There is an enormous disparity between your strength and that of the Ghostfiend Beast."

"It is not that us two brothers do not believe you. Instead, go and ask the crowd present; who would possibly believe you?" Luo Tian and Luo Di burst into loud laughter. Their laughter was filled with mockery.

“Hahaha...” Following their laughter, the people from the Tang Family that had arrived late all burst into loud laughter.

“Zzzz~~~”

However, right at this moment, lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes. When the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared, Chu Feng’s aura increased from rank one Half Martial Ancestor to rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Immediately after that, a loud ‘bang’ was heard as a powerful oppressive might swept forth from within Chu Feng. That oppressive might directly smashed toward Luo Tian and Luo Di.

Due to the fact that they were so close to one another, and Chu Feng’s oppressive might was so powerful, the two old men were directly struck by Chu Feng’s oppressive might, and knocked several meters away before they even managed to react.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Like arrows shot out from a bow, the two aged bodies were shot forth explosively. They pierced through all the boulders and trees that they crashed into, leaving a complete mess behind them.

However, even with this being the case, the two old men were still knocked several hundred thousands of meters away before crashing to a stop.

“Heavens!!!”

This sudden scene caused everyone to open their mouths wide with shock. When the crowd looked back to Chu Feng, not to mention the others, even the robust man who had looked down on Chu Feng earlier revealed a very serious expression.

After all, those two old men were actual rank six Half Martial Ancestors. However, they were knocked flying by Chu Feng’s oppressive might.

Furthermore, the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings on Chu Feng’s body astonished the crowd even more.

While no one recognized Chu Feng's Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings in the Holy Land of Martialism, this was not true in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Practically everyone knew that the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, as well as that heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, were the symbols of people from Heavenly Clans. They were abilities that only the wielders of Heavenly Bloodlines possessed.

How powerful were the Heavenly Clans? In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, all of the Heavenly Clans were huge monsters ruling over a region.

It would not be an exaggeration to say that regardless of how powerful the Tang Family might be, when compared to Heavenly Clans, they would be nothing more than little brooks against vast seas; they were simply incapable.

It was precisely because of that that the people from the Tang Family were this startled. Not to mention Chu Feng's heaven-defying battle power, merely his background was already capable of terrifying them endlessly.

At this moment, many of the people from the Tang Family were already shivering in fear with their legs gone soft.

After all, they had planned to kill Chu Feng earlier. Yet, he was someone from a Heavenly Clan, someone that they could not afford to offend.

"Bastard brat! Today, this old man shall dismember your body to ten thousand pieces!"

Suddenly, a roar filled with overwhelming anger sounded. At the same time, boundless killing intent swept forth, covering this region.

It was the twin old men, Luo Tian and Luo Di. They were rapidly rushing over. Before they even arrive, their voices and killing intents have already arrived.

Although Chu Feng's oppressive might had beaten them back, he had merely beaten them back, and not really injured them.

Thus, although they might not be completely uninjured, they had only suffered light wounds.

However, to be knocked flying by a member of the younger generation, and for it to have been done before their employers on top of that, caused the two old men to feel completely humiliated. As such, they wanted to teach Chu Feng a lesson.

“If you wish to fight, I do not mind. However, let me tell you this beforehand. I do not have the time to bother with you. If you insist on making me fight, I will do so with the intention to kill,” Chu Feng spoke coldly. At the same time, intense killing intent emerged in his eyes.

“What an arrogant brat. You dare boast this shamelessly? Very well, let us experience what abilities you might possess. We shall see how you will kill us.”

The voices of Luo Tian and Luo Di sounded once again. At this moment, their voices did not sound from afar. Instead, they had already approached Chu Feng, and were in his and the crowd’s line of sight.

“That is?!!!”

However, when they saw the current Chu Feng, Luo Tian and Luo Di were immediately stunned, as if they had been petrified.

Not only did the two men immediately retrieve their overwhelming killing intent, the two of them also revealed astonished and terrified expressions.

Someone from a Heavenly Clan. If the Tang Family feared them, then the two brothers also feared them.

“Puu,” Seeing this scene, Tang Ying hurriedly covered her mouth with her hand. She had nearly burst out laughing.

While Luo Tian and Luo Di were people that they had hired using a great amount of wealth, those two old farts were extremely arrogant. They could be said to consider everyone beneath themselves. Those two old farts would refuse to even look at her and her third brother face-to-face.

However, at this moment, after the two old men saw Chu Feng, they actually revealed gazes of fear.

Furthermore, the two old men had been shouting that they would teach Chu Feng a lesson, that they would dismember Chu Feng to ten thousand pieces.

Yet, at this moment, they were filled with cowardice. The way Tang Ying saw it, this was simply too funny.

“What’s wrong? Why aren’t you attacking me?” Chu Feng said without a trace of politeness.

“I...” The brothers Luo Tian and Luo Di were at a loss as to what to say. However, they did not dare to say anything like teaching Chu Feng a lesson again.

Humiliating. Even without others pointing it out, Luo Tian and Luo Di both knew that they had been humiliated right now.

However, there was nothing they could do about it. After all, the two of them truly did not dare to offend the people of the Heavenly Clans.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2161 - Distinguished Guest Treatment**

“Aiya, this is a misunderstanding, truly a misunderstanding.”

“I truly never expected Brother Chu Feng to be this powerful. It would appear that the Ghostfiend Beast was indeed killed by Brother Chu Feng.”

“Earlier, it was my fault. I have no eyes, and wrongly accused Brother Chu Feng. I shall apologize to Brother Chu Feng here,” The robust man saw the awkward situation and stood forward to try to mediate the situation.

However, even though he was nodding and bowing to apologize to Chu Feng, Chu Feng was still in no mood to bother with him.

“Brother Chu Feng, I am called Tang Yong. I am the third young master of the Tang Family. To be able to get to know Brother Chu Feng here today, it is truly a honor for me, Tang Yong, and our Tang Family.”

“I hope Brother Chu Feng would not take offense at my rudeness earlier,” That Tang Yong’s skin was extra thick. Even though Chu Feng was ignoring him, he still continued on.

His current expression was completely different from before. Seeing that eager smile on his face caused Chu Feng to feel disgusted. Someone like him was simply too fake.

If it wasn't for Wang Qiang, Chu Feng would truly not want to deal with these people. However, for the sake of Wang Qiang, Chu Feng could only force himself to reluctantly deal with them.

Although he felt surprised by it too, Chu Feng began to feel that the person he had the worst impression of at the beginning, that Tang Ying, appeared to be a lot more favorable compared to the rest of them.

"Can we return to the Tang Family now?" Chu Feng continued to ignore Tang Yong and asked Tang Ying.

"Third brother, can we go?" Tang Ying did not dare to make her own decision. Thus, she turned to Tang Yong.

"Of course, let's set off right away."

"Merely, this Ghostfiend Beast. Brother Chu Feng, what sort of price are you planning to sell it to us for?" Tang Yong asked. Perhaps he might have tried to seize the Ghostfiend Beast from Chu Feng earlier. However, he would not dare to do so now, and could only offer to purchase it from Chu Feng.

"You all only need the bones, right?" Chu Feng asked.

"Ehh..." Tang Yong was at first startled by those words. The reason for that was because, according to his knowledge, although Ghostfiend Beasts were hard to find, only their bones were precious. Other than the bones, the rest of the Ghostfiend Beast was simply worthless.

Although he did not understand why Chu Feng would ask such a useless question, Tang Yong still smiled and nodded. "Yes, we only needed the bones."

"Then I shall give them to you all for free," Chu Feng said.

"H-How could we accept such an enormous...?" At this moment, not to mention Tang Yong, even Tang Ying, Luo Tian, Luo Di and the rest of the people from the Tang Family had an enormous change in their expressions.



“I said that I’m going to gift the bones to you all. If you think that you cannot accept it for free, then go ahead and present me with some more Demon Subduing Spring Water.”

“However... the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast must be handed to be in perfect condition. Understand?” Chu Feng said.

“Yes, that’s absolutely doable,” Tang Yong nodded his head repeatedly. At the same time, the rest of the people from the Tang Family also revealed smiles on their faces.

They themselves knew best how much their Tang Family needed the Ghostfiend Beast’s bones right now.

If Chu Feng were to attempt to profit from their misfortune and demand a sky-high price for the bones, their Tang Family would still be willing to accept his demands should they be within their capabilities.

Yet, Chu Feng actually only wanted Demon Subduing Spring Water. They had truly never expected this.

Afterward, Chu Feng and everyone else began to proceed toward the Tang Family.

The city that the Tang Family was located in was much larger than Red Sparrow’s City. At the same time, it was also much more majestic and flourishing.

As for the Tang Family, they occupied half of this vast city. The region that the Tang Family occupied was all sealed off with spirit formations and tightly guarded. Ordinary people were simply unable to set foot in there.

Furthermore, this Tang Family could truly be said to possess countless experts. If it were to be placed in the Holy Land of Martialism, practically no one other than the blind old man and the other Chu Clan’s servants would be a match for them.

However, Chu Feng was able to sense that although the Tang Family was powerful, they could not be considered to be a huge monster in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They could only be considered as a family that occupied a region.

From this, it was no wonder that Dark Hall's Hall Master looked down on the people in the Holy Land of Martialism like he had. It was true that the Holy Land of Martialism simply could not compare to even the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As Chu Feng began to meet more and more people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he began to realize what was meant by the saying 'beyond the heaven are higher heavens, beyond the person are stronger people.' n/-Ⓣ)(v.-e.-l-.b./l-.n

After arriving in the Tang Family, Chu Feng handed the Ghostfiend Beast to the people of the Tang Family. Furthermore, he had gotten to know that Tang Ying's father, the master of the Tang Family, was seriously injured, and was waiting for the bones of the Ghostfiend Beast to cure his injury.

After finding out that Chu Feng was an extraordinary individual, the people from the Tang Family naturally treated Chu Feng extremely well. They did not dare to neglect him in the slightest.

However, Chu Feng was not fond of noise. Thus, he drove all of the servants that were dispatched to serve him out. However, he was unable to drive out Tang Ying no matter how hard he tried.

"Chu Feng, I truly never expected that you were someone from a Heavenly Clan, that you were a wielder of Heavenly Bloodline."

"Wow, it is no wonder you're this powerful. I've seen many people with Heavenly Bloodlines before. But, this is still the first time I've met a member of the younger generation as powerful as you."

"In your clan, you must be an extraordinary person too, right? Could it be that you are the strongest member of the younger generation in your clan?"

"Oh, that's right, Chu Feng, exactly which Heavenly Clan do you belong to?"

"You wouldn't be from the Chu Heavenly Clan, right? Could it be that you're someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan that was dispatched to train in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?" Tang Ying chattered nonstop beside Chu Feng. The gaze with which this girl was looking at Chu Feng was filled with even greater adoration now.

Chu Feng ignored her. His eyes were closed as he continued to comprehend how to break through the bottleneck to rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

“Haha, I’m joking with you. I know that you definitely wouldn’t be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. If you were, you would’ve mentioned it already.”

“You should be from one of the other Heavenly Clans, right? But, which one though? You should be from the Ying Heavenly Clan right? After all, the Ying Heavenly Clan is the closest to this place,” Although Chu Feng was ignoring Tang Ying, Tang Ying continued to talk to herself nonstop.

“Is the Ying Heavenly Clan very close to this place?” Chu Feng opened his eyes and looked to Tang Ying. While Chu Feng was not interested in other things, he was very interested in the Ying Heavenly Clan.

After all, Chu Feng knew that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master that had nearly destroyed the entire Holy Land of Martialism was from the Ying Heavenly Clan.

“They could be considered to be the Heavenly Clan closest to this place,” After Tang Ying said that, her expression changed. She asked, “Eh, in that case, you’re not from the Ying Heavenly Clan then? Then which Heavenly Clan are you from?”

“Mn, let me guess,” Tang Ying placed her hands behind her back and began to waver left and right. She entered deep contemplation.

“Fifth Young Miss, the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat that Lord Chu Feng requested is here,” Right at this moment, a message sounded from outside the palace hall.

“Good, bring it in,” Tang Ying ordered. Then, someone pushed in a large basin of meat.

“This should have been prepared by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, right?” Chu Feng asked. Looking at that large basin of Ghostfiend Beast meat, he was able to tell that it was most definitely the work of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

The reason for that was because even Half Martial Ancestors would not be able to cut the meat this delicately. Although the bones had been removed, the meat had not been harmed in the slightest.

It was a bone removing technique. Although it appeared to be simple, it was actually very hard to accomplish. It was something that only a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist would be able to accomplish.

“That’s right, for the sake of curing my father’s injury, we have invited the assistance of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“It is that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist that declared my father’s illness to be very difficult to treat, and that he could only provide treatment after father swallowed a powder ground from a Ghostfiend Beast’s bones,” Tang Ying explained.

“You needed to invite a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist? A power like your Tang Family does not possess a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Chu Feng was a bit surprised. He had originally thought that the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist was from the Tang Family.

However, after hearing what Tang Ying said, it was clear that this was not the case.

However, if a power like the Tang Family was placed in the Holy Land of Martialism, they would be an major existence that not even the Ancient Era’s Elves could match up to. As such, how could they not even have a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?

Could it be that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists were as rare in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm as they were in the Holy Land of Martialism?

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2162 - The Tang Family’s Great Enemy**

“Of course. All of the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists are extremely conceited. It is generally very difficult to request their assistance. To have one join our Tang Family would be even harder.”

“As for someone like you who became a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it is even more rare.”

“Chu Feng, you are the strongest person I’ve seen in my life; you are simply my idol.”

“Exactly how did you cultivate to become this powerful?” Tang Ying asked with an expression of admiration.

“Am I allowed to light a fire here?” Chu Feng asked.

“Light a fire? That’s no problem at all. What is it you’re planning to do?” Tang Ying asked.

“Roast meat to eat,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, a fire spirit formation was ignited in the palace hall.

Then, Chu Feng clenched his fist and formed a fork with martial power.

Chu Feng pierced the fork into the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat, sat before the fire spirit formation and began to roast the meat.

This fire spirit formation was one used especially for roasting meat. This, the intensity of the fire was very fierce. Placing the meat on top of it, the meat would be cooked very fast. However, it would not be charred.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? You couldn’t possibly be thinking about eating that Ghostfiend Beast’s meat, right?” Tang Ying asked with a shocked expression.

“Why else would I be roasting it? Do you want to have a try? However, you are only allowed a single small bite at most,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

It was not that Chu Feng was stingy. Rather, the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast contained Natural Energies. Logically, Chu Feng would not spare a single bite. He was already very generous to be willing to have Tang Ying a small bite of the meat.

“Chu Feng, are you crazy? The meat of the Ghostfiend Beast cannot be eaten. It contains a deadly poison,” Seeing that Chu Feng was truly planning to eat the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat, Tang Ying was so frightened that her face turned pale.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng examined the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat carefully. It was only then that he discovered that the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast really did contain poison. Furthermore, the poison was hidden very deep, and was extremely toxic.

However, after Chu Feng discovered the poison, he still opened his mouth and took a large bite of the meat before beginning to chew it.

“Holy mother!!!”

“You’re really eating it!!!”

At this moment, Tang Ying, who stood beside Chu Feng, was terrified by him. She grabbed her hair wildly.

As for Chu Feng, the speed at which he ate the meat was very fast. In merely a short moment, the large basin filled with meat all entered Chu Feng’s stomach.

The current Chu Feng was no longer an ordinary human. No aspect of him could be compared to ordinary humans. As long as he wished to eat it, not to mention a basin of meat, even if it was several tens of elephants, he would still be able to eat all of it.

After eating all the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast, Chu Feng felt that the Natural Energies in his dantian had become much more ample. Although it was not enough for him to break through to rank four Half Martial Ancestor, it was not very far away from it.

Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng revealed a satisfied smile.

“Y-Y-You’re actually fine?” Seeing that Chu Feng was not only completely unharmed after eating the meat, but his complexion even grew rosy, Tang Ying opened her mouth wide in shock.

“It’s truly delicious. It was your loss to not eat it.”

“However, you can’t eat it even if you wish to do so now, since it’s all gone now,” Chu Feng wiped his mouth while smiling mischievously.

“Heavens, you are simply abnormal! The meat of the Ghostfiend Beast is extremely poisonous. How could you be fine? Could it be that you possess a

body immune to poison?" Tang Ying looked as if she had seen a monster as she began to size up Chu Feng.

"Enough of the nonsense. I've handed the Ghostfiend Beast to you all. Now, where's my Demon Subduing Spring Water? Why is it still not here?" Chu Feng asked. After all, saving Wang Qiang had been Chu Feng's goal the entire time.

"The Demon Subduing Spring Water is a bit special. It need to be contained in special containers. Thus, it is slow going to retrieve it."

"Furthermore, I know that you most likely want the Demon Subduing Spring Water to take care of that demonic woman in the Darknight Ghost Forest. Our Tang Family possesses a special artifact to take care of it. It would be very difficult for the demonic woman to resist should you use the Demon Subduing Spring Water with the special artifact."

"Merely, it is even more time-consuming to fill that artifact with Demon Subduing Spring Water. Just wait patiently for a bit longer. I would not deceive you," Tang Ying said.

Chu Feng felt that Tang Ying really didn't seem to be deceiving him.

Furthermore, after the Tang Family learned of his identity as a person from the Heavenly Clans, they acted extremely respectful toward him, and did not dare to offend him.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the rest of the Tang Family would also not try to deceive him. As such, he asked, "Tell me, who it is that your Tang Family managed to offend?"

"How did you know that?" Hearing those words, Tang Ying's eyes went wide open. She expressed an expression of shock.

"How complicated could it be? Your city is extremely huge. I can tell that there are a lot of other powers and ordinary families in this city other than your Tang Family."

"However, on the way here, I noticed that other than some individual powers, many of the powers and ordinary commoners in the city have disappeared. Furthermore, they seemed to have just left not long ago."

“Furthermore, your Tang Family is concealed within your formations. Not only have you all activated all of the defensive formations and spirit formations, the people of your Tang Family also have nervous expressions. It is as if a great enemy is about to arrive.”

“Furthermore, other than the people from your Tang Family, you all have also invited over a lot of outsiders. Furthermore, they are all expert martial cultivators.”

“All of this signifies that your Tang Family is facing a great enemy. Likely, someone will come to invade soon.”

“Am I right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Wow, Chu Feng, you are simply amazing. You actually managed to discover all that just through observation?” Tang Ying revealed an amazed expression.

“After I finish what I must do, I will abide by my promise and become your bodyguard for a month.”

“Since I am going to protect you, I must first know the situation that your Tang Family is facing right now, as well as who exactly it is that your Tang Family has offended.”

“Thus, exactly what happened? Tell me the truth,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s the Cao Family. Like our Tang Family, the Cao Family is a subsidiary power to Luyang’s Pavilion,” Tang Ying spoke honestly.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart was startled. The reason for that was because the Pavilion Master of that Luyang’s Pavilion was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, Chu Feng was particularly interested in that Luyang’s Pavilion. After all, that was the first person from the Chu Heavenly Clan that he had seen since his arrival in the Outer World.

However, Chu Feng did not interrupt Tang Ying, nor did he reveal any change in expression. Instead, he continued to listen.

“Our Tang Family and the Cao Family both govern over a region. Originally, our two families always minded our own business. Furthermore, due to the fact that we were neighboring powers, our relationship was pretty decent too. We were friends of hundreds of years.”



“However, after Luyang’s Pavilion came to rule over this place, an enormous change occurred. Due to the fact that Luyang’s Pavilion demands a lot of tribute every year, our Tang Family and the Cao Family ended up having constant friction with one another for the sake of contesting for benefits.”

“Especially the past two years. Our Tang Family and the Cao Family have become absolute enemies,” Tang Ying said.

“Wait a moment, didn’t you say that your Tang Family and that Cao Family were both subsidiary powers to Luyang’s Pavilion? If that’s the case, why would Luyang’s Pavilion let your two families have this sort of friction without doing anything?” Chu Feng asked.

“Luyang’s Pavilion has never once bothered itself with these things. They only care about their own interests. As for their subsidiary powers, it is a battle for the survival of the fittest. They have never once involved themselves with the battles between their subsidiary powers,” Tang Ying explained.

After hearing that, Chu Feng’s gaze grew deep. His impression of Luyang’s Pavilion grew worse yet again. However, he did not express that. Instead, he said, “Continue.”

“With the relationship between our Tang Family and the Cao Family having worsened to this degree, our friendship of many years has long since been cast aside. We have become genuinely hostile powers.”

“However, the most disgusting aspect is that our Tang Family and the Cao Family already set up an arranged marriage for me before I was even born.”

“I am to be married to the Cao Family’s youngest son.”

“However, no one expected that the Cao Family’s youngest son would be retarded at birth. No matter how they tried to cure him, they were unable to do so. As such, how could my father be willing to marry me off to him?”

“Furthermore, as we are already hostile powers, my father decided to meet with the Cao Family to withdraw the marriage agreement.”

“However, none of us expected that the Cao Family would declare war against our Tang Family with the reason being that we broke our promise of marriage.”

“They had already planned and schemed for this battle for a very long time. Before they even declared war, they had already invited many outside experts. Thus, our Tang Family was caught completely unprepared.”

“When we discovered that the situation was amiss, it was already too late.”

“Right now, although the overall strength of our Tang Family and the Cao Family does not differ by much, it is the Cao Family that holds the advantage. If we were to truly enter a battle, it would definitely be our Tang Family that would end up losing.”

“As my father does not wish to be defeated, he began to invite experts from all over. Several days ago, he went to ask one of his good friends to lend us a hand.”

“However, never did we expect that his good friend had already been bribed by the Cao Family. He actually joined hands with the Cao Family and mounted a sneak attack against my father.”

“That is why my father ended up being seriously injured,” As Tang Ying mentioned this matter, she gnashed her teeth angrily.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2163 - The Situation Turning Bad**

“Is your father the strongest person in your Tang Family?” Chu Feng asked.

“My father is a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. He is indeed the strongest person in our Tang Family,” Tang Ying said.

“Your father is the strongest person in your Tang Family. Yet, he was injured from the sneak attack. Thus, why did the Cao Family not seize this opportunity to attack your Tang Family? Why would they give your father time to heal his injuries?” Chu Feng asked in a very puzzled manner.

“It’s my father’s good friend. Perhaps his conscience got to him after he injured my father and was unable to continue.”

"It was him who pleaded to the Cao Family to spare my father. Furthermore, he also requested for time for my father to heal his injuries. Else, he declared that he would fight for our Tang Family instead."

"However, should the Tang Family present my father time to heal his injuries, he would no longer involve himself in this matter," Tang Ying said.

"It's actually this melodramatic?" Black lines ran down Chu Feng's face.

"That's right, it's very melodramatic. However, it remains that if it wasn't for my father's good friend, my father would've already been killed by the Cao Family that day," Tang Ying said.

"This thing is interesting. It is truly quite a drama," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he asked, "Then, what is the length of time the Cao Family gave your father to heal his injuries?"

"We still have another month," Tang Ying said. ~~nove/ll~~(In

"Then there should be enough time," Chu Feng said.

"Enough time for what?" Tang Ying asked.

"I must go and eliminate that demonic woman first. However, since I've promised to be your bodyguard for a month, I must protect you."

"This is especially true when your Tang Family is faced with your great enemy. At that time, you should be in greater danger. As your bodyguard, how can I not be by your side?"

"However, if it's a month, I should be able to finish eliminating the demonic woman, and then come to protect you," Chu Feng said to Tang Ying. Chu Feng was someone who abided by his promises. As such, he would definitely do as he had promised.

"Chu Feng... I..." Suddenly, Tang Ying's expression changed. She started to suck in her lips. It was as if she was feeling some sort of grievance.

"What's wrong?" Chu Feng asked.

"I am sorry. When I first saw you, I deliberately tried to pick a quarrel with you," Tang Ying said.

"I know," Chu Feng said with a smile, "Even a fool could tell that you were deliberately picking a quarrel with me. After all, you could have travelled through any region in that vast sky. Yet, you insisted on traveling where I was standing."

"That is why I need to apologize to you. I picked a quarrel against you for no reason at all. Yet, not only did you not hold a grudge, you even saved me and the many guards of our Tang Family."

"As you are my savior, my benefactor, I should have repaid your kindness unconditionally. However, when you mentioned that you wanted to find the Demon Subduing Spring, I brought forth conditions, and demanded that you be my bodyguard."

"Not only did you agree to it, you are actually also this diligent towards it, and are thinking about my safety."

"But, I have clearly treated you like that, yet you have still treated me this good. I... I... wuu... I am truly a wretch."

As Tang Ying said those words, tears were already present in the corners of her eyes. Then, like water from the Yellow River, the tears were unstoppable, breaking through the dams and surging out from her eyes.

In the end, Tang Ying was still only a girl that had just reached the age of adulthood. However, her temperament was still only that of a girl.

It was because there were not many people that had treated her with sincerity in her life that she ended up being moved to tears when she encountered someone like Chu Feng.

"Hey, hey, hey, don't act like this. Anyone that doesn't know what happened might think that I did something to you," Chu Feng urged with a smile.

"Wuu!!!" However, Tang Ying started to cry even louder.

"Stop crying. If you continue to cry, I'm going to act," Chu Feng suddenly said.

"Act, what?" Tang Ying started at Chu Feng with a bewildered expression.

"Your Tang Family possesses all those experts. What if they decide to put me to death from anger?"

"If I had truly done something to you, my death would be justified. However, I have not done anything. Tell me, would my death be wrong or not?"

"Thus, if you continue to cry, I'm going to be shameless and bring you to the bed. I will have you have a taste of my ability."

"Like that, even if your Tang Family were to kill me, I would not have died with grievances," Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile across his face.

"Puu..." Hearing what Chu Feng said, that Tang Ying not only stopped crying, she even burst into laughter. She looked to Chu Feng and said, "When I first met you, you were quite cold. Never would I have expected that you're actually a hoodlum."

"All men are hoodlums. However, I will only act like a hoodlum toward people that I have a favorable impression of."

"However, don't take my words to heart. I was merely joking around with you," Chu Feng spoke with righteousness.

"You..." Hearing what Chu Feng said, Tang Ying, who was confident in her charm, was naturally somewhat angered. However, after thinking about it a bit, she did not break out with her bossy young miss temperament.

Instead, she forced down her anger and spoke to Chu Feng gently. "Chu Feng, I am actually not the type of person like the me that you first met. I was only angered because of this matter of the arranged marriage with the Cao Family."

"The reason for that is because my eldest brother and second brother said that if my father is not healed by the time the Cao Family attacks us, I must, for the sake of preserving our Tang Family, marry that retard."

"Do you wish to marry that retard?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course not. I've never even met him before," Tang Ying said as she shook her head.

"Then don't," Chu Feng said.

"But, this matter is already not something that I can decide," Tang Ying said.

“What’s there to fear? I’m with you,” Chu Feng said to Tang Ying with a beaming smile, “I’ll protect you.”

Hearing those words, Tang Ying’s expression grew sluggish again. She felt as if she did not dare to believe what she just heard. However, as she looked at Chu Feng who had an expression of sincerity across his face, she started to smile happily and said, “Okay.”

She did not understand why. However, after Chu Feng said those words, she started to believe him deeply. She felt that Chu Feng would truly be able to protect her.

“Young miss, this is bad!” Suddenly, a servant girl rushed in.

“A’cai, aren’t you supposed to be serving my father? Why would you run over here?” Tang Ying asked impatiently.

“Young miss, this is truly bad. You must escape immediately.”

“That Grandmaster Kangping has fed Master the Ghostfiend Beast’s bone powder. Yet, he is still unable to cure Master’s injury.” [1. Kangping → Peace and Prosperity. Not sure if it’s his name or title yet.]

“I heard the Eldest Young Master’s discussion with the Second Young Master. They said that they planned to marry you to the Cao Family before they attacked the Tang Family so as to resolve the conflict with the Cao Family,” The servant girl said.

“How could this be?!” Hearing those words, Tang Ying collapsed onto her butt. She had a completely dejected expression on her face.

“Do you want me to bring you away?” Chu Feng asked.

“I naturally want to run away. However, I cannot disregard the safety of the Tang Family,” Tang Ying’s voice grew very low. It went without saying that she was feeling very depressed.

“Since that’s the case, bring me over so that I can have a look at your father. I am also a world spiritist. I also possess some understanding of healing techniques. Perhaps I might be able to provide some assistance,” Chu Feng said.

“How could I have forgotten about that? Very well, let’s go over immediately,” Tang Ying stood up, grabbed Chu Feng and began to rush out.

“Young miss, you cannot go over there. Have you forgotten that Master has personally ordered that you are not allowed to enter his sleeping chambers?” The servant girl said.

“We have no time to worry about that,” Tang Ying ignored the servant girl, tightly grabbed Chu Feng and rushed out with quick steps.

At that moment, Chu Feng was the last straw for her to clutch at. She had placed all of her hopes onto Chu Feng.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2164 - Gazes Of Despise**

Following Tang Ying, Chu Feng soon arrived at the sleeping chambers of the Tang Family’s Family Head.

Several figures were gathered in the sleeping chambers of the Tang Family’s Family Head. Among them was Tang Ying’s third brother, Tang Yong.

There were two other men. Those two men were much older than Tang Yong. The oldest among them was actually over five thousand years old.

“Little sister, why would you be here?”

“Didn’t father order that you were not allowed to enter this place?”

After seeing Tang Ying and Chu Feng, not only did that Tang Yong walk toward them and address Tang Ying as ‘little sister’, the two other men also walked toward them and addressed Tang Ying as ‘little sister’ as well.

Chu Feng was surprised by this scene. He had truly never expected Tang Ying’s older brothers to be this old. Judging by this, Tang Ying’s oldest brother was over five thousands years older than her.

An age gap this enormous would simply be impossible to be spoken of as siblings in a small power. Instead, it should be the relationship of one’s ancestor and one’s descendant.

For example, the founder of the Azure Dragon School, the Azure Dragon Founder, was only over a thousand years old. Furthermore, if it wasn't for the treasures left behind by Qing Xuantian, he would not have been able to survive for over a millennium. After all, his cultivation was very weak.

However, Tang Ying's three older brothers had all been able to live for at least ten thousand years or longer. The reason for that was because they were all Half Martial Ancestor-level experts.

This was the disparity between cultivation realms. Not only would one's cultivation increase one's strength, it would strengthen all aspects of oneself.

As for Tang Ying's oldest brother, he was a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. He possessed the strongest strength among the Tang Family siblings.

Although he was over five thousand years old, when compared to the experts in the Holy Land of Martialism, he would be seen as extremely amazing to have been able to obtain his current level of cultivation in a mere five thousand years. In fact, he could be considered to be a martial cultivation genius.

However, Chu Feng felt that he would not be considered to be a genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. At the very most, he would be considered to be gifted.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had heard from his father that only people that possessed extraordinary heaven-defying battle power would be considered geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. An example of such would be the Heavenly Clans.

"Eldest brother, second brother, third brother, this is Chu Feng. He is the one that killed the Ghostfiend Beast."

"Not only does Chu Feng possessed overwhelming strength, he is also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. He said that he wished to help treat father's injury," Tang Ying hurriedly said.

Tang Ying's oldest brother used his deep gaze to size up Chu Feng. Then, he revealed a light smile, and said with a tone that was neither servile nor overbearing, "Nice to meet you, Brother Chu Feng. I am Tang Ying's oldest brother, Tang Long." One could tell that he was a person of experience.



“Brother Chu Feng, I am Tang Ying’s second brother, Tang Hu. I have heard of you from my third brother.”

“Those two were truly insensible. I hope that you do not take their offense to heart.”

Tang Ying’s second brother also walked toward Chu Feng to speak to him. Compared to Tang Ying’s oldest brother, her second brother was much more enthusiastic and polite. By the same manner, he also appeared to be more fake.

Although Chu Feng was young, he had experienced a lot. Thus, his sense of perception was very strong. He was generally capable of distinguishing whether people were treating him with sincerity or putting on an act.

As for Tang Ying’s oldest brother and second brother, it was evident that they were not welcoming Chu Feng with sincerity. n/.Ꮤ..v)(E/-l-(B//l((n

“There’s no need to mention things that happened in the past anymore. May I have a look at the Tang Family’s Family Head?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend, are you really a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Right at this moment, an old man with long blonde hair who was wearing a Royal Cloak World Spiritist Cloak slowly walked out from within the depths of the sleeping chamber.

That old man’s cultivation was not very strong; he was only a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. However, he was extremely old. He was likely over ten thousand years old.

At his age, his face should be filled with wrinkles and aged spots. However, he had no such thing.

Not only did his face have no wrinkles or age spots, it was also extremely rosy, comparable to an infant’s skin. In fact, his entire body was glimmering. It was as if he was a living Immortal.

Without having others mention it, Chu Feng knew that he must be that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist Tang Ying had spoken of, that so-called Grandmaster Kangping.

“Grandmaster Kangping, Chu Feng is truly a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Tang Ying said.

“Indeed, my little sister and our Tang Family’s many guards have all experienced Brother Chu Feng’s abilities,” Tang Yong added.

“Oh?” However, that Grandmaster Kangping began to size up Chu Feng with a gaze of disbelief.

Sure enough, it was as Tang Ying had said, this Grandmaster Kangping was extremely conceited. Although his cultivation was only that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, there was a dense amount of disdain in the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng.

Seeing that the attitude of that Grandmaster Kangping was not good, Chu Feng did not face him with a smile either. Instead, he coldly said, “What’s this? Do I need you to inspect and verify whether or not I’m a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Haha, there’s no need for that. Merely, little friend, this old man has trained in world spirit techniques for no less than ten thousand years.”

“Since I began to train in world spirit techniques, I have meticulously studied healing techniques. That is the reason why I ended up delaying my martial cultivation. Else, it would be impossible for me to only be a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.”

“However, my painstaking efforts were not in vain. Right now, no one in the territory governed by Luyang’s Pavilion does not know about me, Kangping.”

“While I do not dare to boast about anything else, I dare say that I, Kangping, am second to none in terms of healing others.”

“The injury to the Tang Family’s Family Head is too serious. It is not that I cannot heal him. Rather, it is that I am unable to completely heal him within a month’s time.”

“When even I am unable to cure him, little friend, are you really certain that you want to attempt to cure him?” Grandmaster Kangping said to Chu Feng.

“Just because it’s an injury that you cannot cure, does that mean that others cannot cure it too?” Chu Feng refuted.

Once Chu Feng said those words, the expression of that Grandmaster Kangping changed. A displeased expression appeared in his gaze.

However, he did not reveal his displeasure. Instead, he smiled and said, "If little friend wishes to attempt it, I will naturally not stop you."

"Merely..." Grandmaster Kangping looked to the Tang Family's four siblings, "your father's injury is very serious. It has already injured his soul. I was only able to stabilize his injury through a spirit formation I've formed with meticulous effort. Although I am unable to cure him within a month's time, it remains that I have preserved his life."

"However, if someone decides to take their own initiative and destroy what I have set up, your father might end up losing his life in the process."

"At that time, I will not take responsibility for it."

"This..." Hearing those words, Tang Long, Tang Hu and Tang Yong all revealed difficult expressions. As it concerned their father's life, they would naturally not dare to act recklessly.

"Brother Chu Feng, we thank you for your kind intentions."

After hesitating for some time, Tang Long said to Chu Feng with a smile, "It is not that we are looking down on you. Merely, Grandmaster Kangping is truly someone who has great knowledge of healing techniques. Thus... I think it is better to listen to him."

"In merely two hours, I will be able to completely cure your father. If I am unable to accomplish that, you all can do as you wish to my life," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, what are you saying? There's no need for you to risk your life like this, no?" Hearing those words, Tang Ying was extremely shocked. She hurriedly moved toward Chu Feng and advised him against it. After all, she did not wish for Chu Feng to lose his life because of her family matters.

"Rest assured, I possess certainty of success," Chu Feng lightly patted Tang Ying's hand that was grabbing him. He was indicating to her to not worry.

"..." Seeing Chu Feng acting this confident, Tang Long and his brothers also revealed surprised expressions.

However, compared to Tang Yong, Tang Long and Tang Hu's gazes contained a bit of doubt.

The two of them did not know much about Chu Feng, nor had they seen his abilities. Thus, they were uncertain as to whether Chu Feng was truly capable or whether he was boasting.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2165 - The One Courting Death Is You**

"Little friend, you are truly one who dares to say anything."

At that moment, Grandmaster Kangping smiled coldly. Then, he turned to Tang Long and said, "Eldest Young Master Tang, although your father's injury is unstable, I am still capable of containing it. Since this little friend is so confident, why don't you let him give it a try?"

"Grandmaster Kangping, is it truly fine?" Tang Long revealed a difficult expression. He truly did not believe in Chu Feng.

As he was someone who had lived for thousands of years, he was naturally able to tell that Kangping wanted Chu Feng to try healing his father because he wanted Chu Feng to die. However, he did not wish to use his father as a test subject.

"Big brother, just let Chu Feng make an attempt. Or could it be that you really want me to marry into the Cao Family?"

"Right now, father is seriously injured with an injury that is hard to treat. It is the perfect timing for the Cao Family to eliminate our Tang Family."

"Even if I am to be married off to them, it would still be very unlikely that the Cao Family will spare our Tang Family."

"Only by improving the condition of father's injury will our Tang Family have a chance to survive," Tang Ying urged.

"This..." Tang Long was placed in an even more difficult situation. Thus, he entered deep contemplation. Perhaps because he felt that what Tang Ying

said was very reasonable, he ended up saying to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, please be careful.”

“Rest assured,” As Chu Feng spoke, he moved past the others and entered deeper into the sleeping chamber.

Deep inside the sleeping chamber was a special bed. That bed was formed through a combination of spirit formations and over ten thousand kinds of medicinal herbs. It was especially useful for healing injuries.

At that moment, an old man was lying on the bed. This old man barely had any hair. His entire body was filled with wrinkles and age spots. Fortunately, he was still breathing. Else, he would practically be no different from a dried corpse.

It was likely that this old man was more than ten thousand years old. Even if his injuries were capable of being cured, he would likely not be able to continue to live for long.

As for his cultivation, it was not weak at all. He was a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. This old man... was naturally the Tang Family’s Family Head.

Actually, Chu Feng had been secretly observing the Tang Family’s Family Head after he entered the sleeping chamber. He only said those words after he determined that he would be able to treat him.

At that moment, Chu Feng spread open his hands. Many streams of Dragon Mark Royal-level spirit power began to appear. Chu Feng was planning to begin his treatment.

After seeing Chu Feng’s world spirit power, the people present, with the exception of Tang Ying, were all surprised.

The reason for that was because it was the first time for all of them to see Chu Feng unleashing his world spirit techniques. Even though they already knew that Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, they remained shocked after personally seeing him in action.

After all, it was extremely rare for there to be such a young Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Right at that moment, that Grandmaster Kangping suddenly said, “Little friend, I’ll say what must be said first. If something is to happen to the Tang Family’s Family Head, even if you wish to live, you will not be able to do so.”

Chu Feng turned around and said, “Unfortunately, my life and death is not decided by you,”

“Of course, it will not be me, but instead the people of the Tang Family,” Grandmaster Kangping said.

“Wrong,” Chu Feng smiled indifferently, “only I get to decide my life and death.”

“Oh, you’re truly arrogant.”

“If you are capable of healing the Tang Family’s Family Head, this old man shall cripple his cultivation,” Grandmaster Kangping revealed an expression of anger. He had finally completely revealed his displeasure toward Chu Feng.

“You must honor your words then,” Chu Feng said.

“I, Kangping, am always one to keep my word,” Grandmaster Kangping spoke confidently. He possessed absolute confidence that he would be able to live.

“Since you wish to cripple yourself like this, I shall help you accomplish your aim.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, his hands began to move as he began to form his spirit formation. Soon, a grand spirit formation appeared and covered the entire area around Chu Feng and the Tang Family’s Family Head. n/-Ⓢ)(v.-e.-l-.b./l-.n

Once that spirit formation appeared, the expression of that Grandmaster Kangping changed enormously. He was shocked to discover that even he was unable to see through the spirit formation Chu Feng had set up.

Although he felt extremely unreconciled, a trace of panic appeared in his gaze.

Merely, that trace of panic persisted for merely an instant before disappearing. It was replaced with his former confidence.

Following that, the corners of Kangping's mouth rose slightly. Then, he leisurely sat on a seat to the side and began to drink his tea.

"Grandmaster Kangping, is this truly fine?" Tang Long and his brothers asked nervously.

"Humph, how would I know," Kangping sneered. Although he said it like that, it could be determined from his confident gaze that he firmly believed that Chu Feng would definitely fail.

"Tang Ying, I'll say the unpleasant words first. If something is to happen to father, do not blame me, your older brother, for being rude toward your friend," Tang Long said to Tang Ying fiercely.

At the same time, Tang Hu and even Tang Yong began to send voice transmissions to Tang Ying.

They were all trying to shift their responsibility. Like that, even if something were to happen to their father, they would not have to shoulder any blame.

At that moment, Tang Ying became increasingly nervous.

She was not afraid that her older brothers would punish her. Rather, she was afraid that Chu Feng would fail. If Chu Feng failed, then, with the temperament of her three older brothers, they might really end up killing Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng possessed a special status, it remained that the Tang Family was faced with a great enemy and on the brink of a crisis.

Under these sort of circumstances, the people of the Tang Family would not have any apprehensions. They were extremely bold. Even if Chu Feng was someone from a Heavenly Clan, if Chu Feng were to truly harm their father, they would not spare him.

Under those sort of circumstances, Tang Ying felt that time was dragging past. This short period of two hours felt like multiple days to her. It was a torture to her psyche.

Fortunately, after a period of one hour finally passed. The spirit formation that covered the surroundings was also lifted.

When the spirit formation was lifted, the crowd present all revealed surprised expressions.

Not only was Chu Feng standing there, even the Tang Family's Family Head was standing there. Furthermore, the Tang Family's Family Head was radiating health and vigor; how could he possibly resemble someone that had been seriously injured?

Needless to say, they had guessed wrong. Their father had managed to recover. Chu Feng had succeeded.

"Damn it!" At the moment when the people from the Tang Family were rejoicing, that Grandmaster Kangping's expression changed. He turned around and tried to escape.

"Woosh~~~"

However, before he could escape, a figure blocked his path. It was Chu Feng.

"Grandmaster Kangping, didn't you say that you would honor your words?" Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

"You are courting death!"

Grandmaster Kangping flipped his wrist and revealed an Imperial Armament. With frightening Ancestral-level martial power, he thrust his Imperial Armament at Chu Feng's dantian.

That ferocious killing intent caused the surrounding space to shatter. He was not only planning to cripple Chu Feng's cultivation, he was planning to kill Chu Feng.

However, not to mention the Ancestral-level martial power, even if that Imperial Armament were to directly land onto Chu Feng's body, it would not be able to cause Chu Feng any harm.

Chu Feng was like an impenetrable wall; even grand Imperial Armaments would not be able to penetrate his body. In fact, they would not even be able to cut through his clothing.

"The one courting death is you."



Suddenly, coldness flashed through Chu Feng's eyes as his oppressive might swept forth. "Boom," that Grandmaster Kangping was knocked flying. Then, he firmly crashed into the palace wall.

Chu Feng's attack was truly ruthless. When Kangping fell to the ground, his body was covered completely with blood, and his health was so weak that he was only a breath away from death.

"Brother Chu Feng, what are you doing? Grandmaster Kangping is our guest," Seeing this scene, the three Tang Family brothers all started to panic.

Especially Tang Long and Tang Hu. Their bodies shifted, and they arrived before Kangping, blocking him. They were afraid that Chu Feng would attack Kangping again.

As for what Grandmaster Kangping had said earlier, they did not take it to heart. After all, many people already knew that they had invited Grandmaster Kangping to heal their father. If Grandmaster Kangping were to die in their Tang Family, it would ruin their Tang Family's reputation once the news spread.

Furthermore, in addition to their own interests, Grandmaster Kangping was also a good friend to the Tang Family's Family Head.

With how special their relationship was, they would naturally not let Chu Feng kill Kangping.

"What am I doing? He wished to kill me, are you saying that I shouldn't kill him?" Chu Feng spoke coldly.

"Even if he is in the wrong, you shouldn't be this ruthless," Tang Long spoke very furiously.

However, right at that moment, an angry shout sounded. "Shut up! You unfilial sons, how could you speak to little friend Chu Feng this rudely?" That shout caused the entire sleeping chamber to tremble violently. It was the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Father, you!!!" The three Tang brothers were bewildered by how their father was standing on Chu Feng's side and berating them.

In fact, it was not only the three brothers that were confused; even Tang Ying revealed a puzzled expression.

They all knew very well that Grandmaster Kangping possessed an extraordinary relationship with their father, that they were close friends of many years.

Even if Chu Feng had cured their father's injury, with the relationship their father had with Kangping, their father should be speaking on Kangping's behalf.

So, why was he speaking on Chu Feng's behalf?

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2166 - Jackals Of The Same Tribe**

"Kangping, I have considered you my friend in vain. Never would I have expected that you would go and help the Cao Family harm me like this," Just when the four siblings were puzzled, the Tang Family's Family Head turned his ferocious gaze toward Grandmaster Kangping.

"Grandmaster Kangping, you... exactly what did you do to my father?"

Hearing those words, the expressions of Tang Long and Tang Hu changed immediately. They were already able to determine that the situation was amiss from what their father just said. They drew their weapons and pointed them at Grandmaster Kangping.

At the same time, seemingly as if they had heard the commotion in the area, a large group of Half Martial Ancestor-level guards from the Tang Family rushed in. They all drew their weapons and aimed them at Kangping as well.

One thing worthy of mention was that the Tang Family's eldest son, Tang Long, was not using an Imperial Armament. Rather, his weapon was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

Although it was not an excellent quality weapon, being inferior to the Magma Emperor Sword that Chu Feng had refined, it remained an actual Incomplete

Ancestral Armament. The might of his weapon greatly surpassed that of Imperial Armaments.

“Hahaha, since you all have discovered it, I will no longer conceal it either.”

“The Cao Family has already guessed that you will definitely come to find me should you want to heal your injuries. Thus, the Cao Family found me a step earlier.”

“What I must do is very simple: I merely need not heal your injuries,” Grandmaster Kangping said.

“Not heal his injury? Is it really that simple?” Chu Feng sneered, “You used tricks to make the Tang Family’s Family Head enter a deep state of unconsciousness, losing all ability to fight.”

“Furthermore, you placed many poisonous formations inside his body at the location of his injury. If someone else were to attempt to heal his injury and accidentally triggered those hidden poisonous formations, they would cause the death of the Tang Family’s Family Head.”

“As for the reason why you refused to let me heal the Tang Family’s Family Head earlier, it was because of your ego as a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. You thought that your medical expertise would be insulted should I be allowed to treat him.”

“As for why you decided to allow me to treat the Tang Family’s Family Head later, it was because you wanted to borrow my hands to kill the Tang Family’s Family Head. Like that, you would also be able to eliminate me, who you despised, and thus kill two birds with one stone.”

“However, you must not have thought that I had already seen through all the things that you did. before I even began treatment of the Tang Family’s Family Head. I had already planned on how to undo the hidden poisonous formations and the other tricks you’d done to the Tang Family’s Family Head, as well as how to heal the Tang Family’s Family Head. Two hours just happened to be enough time to accomplish all of that.”

After Chu Feng said those words, the eyes of the crowd present all shone. They did not expect that Chu Feng had actually seen through everything.

“It was indeed all thanks to little friend Chu Feng. Else, I’m afraid that this old man’s life would sooner or later, have ended by your hands,” The Tang Family’s Family Head was also filled with gratefulness.

“Bastard, if it wasn’t for you, this old man’s plan would’ve succeeded,” Suddenly, coldness flashed through Kangping’s eyes. He actually planned to attack Chu Feng.

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

However, right after he unleashed his killing intent, before he could even attack, two streams of blood squirted out of his body.

It was the brothers Tang Long and Tang Hu. The two men had both pierced through Kangping’s body with their respective weapons, nailing him to the wall.

“Haha, humans will die for riches just as birds will die for food, go ahead and kill me,” Sensing that he would not be able to escape, Kangping did not beg for forgiveness, and instead burst into loud laughter.

“I have considered you a senior in vain. For you to harm my father like this, even killing you would not be able to alleviate the hatred in my heart.”

“I must properly torment you first,” After Tang Long said those words, the Incomplete Ancestral Armament in his hand trembled. As a strange power entered Kangping, he began to scream miserably, as if his heart and lungs were being split open.

“Long’er, it’s enough. Although he was heartless toward me, I cannot be unrighteous toward him. Considering our many years of friendship, let him die comfortably,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

“Tang Haichuan, enough of your pretended righteousness. Don’t you think that I do not know what you did in the Immemorial Beast’s remnant. If it wasn’t for you, I...”

“Boom~~~”

Before Kangping could finish his words, his body exploded into a mist of blood.

He was killed. Not by the brothers Tang Long and Tang Hu. Rather, he was killed by the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Truly one who refuses the face that is given to him," After killing Kangping, the Tang Family's Family Head said those words fiercely.

Seeing this scene, the three Tang Family brothers all revealed unrestrained expressions. They all felt that Kangping should be killed.

However, Tang Ying revealed a face filled with shock. She was confused, because her father seemed to have implied that he would leave Kangping an intact corpse earlier. Yet, he had then personally shattered Kangping's body.

At that moment, although there was no change in Chu Feng's expression on the surface, in his heart, he had a whole new understanding of the Tang Family's Family Head. n.)0v**Elb**ln

It was clear that the Kangping had not secretly attacked the Tang Family's Family Head without reason.

It was very possible that the Tang Family's Family Head had done something to wrong Kangping years ago, causing Kangping to harbor hard feelings against him. Then when the Tang Family's Family Head was seriously injured, and the Cao Family was willing to back him, he found the opportunity to take revenge against the Tang Family's Family Head.

From this, it could be seen that the Tang Family's Family Head was not a good fellow either. Compared to that Kangping, they were simply jackals of the same tribe.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng still had to save the Tang Family's Family Head for Tang Ying's sake.

"You three, why are you still standing here? Go and apologize to little friend Chu Feng immediately. If it wasn't for little friend Chu Feng, I would've been killed by that Kangping."

“And you three, you were actually stopping little friend Chu Feng from treating me earlier. You all are simply fools out-and-out,” The Tang Family’s Family Head berated the three Tang brothers angrily.

“Father, we were foolish.”

“Brother Chu Feng, please forgive us for our rudeness earlier,” Tang Long and his brothers all had ashamed expressions on their faces. They first admitted their wrongs to their father, then bowed and apologized to Chu Feng.

“It’s fine, your actions were all understandable,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it is truly all thanks to you this time around. If it wasn’t for you, it would not only be me, instead, likely our entire Tang Family would have...” The Tang Family’s Family Head sighed.

“Little friend Chu Feng, for you to be able to have your cultivation and exquisite world spirit techniques at such a young age, may I know which Heavenly Clan managed to nurture such an outstanding genius like yourself?” The Tang Family’s Family Head asked.

“If I were to tell you that I do not belong to a clan, would you believe me?” Chu Feng asked instead of answering.

“Haha, of course. Why would I not believe you?” The Tang Family’s Family Head burst into laughter. He naturally knew that Chu Feng was not speaking the truth. However, he also understood that Chu Feng did not wish to tell him which Heavenly Clan he was from. Thus, being tactful, he did not continue to ask.

“That said, little friend Chu Feng, not only have you saved my life, your actions are equivalent to saving our entire Tang Family. As such, I must thank you properly.”

“What is it that you wish? Go ahead and tell me without any hesitation. As long as it is something that our Tang Family possesses, I will definitely provide you with it,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

“It would do if you could provide me with some more Demon Subduing Spring Water,” Chu Feng said.

“Demon Subduing Spring Water?” The Tang Family’s Family Head was startled by those words. He was confused as to why Chu Feng would need something like that.

Although the Demon Subduing Spring Water was precious, it remained only capable of being used against the demonic woman, and not much else.

“Father, it’s like this...” Seeing that, Tang Ying stepped forward to explain why Chu Feng needed Demon Subduing Spring Water to her father.

“Since that’s the case, why are you all still standing here? Quickly, go and order people to prepare the Demon Subduing Spring Water,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

In response, a guard clasp his fist and reported, “Master, actually, we have already prepared the Demon Subduing Spring Water that Young Miss had us prepare. Merely, we did not dare to bring it into your sleeping chamber, and were waiting for Young Miss to receive it.”

“Quickly, have it delivered here,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

Then, a guard walked in. He held a special bottle in his hand. Chu Feng received the bottle and opened it to look. Sure enough, there was special spring water inside it.

Although it was the first time he had seen this sort of spring water, he felt that it should be the Demon Subduing Spring Water.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt joy in his heart. He finally saw some hope to save Wang Qiang’s life.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2167 - Chu Feng, Quickly, Escape**

“Thanks,” Chu Feng received the Demon Subduing Spring Water and expressed his thanks to the Tang Family’s Family Head. Then, he turned to Tang Ying and said, “I will go and eliminate that demonic woman first. After that, I will return and uphold my promise to be your bodyguard for a month.”

"Tang Long, Tang Hu, prepare men to help little friend Chu Feng eliminate that demonic woman," The Tang Family's Family Head ordered.

"There's no need for that. I myself am sufficient," Chu Feng said. The way he saw it, other than the Tang Family's Family Head, no one in the Tang Family was stronger than him.

As for the Tang Family's Family head, he would definitely stay to oversee the Tang Family. As such, it would be impossible for him to go and assist Chu Feng in eliminating that demonic woman. Thus, rather than bringing a bunch of burdens with him, it would be better for Chu Feng to go alone.

"Merely, little friend Chu Feng, for you to go alone, I fear..." The Tang Family's Family Head was worried.

"Father, please rest assured. Chu Feng was able to kill even the Ghostfiend Beast. No matter how strong that demonic woman might be, she would not necessarily be a match for Chu Feng," Tang Ying declared proudly.

"Oh?" Hearing that, the Tang Family Family Head revealed a surprised gaze. Although the people from Heavenly Clans were all very powerful, he evidently had not expected Chu Feng to be so powerful that he could even kill a Ghostfiend Beast. After all, he also knew that Ghostfiend Beasts were extraordinary existences.

"Since that's the case, then, little friend Chu Feng, I wish you luck on your journey," The Tang Family's Family Head said.

"Eldest Young Master, this is bad!" Right at this moment, a Half Martial Ancestor-level expert rushed in.

When this old man saw the Tang Family's Family Head after rushing in, he immediately revealed an overjoyed expression. Happiness appeared on his panicking face.

"Master, y-y-you've actually recovered? This is truly great! Even the Heavens are looking out for our Tang Family!" said that old man.

The Tang Family's Family Head noticed that something was amiss. Thus, he asked, "What happened?"



“Master, the Cao Family has refused to comply with their agreement. They have led their army to attack us before the promised time. Right now, the Cao Family’s army is already outside the city; they have already sealed off our Tang Family, and are planning to besiege the city,” The old man reported.

“What?!” Hearing those words, the crowd present all revealed surprised expressions.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

.....

.....

Right at that moment, rumbles began to sound from outside. Someone was attacking the Tang Family’s defensive formation.

Chu Feng immediately activated his Heaven’s Eyes. After he looked outside, he discovered that a dense amount of people had already entered the city. From all directions, they had tightly sealed off the Tang Family.

There were a lot of experts among them. Especially the leading old man; his age was about the same as the Tang Family’s Family Head. He was an extremely thin old man.

Not only was this old man thin, his stature was also very short and small. His height was only around a hundred and sixty centimeters. He was shorter than even ordinary women.

However, this old man’s eyes gave off a shrewd light. Furthermore, he emitted the powerful oppressive might of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Without even having others introduce him, Chu Feng was able to guess that that old man must be the Cao Family’s Family Head.

At that moment, that Cao Family’s Family Head was unleashing nonstop attacks at the Tang Family’s defensive formation.

The might of an Incomplete Ancestral Armament being used by him, a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, could be said to be extremely frightening. Cracks

had already started to appear in the Tang Family's defensive formation; it would soon be destroyed.

"Rumble~~~"

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded. The Cao Family's Family Head had managed to shatter the Tang Family's defensive formation.

After destroying the defensive formation, the Cao Family's Family Head shouted, "Soldiers of the Cao Family, listen up. Kill all the people from the Tang Family!!!"

"Yes Milord!!!"

Following his shout, an elite army of several tens of thousands entered the Tang Family's territory following the Cao Family's Family Head.

Their oppressive Ancestral-level oppressive might arrived before them. Countless palaces and towers were shattered by their oppressive might. In merely an instant, thousands of people from the Tang Family were killed.

In response, the Tang Family's Family Head shouted, "All those from the Tang Family that are alive, prepare to face the enemy!!!"

Then, he soared into the air and charged into the sky.

"Tang Haichuan? You're actually fine?" The people from the Cao Family were shocked by the appearance of the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Unfaithful vile bastard, did you consider the promise of a month's time to be fart?!" The Tang Family's Family Head's anger was overwhelming. As he cursed at the Cao Family's Family Head, he held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and charged to attack the Cao Family's Family Head.

At the same time, the elites from the Tang Family also soared into the air and collided with the Cao Family's army.

"Unfaithful? You are the one who decided to violate the marriage agreement first. Yet you dare to say that I am unfaithful? How shameless can you be?" The Cao Family's Family Head said coldly.

"Do you not fear Zhao Chengxing?" The Tang Family's Family Head said.

“Hahaha. You’re talking about Zhao Chengxing, that man who mounted a sneak attack against you and left you with a serious injury?”

“Truth be told, the reason why I dared to come and attack your Tang Family is because I have already eliminated him.”

“Today, your Tang Family shall be eliminated,” Once the Cao Family’s Family Head declared that, the void started to tremble. It was as if he was completely confident that he would be able to eliminate the Tang Family.

“What shameless boasting!!!” The Tang Family’s Family Head was so enraged that his complexion turned red. At the same time, his attacks grew more and more ferocious.

However, the Cao Family’s Family Head was not afraid in the slightest. As the two men fought, their attacks engulfed their surroundings. The others simply did not dare to approach them.

“Brother Chu Feng, I’m sorry to inconvenience you, but please protect my little sister. If you are able to find an opportunity, please bring her away from here.”

“Please!” After Tang Long said those words to Chu Feng, he soared into the sky and joined the battle.

“Chu Feng, what should we do?” Tang Ying looked at Chu Feng with a panicky expression.

“Don’t panic, your Tang Family will not necessarily be defeated,” Chu Feng said.

“Really?” Tang Ying felt disbelief.

“I have already observed the situation. Although the Cao Family is very strong, your Tang Family is not weak either. In the amount of people and overall strength, your Tang Family is equally matched with the Cao Family. Thus, your Tang Family might not necessarily be defeated,” Chu Feng said.

“But, according to our reliable sources, the strength of the Cao Family should surpass that of our Tang Family,” Tang Ying still felt disbelief.

“There’s only one explanation for this. That is, the Cao Family has really taken care of your father’s old friend before coming to attack the Tang Family. This is why their strength has suffered some damage,” Chu Feng said.

“Clap, clap, clap, clap, clap~~~”

“Not bad, your analysis is very good.”

“However, as long as I am here, the Tang Family will definitely be defeated.”

Right at that moment, the sound of clapping was heard. Following that, an indifferent voice was heard.

This person was wearing the outfit of the Cao Family. He had the appearance of a young man. However, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that this man had lived for at least several hundred years.

This man’s cultivation was not weak either; he was a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, his aura was much stronger than that of ordinary rank four Half Martial Ancestors; he was an existence that possessed heaven-defying battle power. Although his heaven-defying battle power was only capable of surmounting one level of cultivation, he remained stronger than ordinary Half Martial Ancestors.

“What arrogance,” Chu Feng laughed mockingly. Although his opponent was a rank four Half Martial Ancestor that possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation, Chu Feng did not place him in his eyes at all.

Although Chu Feng was not afraid, Tang Ying turned pale with fear after seeing that man. She began to step back repeatedly. It was as if she had just seen a demon. Chu Feng was able to sense that Tang Ying was shivering from head to toe.

“Haha, it would seem that you do not know who I am,” That man laughed out loud.

“I could care less who you are,” Chu Feng said.

“Hahaha, you are truly young and ignorant,” That man was not angered by Chu Feng’s words. Instead, with a smile on his face, he looked to Tang Ying, “Tang Ying, tell this ignorant fool exactly who I am.”

After hearing those words, Tang Ying suddenly pushed Chu Feng away and shouted, "Chu Feng, quickly, escape. Do not concern yourself with me."

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2168 - Huge Change In Expression**

Chu Feng was surprised by the intense reaction from Tang Ying. He realized that this man seemed to be truly extraordinary.

However, Chu Feng remained calm and collected. With a smile on his face, he said to Tang Ying, "Have you forgotten that I am your bodyguard? How could I abandon you?"

"But... Chu Feng," Hearing what Chu Feng said, Tang Ying immediately revealed a touched expression. However, she was still worried about Chu Feng.

"There's no but. Regardless of who it is, as long as they pose a threat to you, I will protect you from them," Chu Feng said.

"Oh, this is truly a story of love. It is no wonder that Tang Ying would refuse to marry into our Cao Family. It turns out that she has an affair with her bodyguard," The man sneered. However, Chu Feng noticed dense killing intent in that man's smiling gaze.

"You're still here? It would seem that you are truly planning to die by my hands," Chu Feng's eyes narrowed, revealing a dense amount of chilliness.

In a battle between two armies, the soldiers would fight for their own masters. Although this man was smiling, daggers were hidden in his smile.

Chu Feng had already sensed his killing intent; that man was determined to kill Chu Feng. Thus, there was no need for Chu Feng to act leniently toward someone like him. Even if he wanted to escape, Chu Feng would not allow him to escape.

"Yoh, what shameless boasting. No matter what, I am a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Where did you, a mere rank one Half Martial Ancestor, obtain the

courage to hoot at me like that?” Finally, mockery appeared in that man’s smile.

“Rank one Half Martial Ancestor? Are you certain of that?” As Chu Feng spoke, lightning flashed in his eyes. As lightning serpents intertwined with one another, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared. At the same time, Chu Feng’s aura increased from that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor to that of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor instantly.

“You’re someone from the Heavenly Clans?” The man’s expression changed to one of surprise upon seeing Chu Feng’s current appearance.

However, his surprised expression persisted for merely a moment. Soon, he smiled again, “Since you’re from the Heavenly Clans, it would mean that you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. In other words, your true battle power is on par with ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors. No wonder you’re this confident.”

“However, it would appear that you might not have known that I have killed people from the Heavenly Clans before too. Thus, do not think that I will spare you just because you’re from the Heavenly Clans.”

“For you must know that I am the Third Young Master of the Cao Family, the renowned Cao Yuxuan!!!”

When he spoke that last sentence, that man suddenly started to shout his words. His voice spread through the entire Tang Family. Even the people outside the city heard his voice.

“Cao Yuxuan?” Hearing that name, the expressions of countless Tang Family experts changed. Involuntarily, they turned their gazes over.

“It’s really him! Why would he be here?” After the crowd used their various methods to verify the status of the man far away from them, their expressions became even uglier.

Noticing the reaction from the people of the Tang Family, Chu Feng felt that the situation was amiss. Thus, he turned to Tang Ying and asked, “Tang Ying, tell me about this Cao Yuxuan.”

“Chu Feng, Cao Yuxuan is the Cao Family’s third son. He is a Divine Body. Although he is a rank four Half Martial Ancestor, he possesses a heaven-

defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation. Furthermore, his Divine Power is capable of increasing his cultivation by another level. Thus, his actual battle power is that of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.”

“He is the strongest genius to appear in the Cao Family in the past twenty thousand years. My eldest brother fought against him before. However, he was defeated from a single strike.”

“Most importantly, he is part of Luyang’s Pavilion, one of the three personal disciples of Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master. Even in Luyang’s Pavilion, he possesses an extremely high status. Even my father does not dare to act rudely toward him.”

“Originally, he should have been in closed-door training in Luyang’s Pavilion. Furthermore, he also declared that he would not participate in the struggle between the Tang Family and the Cao Family.”

“However, it is evident that he has gone against what he had declared before and is planning to participate in this struggle.”

“But... with his special status, practically no one would dare to fight against him. I’m afraid that our Tang Family will...”

“Chu Feng, quickly escape from here. You are unrelated to our battle to begin with. I do not want you to be implicated,” Tang Ying said.

“Are the people of your Tang Family actually stupid?” Black lines filled Chu Feng’s forehead.

When the Cao Family possessed such a trump card, their Tang Family should have given in to them sooner. Yet, the Tang Family did not do that, and even believed that this Cao Yuxuan would not participate in his family’s battle.

How could that possibly be real? One must know that that was his family. How could he disregard the life and death of his family? How could he not use his special status?

At that moment, Chu Feng had no choice but to admire the intelligence of the Tang Family. The reason for that was because the overall intelligence of the Tang Family was truly low.

It was no wonder they were so passive in all respects in the battle against the Cao Family, no wonder they have ended up in such a state. n//0velb1n

“But, Luyang’s Pavilion has never participated in this sort of thing. Who would’ve thought that Cao Yuxuan would...?” Tang Ying said with grievances.

“Fool, Cao Yuxuan is part of the Cao Family. How could he disregard the life and death of the Cao Family?” Chu Feng said with an expression of helplessness.

“Yoh, judging from your tone, it seems that you’re afraid?”

“If you’re scared, you can scram right now. I will spare your life.”

“However, rest assured, even if you are to scram right now, I will also not kill Tang Ying.”

“No matter what, Tang Ying was the fiancée of my younger brother. Although our Cao Family will not take her as our bride again, we will also not kill her.”

“I will bring her to our Cao Family as a slave, and make her the plaything of our Cao Family’s servants.”

“Tang Ying, I will let you know the consequences of breaking the marriage agreement,” Cao Yuxuan stared at Tang Ying with a beaming smile. Coldness filled his gaze.

“Are you done speaking?” Chu Feng asked calmly.

“So what if I have, and what if I haven’t?” Cao Yuxuan said.

“If you are done, it is time to send you on your way. If you are not, I will give you time to say some more.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved. With a flip of his palm, he directly unleashed his Magma Emperor Sword. Then, he charged toward Cao Yuxuan to attack him.

“Come, arrogant Heavenly Clansman. Today, I will let you know that the people of the Heavenly Clans are not unequalled.”

With a loud shout from Cao Yuxuan, blue gaseous substances began to spread from his body.



After the blue gaseous substance appeared, it turned into a blue dagger that hovered above Cao Yuxuan's forehead. At that moment, Cao Yuxuan's aura began to rapidly increase. His cultivation increased to that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor.

“Haah!!!”

Cao Yuxuan then flipped his palm, and a giant silver axe appeared in his hand; It was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Boom~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng collided with Cao Yuxuan.

The battle between the two men caught the attention of practically everyone from the Tang Family and the Cao Family. Even the two Family Heads that were going all-out to kill one another would take glances at the battle between Chu Feng and Cao Yuxuan from time to time.

After all, Cao Yuxuan possessed a special status and powerful strength. He brought fear to the people of the Tang Family.

As for Chu Feng, his status of a member of the Heavenly Clans also caught the attention of the people from the Cao Family.

If he were someone else, they would not be afraid. However, as he was someone from the Heavenly Clans, they would, to a greater or lesser degree, feel fear.

“I truly never expected that you all would be able to request the assistance of someone from the Heavenly Clans,” The Cao Family's Family Head said.

“Are you afraid now? The Heavenly Clans are not something that your mere Cao Family can offend,” The Tang Family's Family Head said.

“Hahaha, our Cao Family would naturally not dare to offend the Heavenly Clans. However, our Yuxuan is able to.”

“Don't forget that our Yuxuan is someone that has killed people from the Heavenly Clans before. After all, behind him is Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master,” The Cao Family's Family Head said proudly.

“That little friend is surnamed Chu, are you not afraid that he might be from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The Tang Family’s Family Head asked.

“Ridiculous! The Chu Heavenly Clan is that noble, how could your mere Tang Family be able to request their help?”

“Cao Haichuan, do not be carried away with your wishful thinking. Today, you will be killed by me, and your Tang Family will be eliminated by my Cao Family.”

“Even that Heavenly Clan brat will be killed by my son, Cao Yuxuan. All of you will be killed,” The Cao Family’s Family Head said ruthlessly.

Furthermore, the Cao Family’s Family Head spoke those words very loudly. Practically everyone heard his words.

After hearing his words, the people from the Cao Family fought even more vigorously. At that moment, they started to overwhelm the Tang Family.

Evidently, their morale was strengthened by their Family Head’s words. They felt that they would definitely win today.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, a loud explosion was heard.

After hearing that loud explosion, everyone turned their gaze to the battle between Chu Feng and Cao Yuxuan.

“This... this is impossible!!!”

Upon seeing the scene, the expressions of the crowd all changed enormously. They were all stunned.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2169 - You’re Mistaken**

If one must describe what had happened, then all the people that were able to see what was happening over at Chu Feng’s side were all stunned.

This was especially true for the Cao Family's Family Head. As he was absolutely confident in his son, it was even more difficult for him to accept the truth before him.

Cao Yuxuan, the pride of their Cao Family, had been defeated. He had only fought Chu Feng for a short moment, but had already been defeated.

Just then, he had collapsed onto the ground. The Incomplete Ancestral Armament he had held in his hand before was currently in Chu Feng's grasp. However, he was unable to take back his Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

The reason for that was because not only was he covered in blood, his aura was also extremely weak, and his body was shivering nonstop. He had completely lost his ability to fight.

The only thing that he could do was stare at Chu Feng fiercely.

"If I knew that you were this useless, I would not have gone all-out from the very beginning."

"You have truly disappointed me," Chu Feng was saying what he was really feeling.

After hearing how Tang Ying had described Cao Yuxuan, and seeing the reaction from the crowd, Chu Feng had truly thought that this Cao Yuxuan before him was an exceptional genius with overwhelming strength.

Thus, Chu Feng did not wish to waste time on him, and also did not want to be careless against him. Therefore, he had unleashed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament from the very beginning, and also used his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

However, the result was that while the two fighters both possessed heaven-defying battle power on par with rank six Half Martial Ancestors, Chu Feng managed to easily triumph over Cao Yuxuan.

"Cao Yuxuan was actually defeated?!"

At that moment, the crowd finally came to believe what they were seeing. One by one, they revealed a whole new level of respect as they looked to Chu Feng again.

This was especially true for the people in the Tang Family; they had truly never expected that Chu Feng would be this powerful, so powerful that he could defeat Cao Yuxuan.

As both of their families served Luyang's Pavilion, they both knew very well how powerful Cao Yuxuan was. Cao Yuxuan was practically unequaled among those of the same battle power.

Back then, their Tang Family's Eldest Young Master had fought against that Cao Yuxuan, only to suffer a crushing defeat by his hand.

Their Eldest Young Master was someone that had trained in martial cultivation for over five thousand years. Yet, Cao Yuxuan was someone who had only trained in martial cultivation for several hundred years. From this, it could be seen how enormous the disparity between the two men's talent was.

If the appearance of Cao Yuxuan had caused the people from the Tang Family to become extremely depressed, then Cao Yuxuan's defeat by Chu Feng's hands had lifted the spirits of the people from the Tang Family by the same extreme degree.

Instantly, all kinds of noises began to resound nonstop. There were even those from the Tang Family that were bold enough to start insulting Cao Yuxuan, saying that he was not up to much either.

Cao Yuxuan was burning with fury as he shouted while pointing at Chu Feng, "Damned bastard, return my Incomplete Ancestral Armament!!!"

"Do you know what is meant by spoils of war? This Incomplete Ancestral Armament is my spoil of war from defeating you," As Chu Feng spoke, he smeared the Incomplete Ancestral Armament with his palm.

"Puu..." Immediately, Cao Yuxuan vomited out a mouthful of blood. Immediately after, his aura became even weaker. He appeared like someone on the verge of dying.

"You damned bastard! You dared to sever my connection with my Incomplete Ancestral Armament! I will kill you!!!" Using all his strength, Cao Yuxuan stood up and pounced toward Chu Feng.

However, how could the current him be a match for Chu Feng? Chu Feng raised his leg and kicked. "Bang," Cao Yuxuan was kicked to the ground.

Then, Chu Feng held his Magma Emperor Sword and pointed it at Cao Yuxuan's dantian. While looking in the direction of the Cao Family's Family Head, he shouted, "Cao Family, immediately surrender yourselves without fighting. Else, I will kill your Cao Family's Third Young Master."

"Delusional," The Cao Family's Family Head said.

"Puu~~~"

Chu Feng waved the Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand and hacked off one of Cao Yuxuan's arms.

"Ahhh!!!"

With his arm hacked off, Cao Yuxuan let out a miserable scream. He screamed so miserably in pain not only because of the pain he felt from losing his arm. Rather, Chu Feng's slash caused even his soul to suffer damage. An unbearable pain was tormenting him from the place where he had lost his arm.

"I'll kill you!!!"

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually attacked his son, the Cao Family's Family Head immediately surged with overwhelming killing intent. He moved his palm and gathered boundless Ancestral-level martial power with the intention of attacking Chu Feng.

However, right after his Ancestral-level martial power was gathered, another surge of Ancestral-level martial power appeared and blocked it. It was the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Little friend Chu Feng is our Tang Family's honored guest, how could I allow your Cao Family to injure him?" The Tang Family's Family Head spoke coldly.

"Tang Haichuan, if something is to happen to my son, even without my Cao Family doing anything, Luyang's Pavilion will definitely eliminate your Tang Family," The Cao Family's Family Head roared angrily.

Hearing those words, the Tang Family's Family Head's expression changed slightly. He naturally knew of Cao Yuxuan's special status. While their Tang Family could kill anyone from the Cao Family, Cao Yuxuan was someone that they absolutely could not kill.

Merely, if they were to allow the Cao Family to attack Chu Feng, their Tang Family would likely also be unable to escape from a calamity after Chu Feng's death. At that moment, the Tang Family's Family Head was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

"The person that injured your son is me, Chu Feng. The one that is tormenting your son is also me, Chu Feng."

"This matter is unrelated to the Tang Family. If you wish for revenge, aim it at me, Chu Feng. I, Chu Feng, will keep you company at any time," Chu Feng spoke loudly.

"Chu Feng, you..."

At that moment, not to mention Tang Ying, the rest of the people from the Tang Family also revealed surprised expressions.

They had truly never expected Chu Feng to be such an upright and loyal individual. He actually planned to shoulder all the responsibility himself.

"Ahh~~~"

Right at that moment, Cao Yuxuan let out another miserable scream. Chu Feng had actually hacked off his other arm.

"Bastard! Do you know who my son is?! He a personal disciple of Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master!"

"You dared to injure him! You will definitely have to bear the consequences of your actions!" The Cao Family's Family Head shouted.

"Is Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master that amazing?" Chu Feng sneered. If it were another power, Chu Feng might be scared.

However, that Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master was a person from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Chu Feng possessed resentment toward the Chu Heavenly Clan to begin with.

Furthermore, after he knew about the conduct and deeds of that Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master, Chu Feng felt great antipathy toward him.

Thus, while using the Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master to threaten others might do, it was completely useless against Chu Feng.

"You are called Chu Feng, right? Let me ask you, are you someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?" The Cao Family's Family Head asked.

"No," Chu Feng answered without the slightest hesitation. The reason for that was because he was truly not a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan right now.

"There we go. I knew that you wouldn't be."

"However, I believe that you should know what sort of existence the Chu Heavenly Clan is. They are rulers from the Upper Realm!"

"Regardless of which Heavenly Clan you might be from, you will never be able to compare to the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan. As for the Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master, he is someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan," The Cao Family's Family Head declared.

"Haha..." Chu Feng laughed. He truly never expected for the Chu Heavenly Clan to have such a grand reputation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

If he were still someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, perhaps he would truly have much fewer obstructions should he announce the title of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

However, he could not. After all, he was someone who had been discarded by the Chu Heavenly Clan, someone driven out of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

It was precisely because of that Chu Feng felt it to be very laughable. He was laughing at himself for being so lamentable.

At the same time as he felt pity for himself, Chu Feng's heart surged with resentment, resentment toward the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Right at that moment, Cao Yuxuan began to threaten Chu Feng while gnashing his teeth angrily. "Continue laughing, there will be a day when you cannot laugh anymore."

"Brat, I will give you two options. You can either kneel, kowtow and apologize right now, and I might be in a good mood and consider sparing your life."

"Else, you can go and kill me right away. However, my master will definitely not spare you. Not only will you die, all those around you will die too."

“At that time, you will come to regret, regret everything that you’ve done today. Unfortunately, there is no medicine for regret.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyebrows narrowed. He did not expect that Cao Yuxuan, a fish on the chopping block, would dare to threaten him like this.

This caused Chu Feng to become very furious. He was very furious because this guy only dared to act this arrogantly because he was relying on a single scum from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Did you think that I wouldn’t dare kill you?” Chu Feng pointed the Magma Emperor Sword at Cao Yuxuan.

“If you truly consider the consequences, you will definitely not dare,” Cao Yuxuan said fiercely. His eyes were emitting absolute confidence.

“Bang~~~”

However, right after his words left his mouth, the Magma Emperor Sword pierced downward. The sword penetrated his heart and let out overwhelming Ancestral might. As flame surged forth from the sword, Cao Yuxuan was turned to ash instantly. He had been utterly killed.

“It would appear that you were mistaken,” Chu Feng said coldly.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2170 - Treachery - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2170 - Treachery**

### **Chapter 2170 - Treachery**

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually killed Cao Yuxuan, everyone revealed stunned expressions. Regardless of whether they were people from the Tang Family or the Cao Family, they all stood there blankly.

At that moment, it was as if space itself had frozen.



Tang Ying, who stood behind Chu Feng, was so frightened by Chu Feng's action that her face turned pale and her mouth opened wide.

"Noo!!!!!!!"

After a moment of silence, the Cao Family's Family Head let out a hysterical and painful snarl.

After all, Cao Yuxuan was the most outstanding genius to have appeared in the Cao Family in many years. Practically everyone from the Cao Family had placed their hopes onto Cao Yuxuan. They all hoped that Cao Yuxuan would one day lead the Cao Family to emerge in power and become a region's hegemon.

However, Cao Yuxuan had actually been killed. This was equivalent to their Cao Family's hopes being extinguished. This result was something that the people from the Cao Family could not accept, something that they were unwilling to accept.

"You damned animal! Today, I must dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!!!"

After his furious howl of grief, the Cao Family's Family Head let out a soaring killing intent. He ignored the Tang Family's Family Head, turned around and flew toward Chu Feng with the intention to kill him.

"Woosh~~~"

However, right after the Cao Family's Family Head started to fly toward Chu Feng, a figure immediately followed after him and began to unleash fatal attacks at him.

That person was naturally the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Tang Haichuan, my son is the personal disciple of Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master. Now that he has been killed, are you planning to protect the person that killed him?"

"Can your Tang Family shoulder this responsibility?" Being blocked by the Tang Family's Family Head, the Cao Family's Family Head could only bring up Luyang's Pavilion to threaten the Tang Family's Family Head.

After all, he also knew that if the Tang Family's Family Head were to insist on getting in his way, he would have no opportunity to kill Chu Feng.

Furthermore, with how powerful Chu Feng was, if he were to continue to help the Tang Family fight against the Cao Family, the Cao Family might really end up being eliminated today.

"You are the great enemy of our Tang Family. Even if it wasn't for little friend Chu Feng, I would still kill you, let alone when little friend Chu Feng is our Tang Family's honored guest," The Tang Family's Family Head declared.

"Since you're insistent on this, your Tang Family shall die together with that animal," Seeing that his threats were useless, the Cao Family's Family Head began to unleash ferocious attacks at the Tang Family's Family Head. He planned to quickly kill the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Soldiers of the Tang Family, listen up. Kill all of these unwanted guests from the Cao Family," The Tang Family's Family Head seemed to be determined. With a single order, he increased the morale of the Tang Family's fighters, leading them to enter a fierce battle against the people of the Cao Family again.

"Chu Feng, quickly, leave this place."

"The identity of Cao Yuxuan is truly extraordinary. If people from Luyang's Pavilion were to come, you will be met with a disaster," Tang Ying urged Chu Feng to escape.

"You wish to leave? I fear that it's too late now," Right at that moment, an aged voice sounded. Following that, an old man appeared before Chu Feng.

That old man had a head full of black hair, a sinister expression and a frightening appearance. Especially that pair of eyes, they were murderous-looking. How could he possibly resemble a human? His appearance was simply akin to that of an oni. [1. Bee used the character ghost. It is the same character as the Japanese oni. While there are many different kinds of ghost appearances, I felt that this man's appearance would resemble that of an oni.]

After this old man appeared, Chu Feng started to frown. The reason for that was because not only was the aura that this old man emitted very strong, that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, the outfit that he was wearing was also that of Luyang's Pavilion.

It was very clear that old man was someone from Luyang's Pavilion.

"Tang Haichuan, Cao Kuofeng, how much longer are the two of you going to continue with your internal strife?!!!" After that old man appeared, he shouted loudly, and caused space and the void to tremble. The echoes of his voice resounded nonstop.

"Elder Yuan Zhen?" Upon seeing that old man, the expressions of the Tang Family's Family Head and the Cao Family's Family Head both changed. They both revealed expressions of surprise.

"Elder Yuan Zhen, the Tang Family has colluded with that Heavenly Clan child to kill my son. Please, you must obtain justice for my son," The Cao Family's Family Head declared.

"Elder Yuan Zhen, don't listen to his crazy and unfounded ravings. Although it is true that Cao Yuxuan was killed by Chu Feng, it is completely unrelated to my Tang Family," The Tang Family's Family Head declared.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's gaze immediately changed. He did not expect that the Tang Family's Family Head, who had acted in righteousness and declared that Chu Feng was his honored guest earlier, would immediately distance himself the moment someone from Luyang's Pavilion appeared.

The Tang Family's Family Head's actions had verified the opinion that Chu Feng had of him before. Sure enough, the Tang Family's Family Head was no loyal individual.

"If you are truly unrelated, go and personally kill that child to prove your innocence."

"As long as you kill that child, I will guarantee that the Cao Family will not be allowed to make your Tang Family enemies again," That Elder Yuan Zhen said.

"Elder Yuan Zhen, there are neither grudges nor grievances between our Tang Family and the Cao Family to begin with. Yet, they decided to attack our Tang Family with such a large force, leaving a disastrous amount of casualties in our Tang Family. We cannot just settle this matter like this," The Tang Family's Family Head declared.

“Although the Cao Family is indeed in the wrong this time around, it remains that Cao Yuxuan has died in your Tang Family’s territory. Although he was not killed by someone from your Tang Family, your Tang Family cannot escape responsibility. You know this very well in your heart.”

“Right now, you have two choices. You can continue to protect that child. However, if you are to do so, it would mean that you have decided to go against our Luyang’s Pavilion. How much longer could your Tang Family continue to exist if that were to happen? You should have a very clear idea of that.”

“As for your other choice, you are to immediately settle your grudges with the Cao Family and then personally kill that child. As for the damages the Cao Family has caused your Tang Family, I will ask Lord Pavilion Master to order the Cao Family to compensate your Tang Family for it.”

After Elder Yuan Zhen said those words, he looked to the Cao Family’s Family Head and added, “Cao Family’s Family Head, do you have any objections?”

At that moment, the Cao Family’s Family Head was filled with unwillingness. However, he did not dare to disobey Elder Yuan Zhen. Thus, he nodded and said, “If the Pavilion Master is to order it, I am willing to compensate the Tang Family. However, Tang Haichuan must personally kill that Chu Feng.”

“Tang Haichuan, the Cao Family has declared their position. It is your turn now,” Elder Yuan Zhen said to the Tang Family’s Family Head.

“Little friend Chu Feng, excuse my offense.”

Suddenly, coldness flashed through the eyes of the Tang Family’s Family Head. Then, while holding his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, he flew toward Chu Feng.

At the same time, the other people from the Tang Family also understood their Family Head’s intentions. Thus, one by one, they unleashed their weapons and surrounded Chu Feng from all directions.

“Stop!” Seeing this, Tang Ying hurriedly spread open her arms and stood before Chu Feng.

“Lil’ Ying, move aside!” The Tang Family’s Family Head shouted. He had already approached Chu Feng.

“Father, you cannot do this. Chu Feng only killed Cao Yuxuan for the sake of our Tang Family.”

“Chu Feng is the benefactor of our Tang Family. If you are to do this, you will become a treacherous betrayer. If news of this matter were to spread, what face would our Tang Family have left to exist with? You absolutely must not do this,” Tang Ying said while crying.

She had truly never expected things to turn out this way. Chu Feng had only disregarded consequences and killed Cao Yuxuan for the sake of helping their Tang Family.

Yet, her father, the Tang Family’s Family Head, actually wanted to personally kill Chu Feng for the sake of their Tang Family’s interests, their Tang Family’s existence. She was truly unable to accept this.

“Tang Haichuan, your daughter’s heart has already run into the grasp of an outsider. For the sake of the Tang Family’s future, I suggest you... place righteousness before family,” That Elder Yuan Zhen spoke coldly.

At that moment, he acted as if he was a spectator. He did not plan to personally attack Chu Feng. However, he very much wanted to personally see the Tang Family’s Family Head kill Chu Feng.

“Lil’ Ying, move aside immediately. Are you truly planning to go against your father for a mere outsider? Are you really planning to disregard the safety of the Tang Family?” The Tang Family’s Family Head’s sharp gaze narrowed. Dense killing intent appeared in his eyes.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2171 - Heaven-defying Battle**

“Father, you...” Tang Ying began to cry in an even more heart-broken manner. She truly never expected that her father would be this sort of person.

“Tang Ying, go ahead and move aside,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng pushed Tang Ying to the side. Not only did he push her aside, he also used a spirit formation to restrict Tang Ying’s movements.

He was already able to determine that if Tang Ying still refused to move, the Tang Family's Family Head, that vicious and merciless old fox, would really disregard the fact that she was his daughter and personally kill her.

"Chu Feng, you have courage. Tell me, which Heavenly Clan are you from, for you to dare to kill our Pavilion Master's personal disciple," Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

"Haha, what's this? Are you also afraid? What a bullshit Luyang's Pavilion. Turns out you're afraid of my identity too."

"This is the reason why you do not dare to personally attack me, right? You also fear that you will offend the power behind me should you kill me, isn't that right?"

"That is why you want the Tang Family and the Cao Family to kill me instead. Like that, even if the power behind me is to come and demand justice, you will have scapegoats to excuse yourselves from all responsibility."

"Most laughable of all is that this Tang Family is actually so stupid. They are actually willing to become the scapegoat. Hahaha!!!"

"It is no wonder your Tang Family would end up in its current state. I can only say, serves you right," Chu Feng laughed mockingly.

Hearing those words, the expressions of everyone from the Tang Family changed. Originally, they were confused as to why Elder Yuan Zhen refused to personally kill Chu Feng.

However, they now finally realized the reason why. It turned out that Elder Yuan Zhen was afraid of Chu Feng's identity. That was why he did not dare to personally kill Chu Feng.

However, Elder Yuan Zhen demanded that the Tang Family kill Chu Feng. This was simply equivalent to having their Tang Family become his scapegoat.

At that moment, the expressions of everyone from the Tang Family became very unsightly. After all, no one was willing to become a scapegoat.

“You’re very smart. Unfortunately, there’s nothing you can do,” Elder Yuan Zhen laughed mockingly. Then, he looked to the Tang Family’s Family Head and said, “Tang Haichuan, kill him.”

“Father, have you not heard what Chu Feng just said? Luyang’s Pavilion is simply exploiting you. They are planning to make you their scapegoat,” Tang Ying shouted loudly.

At that moment, the Tang Family’s Family Head was once again stuck between a rock and a hard place. He had actually already guessed Elder Yuan Zhen’s intentions.

Merely, there was nothing he could do about it. For the sake of the continued existence of his Tang Family, he could only choose to rely on Luyang’s Pavilion. After all, Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Originally, he had already made the firm resolution to kill Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng had declared to everyone what Elder Yuan Zhen’s intention was, that their Tang Family would become the scapegoat should they kill Chu Feng.

If he continued to choose to kill Chu Feng at such a time, not only would he be a treacherous betrayer, he would also be an utter fool.

Thus, this left him hesitant to kill Chu Feng.

“Tang Haichuan, if you refuse to kill that Chu Feng today, your Tang Family will definitely not be able to continue to exist.”

“However, if you are to kill that Chu Feng, I will guarantee you that your Tang Family will achieve meteoric success in the future; your Tang Family will become the Pavilion Master’s trusted aide,” Elder Yuan Zhen said.

“Elder Yuan Zhen, is what you said for real?” asked the Tang Family’s Family Head. He knew very well that Elder Yuan Zhen, although having the same cultivation as him, was a trusted aide to the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master. As such, there was a lot of weight behind his words.

“How could I, Yuan Zhen, a trusted aide to the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master, deceive you?” Elder Yuan Zhen spoke in a displeased manner.

"I was ignorant. Elder Yuan Zhen, please forgive me," Seeing that Elder Yuan Zhen was angered, the Tang Family's Family Head hurriedly apologized.

"Truly great dog material," Chu Feng mocked with a sneer. If he had known that the Tang Family's Family Head was this sort of person, Chu Feng would definitely not have healed him.

[1. Being a dog = a servant/slave.]

"Courting death!"

At that moment, the Tang Family's Family Head suddenly pointed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament at Chu Feng, and an oppressive might that contained surging killing intent shot toward him.

"Roar~~~"

However, right at that moment, a dragon's roar suddenly sounded. Not only had Chu Feng dodged the Tang Family's Family Head's attack, he was also standing atop the Azure Dragon.

Not only was Chu Feng's speed extremely fast, his might was also very powerful. The inescapable net formed by the people from the Tang Family was instantly broken through by Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng had broken through the net, the surroundings of the Tang Family were sealed off by a spirit formation. As such, it would be difficult for Chu Feng to easily break through the spirit formation barrier in a short period of time. If he wished to escape, there would only be a single path to escape. That was through the direction where the Cao Family had come from, through the breach in the spirit formation opened by the Cao Family's Family Head.

"Where do you think you're escaping to?" Seeing that Chu Feng was flying toward him, how could the Cao Family's Family Head sit and watch without doing anything? He held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed to attack Chu Feng.

"Did you think you can stop me just because you're a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor!" Chu Feng shouted loudly. Then, holding the Magma Emperor Sword in hand, he sliced at the space before him.

"Rumble~~~"



Immediately, a slash of flames appeared out of thin air. The might of that slash seemed to be capable of slicing through space itself.

That was not an ordinary martial skill. Rather, it was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

Seeing such a powerful attack, the expression of the Cao Family's Family Head changed. Regardless of how much he detested Chu Feng, he had to admit that Chu Feng's strength was truly heaven-defying.

Even though Chu Feng's battle power was clearly only on par with ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors, the attack that he had unleashed right now caused even the Cao Family's Family Head, a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, to feel life-threatening danger.

In such a situation, even that Cao Family's Family Head did not dare to act carelessly toward Chu Feng. He hurriedly unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill to block Chu Feng's incoming attack.

“Rumble~~~”

The two Heaven Taboo Martial Skills collided with one another. Immediately, they turned into surging energy ripples that began to spread in all directions. However, the two attacks were at a stalemate.

“Both you and your son will die by my hand.”

After that attack, not only did Chu Feng not seize the opportunity to escape, he instead unleashed another Heaven Taboo Martial Skill aimed at the Cao Family's Family Head.

“What shameless boasting!” The Cao Family's Family Head was not to be outdone. He also held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed to attack Chu Feng.

Before the two men actually approached one another, violently surging energy ripples were already wreaking havoc through their surroundings. However, once again, their attacks ended up in a stalemate.

Chu Feng was fighting against a grand rank seven Half Martial Ancestor with his cultivation of rank three Half Martial Ancestor and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

At that moment, not to mention the people from the Tang Family, even the people from the Cao Family were stunned. None of them anticipated for Chu Feng to be this powerful.

“Tang Haichuan, join hands with me to kill this child. Not only will our Cao Family settle all grudges with your Tang Family, I am also willing to compensate your Tang Family immediately,” The Cao Family’s Family Head shouted.

At the beginning, he was unwilling to compensate the Tang Family when Yuan Zhen demanded that he do so. However, after having fought against Chu Feng and discovering that Chu Feng was much stronger than he had imagined, fear emerged in the Cao Family’s Family Head’s heart.

As Elder Yuan Zhen would not interfere, the Cao Family’s Family Head could only ask the Tang Family’s Family Head to join him in killing Chu Feng.

“You must keep your word,” The Tang Family’s Family Head needed to kill Chu Feng to begin with. It was only after he saw the Cao Family’s Family Head attack Chu Feng that he decided to watch with folded arms.

However, now that the Cao Family’s Family Head had spoken those words, he would naturally not continue to watch with folded arms. He held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament in hand and joined the battle.

At that moment, two rank seven Half Martial Ancestors were fighting against Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng was pushed into a disadvantaged state after the Tang Family’s Family Head entered the battle, there was still no sign that he would be defeated.

“This Chu Feng, how could he be so powerful?”

At that moment, the people from the Tang Family and the Cao Family were all stunned. After all, Chu Feng was fighting against both of their Family Heads by himself.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.** [nove/lb-1n](#)

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## Chapter 2172 - If I Survive

“The Half Martial Ancestor realm is indeed different from the Martial Emperor realm,” At that moment, Chu Feng was also frowning.

Back when he was a Martial Emperor, not only was Chu Feng peerless among those of the same battle power, he was able to defeat even those with battle power that surpassed him by a level.

However, when Chu Feng was now facing two rank seven Half Martial Ancestors, not to mention defeating them, he felt enormous pressure just fighting them.

Although Chu Feng possessed another trump card, as he had not yet used his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, Chu Feng was not certain as to whether the Cao Family’s Family Head and the Tang Family’s Family Head would have any more trump cards.

After all, this place was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and his opponents were actual rank seven Half Martial Ancestors. Since they even possessed Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, it would not be impossible for them to have learned Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

Furthermore, other than those two Family Heads, there was also that Elder Yuan Zhen, who was standing to one side like a tiger watching its prey.

Although that Elder Yuan Zhen was also a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor like the two Family Heads, Chu Feng was able to sense that his aura was stronger than that of the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head.

Currently, he had yet to do anything, because he did not want to shoulder the responsibility of killing Chu Feng, a responsibility that might lead to trouble in the future.

However, Chu Feng was able to sense that he was not planning to let him escape. If the Cao Family’s Family Head and the Tang Family’s Family Head were truly unable to defeat him, then that Elder Yuan Zhen would definitely act to take care of him.

“Exactly who is that Chu Feng?” Seeing that the two Family Heads were unable to defeat Chu Feng even after joining hands, that Elder Yuan Zhen started to frown. His deep gaze grew increasingly colder.

Although Chu Feng was a person from the Heavenly Clans, could activate his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings to increase his cultivation to that of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor, and possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, his battle power should only be on par with ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

However, according to what he knew about the Heavenly Clans, it would be difficult for ordinary Heavenly Clansmen to defeat rank six Half Martial Ancestors even if they could increase their battle power to be on par with rank six Half Martial Ancestors after using their various abilities like Chu Feng had.

After all, their power was something that they had obtained by relying on their Inherited Bloodline, and not their actual cultivation.

However, not only did Chu Feng easily kill Cao Yuxuan, who also possessed a battle power equivalent to that of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, he was even fighting against two actual rank seven Half Martial Ancestors right now.

He was simply too heaven-defying. Chu Feng had already surpassed the comprehension Elder Yuan Zhen had of Heavenly Bloodlines.

Thinking of that, Elder Yuan Zhen’s body shifted. He began to approach Chu Feng and the two Family Heads. At the same time, his wrinkled old hand began to move toward his Cosmos Sack.

It was as Chu Feng had anticipated; Elder Yuan Zhen was not planning to spare Chu Feng, regardless of which Heavenly Clan he might be from.

If the two Family Heads were truly unable to kill Chu Feng, he would immediately act to kill Chu Feng.

“Puu~~~”

Right at that moment, a ray of blood flashed in the sky. Then, Chu Feng’s body moved back explosively.

At that moment, Elder Yuan Zhen’s eyes began to shine. A trace of joy appeared in his previously grave gaze.

The reason for that was because a bloody wound had appeared on Chu Feng's left shoulder. That wound reached deep into his bone. Not only had Chu Feng lost a huge chunk of his flesh, a large scar was left on his shoulder bone. Currently, a large amount of blood was rushing out from that wound. It was a truly frightening sight.

"That Chu Feng is injured. He was injured by the two Family Heads," Seeing this, the people from the Tang Family and the Cao Family, the two powers that were fighting one another before, actually started to cheer.

"It would seem that you're only this much too," Seeing that they had successfully injured Chu Feng, the Tang Family's Family Head revealed a relaxed smile.

As for Chu Feng, not only did he have a painful expression on his face, he was also glowering angrily. He tightly clenched onto his Magma Emperor Sword as he swept his gaze at the Tang Family's Family Head and the Cao Family's Family Head. Gnashing his teeth, he said fiercely, "If I, Chu Feng, survive today, I will definitely extinguish your Tang and Cao families!"

"What arrogance! Unfortunately, you will not have the chance to do so, because you will definitely die today!" Right after the Tang Family's Family Head said those words, he once again started to unleash an attack at Chu Feng.

The Cao Family's Family Head also held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed to attack Chu Feng again.

"Boom!!!"

"Boom!!!"

As if they followed up on their victory and pressed home the attack, the Cao and Tang Family Heads both unleashed their Heaven Taboo Martial Skills simultaneously.

The two Heaven Taboo Martial Skills were one fire-based and the other water-based. As they interweaved with one another, not only did they not decrease one another's strength, their might even increased enormously.

"Come!" Furious, not only did Chu Feng not dodge the attack, he instead raised the Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand and unleashed a

Heaven Taboo Martial Skill composed of both wind and lightning toward the two Family Heads.

“Rumble~!!!!”

The three Heaven Taboo Martial Skills collided with one another. The powers of wind, lightning, water and fire turned into surging energy ripples that swallowed the entire region.

“Ahhh!!!!”

A scream was heard from within the rumbling. It was Chu Feng’s voice.

At that moment, all of the Half Martial Ancestor-level experts revealed joy on their faces. After Chu Feng’s scream stopped, they were no longer able to sense Chu Feng’s aura.

This was especially true for the two Family Heads that had their attention fixed onto Chu Feng the entire time. They were able to sense that Chu Feng’s body had exploded into pieces after his violent scream.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, a blazing sword fell from the sky, piercing the ground.

It was Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword.

Seeing that, the Tang Family and Cao Family’s Family Heads immediately waved their sleeves to disperse the energy ripples.

At that moment, the crowd present were all overjoyed. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s figure was no longer capable of being seen in the sky.

This meant that Chu Feng had been killed. Furthermore, he had been killed without even a corpse remaining.

“Noo!!!!”

Seeing this scene, Tang Ying knelt onto the ground with tears flooding out from her eyes uncontrollably.

“Chu Feng, I am the one who caused your death, it is all because of me.”

At the same time, Tang Ying began to ruthlessly slap herself.

Self-blame. Extremely pained self-blame. The way she saw it, if it wasn't for her, Chu Feng would not have died.

"Little sister, what are you doing? That Chu Feng was extremely daring, and actually killed Lord Pavilion Master's personal disciple. His death is the fault of his own crimes. Do not harm yourself for someone like him. It is unworthy of you."

Seeing that, Tang Long removed the spirit formation that had restricted Tang Ying and used his own power to completely seal off Tang Ying's movements. He feared that she would continue to inflict harm upon herself due to self-blame.

"Release me! Release me! I no longer want to be part of the Tang Family! I no longer want to stay in such a despicable family!" Tang Ying shouted hysterically.

"What did you say? Say it again!" Hearing those words, Tang Long who was deeply distressed for his younger sister earlier immediately revealed an expression of anger.

"I said that I refuse to stay in a family that breaks faith and abandons right, I will no longer be a part of the Tang..."

"Paa~~~"

Before Tang Ying could finish her words, a resounding slap landed on her face. That slap knocked her fiercely to the ground.

After that slap, blood began to flow from Tang Ying's face. That slap was from Tang Ying's eldest brother, Tang Long. His slap was many times more powerful than the slaps which Tang Ying had given herself earlier.

"You insolent fool! How long did you even know that Chu Feng?! Yet, for a mere outsider, you actually plan to disregard the family that has given birth to you and raised you?!"

"Since you are that shameless and are willing to leave our Tang Family for a mere outsider, I might as well beat you to death today, so that you don't

shame our Tang Family anymore!” Tang Long pointed at Tang Ying and spoke in a very fierce manner.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2173 - The Cicada Sheds Its Carapace**

“Big brother, don’t be like this. This is only a sudden impulse from our little sister.”

Upon seeing this, Tang Hu and Tang Yong hurriedly rushed over. No matter what, they were unable to watch as Tang Long beat Tang Ying to death.

The scene of the Tang Family’s four siblings was seen by the people from the Cao Family. Furthermore, they were immensely enjoying themselves. The way they saw it, this was merely a rare show.

However, at the moment when the Tang Family’s four siblings were making a ruckus, Elder Yuan Zhen slowly walked toward the Magma Emperor Sword.

“This Incomplete Ancestral Armament is no small matter. Through this Incomplete Ancestral Armament, that Chu Feng’s origin can be determined.”

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Elder Yuan Zhen extended his hand and grabbed. Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword was pulled into his hand.

When speaking of it pleasantly, he wanted to use this Incomplete Ancestral Armament to determine Chu Feng’s origin. However, he had actually just planned to seize it for himself.

“This...” However, right after he grabbed the Magma Emperor Sword, Elder Yuan Zhen’s expression changed enormously. Then, he clenched his fist, and with a “boom,” the Magma Emperor Sword was shattered.

“How could this be?!” Seeing this scene, many people revealed shocked expressions.



After all, that was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Regardless of how powerful that Elder Yuan Zhen might be, with his cultivation, he would not be able to so easily destroy an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Crap! We’ve been deceived!” At that moment, the Tang Family and the Cao Family’s Family Heads were the first to react.

At the moment when the Magma Emperor Sword was shattered, they had realized that the Magma Emperor Sword was not an actual Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

However, as they had fought against Chu Feng earlier, they knew very well that the weapon Chu Feng had used was an actual Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

For the situation at hand to occur, it would only mean one thing -- that Magma Emperor Sword was a fake created by Chu Feng, whereas the real one was taken away by Chu Feng.

In other words, Chu Feng had not died. Instead, he had seized the opportunity to escape.

Merely, no one noticed how Chu Feng had escaped.

“Why are you all still standing there? Quickly, go and chase after him! If that Chu Feng isn’t killed, all of you will have to suffer the consequences!” Elder Yuan Zhen shouted angrily. After he finished saying those words, he disappeared.

He had left the area through the breach in the spirit formation that was created by the Cao Family to search for and capture Chu Feng.

“Damn it!” In response, the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head’s bodies shifted as they rushed in pursuit of Chu Feng.

At that moment, only the people from the Tang Family and the Cao Family remained. They all had bewildered expressions on their faces.

Even though Elder Yuan Zhen had not declared it clearly, they were able to realize that it seemed that Chu Feng had not died, and had instead escaped.

Upon thinking that they had tried to kill someone from the Heavenly Clans, only to end in failure and with that person's escape, everyone became extremely frightened. In fact, those that were more cowardly even started to shiver.

Even though they were all martial cultivators, and should have great wisdom and the capability to withstand shock, it remained that they were filled with endless fear when they thought of how there would be people from the Heavenly Clan coming here to attack them.

After all, what they would face at that time would be the calamity of certain death.

"Chu Feng is alive?" However, at this moment when the great majority of people were filled with fear, Tang Ying revealed an expression of happiness.

Even though she knew that the Tang Family would be in an extremely dangerous situation should Chu Feng escape alive, that her family might face fatal dangers, she still wished for Chu Feng to be able to escape alive.

She did not want Chu Feng to die.

As for Chu Feng, he was naturally alive.

Chu Feng had utilized the undying and indestructible property of his body that he had gained after fusing with the Five Elements Secret Skills. He had dispersed his body into the five different energies of wood, gold, water, fire and earth.

Then, using his world spirit techniques, he had altered the aura of the energies, as well as how evident they appeared to be.

Then, taking advantage of the energy ripples formed by the collision of the three Heaven Taboo Martial Skills that engulfed the entire surrounding area, he snuck into the energy ripples and secretly escaped from the Tang Family.

As for the reason why Chu Feng had decided to escape, it was because he did not possess absolute certainty in being able to defeat the Tang Family's Family Head, the Cao Family's Family Head, and that Elder Yuan Zhen, those three rank seven Half martial Ancestors.

Today, the Tang Family had decided to betray Chu Feng, their benefactor, for the sake of their own self-interest. Chu Feng was determined to obtain revenge.

Thus, for the sake of his vengeance, Chu Feng had to escape. When he held certainty of being able to defeat the Tang Family's Family Head, he would return to take care of the Tang Family.

In short, Chu Feng would absolutely not swallow what was done to him here today. He would definitely teach the Tang Family a ruthless lesson.

Furthermore, it would not only be the Tang Family. Chu Feng would also not spare that Cao Family.

Chu Feng had not been joking around when he said that he would eliminate the Tang and Cao Families.

.....

After escaping the Tang Family, Chu Feng proceeded for the Darknight Ghost Forest directly. Although Chu Feng should have hidden himself, as he had just escaped danger, and should be escaping as far away from the Tang Family as possible, Chu Feng had not forgotten about Wang Qiang's safety.

Since he had already obtained the Demon Subduing Spring Water, Chu Feng must proceed for the Darknight Ghost Forest immediately to search for that demonic woman and save Wang Qiang.

Else, Chu Feng feared that if he were to delay too long, Wang Qiang would be killed by that demonic woman.

The Darknight Ghost Forest was located opposite the Radiance Immortal Mountain. Although its area was not as vast as the Radiance Immortal Mountain, the Darknight Ghost Forest was still very large.

Most importantly, the trees inside the Darknight Ghost Forest were very special. Not only were the branches and leaves like sharp blades, they were also pitch-black in color.

Furthermore, there were no living creatures in the Darknight Ghost Forest. Even the wind was unable to penetrate the forest. That place looked as if it had been cursed. It was so quiet that it was scary.

As Chu Feng walked in the forest, the place could be said to be pitch-dark. Even though this sort of darkness was unable to block Chu Feng's vision, the stifling sensation still caused Chu Feng to feel uneasy.

"Wang Qiang, you disappointing fellow, you must stay alive."

At that point in time, Chu Feng had already been searching in the Darknight Ghost Forest for several days now. However, he was still unable to find any traces of Wang Qiang or that demonic woman.

This caused Chu Feng to feel even more uneasy. After all, that demonic woman was said to feed on men. The more time passed, the greater the possibility that Wang Qiang would be killed by her.

"That is?!!!"

Suddenly, Chu Feng revealed a stunned expression as terror and unease appeared in his eyes.

Immediately afterward, Chu Feng's body shifted as he rapidly flew forward.

Soon, Chu Feng arrived at a very dangerous forest. There were many Ancient Era's formations in that place. Furthermore, they were hidden very well. It would be simply impossible for ordinary people to discover them. Furthermore, if they were to trigger those Ancient Era's formations, they would definitely be killed.

After Chu Feng passed through the Ancient Era's formations, he arrived at the central region of the vast forest. In that place, Chu Feng saw a whole bunch of bones.

The current state of those bones were all exactly the same; all their source energies had been refined. They were extremely frail.

Due to the fact that the bones had already deteriorated, Chu Feng was unable to determine the cultivations that the owners of the bones had possessed when they had been alive, nor was he able to determine their genders.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell that it had not been a long time since the owners of the bones had been killed. If he had to calculate the time of their death, Chu Feng felt that they must be the group of people that had been brought away together with Wang Qiang that day.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2174 - Wang Qiang's Dead?**

Other than the bones, there was also a small bed formed by piling up trees. Furthermore, there were traces of a campfire.

All of this signified that someone had been living here before.

What sort of people would have lived in this sort of place? Naturally, it would definitely be that demonic woman.

Thus, Chu Feng was certain that this place must be that demonic woman's base, that the bones here were the remains of the people captured by that demonic woman that time.

However, as the bones were already deteriorated, Chu Feng was unable to determine which set of bones were Wang Qiang's. However, he must determine whether or not Wang Qiang's bones were among this pile of bones.

It would be fine if Wang Qiang's bones were not present in the pile of bones. However, if Wang Qiang's bones were present, it would mean that Wang Qiang had died by the hands of that demonic woman. As for that, it was something that Chu Feng did not wish to happen.

With no other alternative, Chu Feng decided that he would count the number of bones present. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had realized that the situation was amiss when Wang Qiang decided to harass the demonic woman. At that time, Chu Feng had subconsciously paid attention to all the people present at that time.

Intentionally or otherwise, Chu Feng remembered the number of people captured by that demonic woman.

Thus, through counting the number of bones, Chu Feng could have a rough determination as to whether or not Wang Qiang's bones were present here.

Although there was no reliable basis for his theory, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang would be the last to die among that group of men captured.

"Damn it!"

“Damn it!!”

“Damn it!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously, and he began to gnash his teeth in anger. At the same time, an intense sense of grief surged forth in his eyes.

“God damn it!”

Then, Chu Feng clenched his fist and ruthlessly smashed it down onto the ground. He caused the earth to tremble as if an earthquake had hit. The trembling continued.

Chu Feng had counted the pile of bones. Their numbers was actually the same as the amount of people captured that day. This meant that Wang Qiang’s should also be among them.

However, those were bones. If Wang Qiang’s bones were also among them, it would mean that Wang Qiang was definitely dead. n).0velbIn

“Why am I this weak? Why am I this weak?”

“I’m useless, I’m truly useless! When I am unable to even protect my friend, how am I supposed retrieve my dignity?”

“Trash! Chu Feng, you are simply trash! Through and through, you are trash!!!”

Chu Feng started to shout hysterically. He was truly heartbroken and filled with sorrow in that moment. Although he did not shed tears, he was feeling extremely pained.

While Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had not known each other for a very long time, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang was someone that could be befriended ever since he had first met him.

After knowing that Wang Qiang had protected him in the shadows before, Chu Feng felt extremely grateful toward him.

Especially when Wang Qiang told him that he only felt Chu Feng to be pleasant, Chu Feng was determined that Wang Qiang would be his brother.

Yet now, Chu Feng saw Wang Qiang being captured by the demonic woman, but was powerless to do anything about it. Due to him being unable to do anything, Wang Qiang ended up being eaten alive by that demonic woman.

When he thought of how Wang Qiang would've been skinned and had his tendons pulled by that demonic woman before being eaten one large bite at a time and dying miserably, Chu Feng felt enormous hatred for that demonic woman. At the same time, he detested himself for being useless, for being weak.

Suddenly, a dull voice sounded. "Was a relative of yours eaten by that demonic woman?"

Chu Feng abruptly stood up upon hearing that voice. He cast his fierce gaze toward the direction of the voice.

However, upon seeing it, Chu Feng stood there in a stunned manner. It was actually an old monk.

This old man was very thin, and his outfit was extremely worn. There were a lot of patches on his already worn-out cotton clothes, causing him to look like a beggar.

However, although his clothes were worn, they were very neat and tidy; they were actually untainted by even a speck of dust.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that this shriveled old monk was no ordinary person.

The reason for that was because he possessed no cultivation, and appeared no different from an ordinary person that had never embarked on the path of martial cultivation. However, how could an ordinary person reach such a dangerous place?

"Who are you?" Chu Feng held down his sorrow over Wang Qiang's death and questioned the old monk cautiously. However, Chu Feng did not address that old monk as 'senior.'

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was unable to ascertain whether this old monk was friend or foe. In fact, he was unable to determine whether this old monk was even human or not.

After all, this place was not only the Darknight Ghost Forest, it was also the demonic woman's base. As such, there would be no reason for this old monk to come here for no reason at all.

"Judging from the reaction you had earlier, I know for certain that you must have a relative that died by that demonic woman's hand."

"However, if you wish to find that demonic woman for revenge, I'd urge you to leave this place as soon as possible. Even if you have brought Demon Subduing Spring Water with you, the disparity between your cultivations is still too enormous. As such, it is impossible for you to be a match for that demonic woman," The old monk said calmly.

"You know that demonic woman?" Chu Feng asked.

"What if I do?" The old monk asked.

"Quickly, tell me where that demonic woman is ," Chu Feng flipped his wrist and revealed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the Magma Emperor Sword.

At the same time, he unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. Chu Feng's boundless aura soon engulfed the entire surrounding region.

However, even when faced with such a Chu Feng, the old monk's expression remained unchanged. Instead, he smiled lightly and said, "Not to mention that I do not know, even if I did, I would not tell you."

"Taking the side of evil, you also deserve to die!" The anger Chu Feng had held back with great difficulty exploded. He gripped his Magma Emperor Sword and rushed to attack the old monk.

"Woosh~~~"

The old monk waved his sleeve and caused a light burst of wind. That wind actually blew Chu Feng back repeatedly. Not only was Chu Feng blown back, even his oppressive might and killing intent was dispersed by that gentle breeze.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt a chill in his heart. Although he had already guessed that the old monk might be a cultivation expert, Chu Feng did not expect that he would be so powerful.



If Chu Feng were to fight against the demonic woman straightforwardly, he would be no match for her.

Likewise, if Chu Feng were to fight against this old monk straightforwardly, even a hundred Chu Fengs would not be enough to kill this old monk.

“Seeing that you have only done such a foolish action due to your grief over the death of your relative, this old monk will not bicker with you today,” The old monk said calmly.

“Are you a human or not?” Chu Feng asked.

“So what if I am, and so what if I’m not?” The old monk refused to answer.

“That demonic woman willfully slaughters innocents. How can you ignore her actions?” Chu Feng asked. He was trying to pry into whether the old monk was on the side of the demonic woman or not.

After all, that old monk’s strength was definitely above that demonic woman’s. If he wanted to kill that demonic woman, it would be impossible for that demonic woman to survive.

“Willfully slaughter innocents? If the death of humans would be innocent, then what about the deaths of ferocious beasts and monstrous beasts?”

“Even the grass and trees have lives. Your casual steps will easily trample countless living things.”

“A single martial skill from you would destroy an innumerable amount of lives. Are you to say that you are not willfully slaughtering innocents?”

“If I must eliminate evil in the world, then this old monk should eliminate all the people in the world,” The old monk said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart sunk. Even though the old monk was using sophistry, what he said was not without reason.

After all, it was true that flowers, plants and trees were all living things. When experts fought with one another, merely an energy ripple from them could destroy a region; a single martial skill would cause the death of countless flowers, plants and trees.

If innocents must be mentioned, those flowers, plants and trees had never offended anyone. Thus, their deaths would truly be very innocent.

“Since we have met, it would mean that it is fate. As you are feeling aggrieved and heartbroken from the death of your relative, it would mean that you are an affectionate and honest individual. As such, I will give you a word of advice.”

“To obtain revenge, one must first have the strength to do so. As for comprehending the path of martial cultivation to reach successive breakthroughs, one must have a calm heart.”

“Thus, you are hopeless the way you are,” The old monk said. After he finished saying those words, he stepped into the air and began to walk away. Although his footsteps were very slow, his speed was extremely fast. In merely a blink of an eye, he had reached the sky.

“Senior, exactly who are you?” Chu Feng shouted.

Although that monk did not have any intention of eliminating the demonic woman, he also had no intention of attacking Chu Feng. Even though Chu Feng had lost his reasoning from anger earlier and attacked the old monk while also offending him repeatedly, the old monk still did not harm Chu Feng.

Instead, he provided Chu Feng with advice. It could be said that he had indirectly helped Chu Feng. Thus, regardless of whether the old monk was a human or not, he had earned Chu Feng’s respect, earned the title of ‘senior.’

“I am merely a nobody. Pretend like you never met me. Do not mention me to anyone else, it will be of no benefit to you,” The old monk’s voice sounded. However, his figure had already disappeared without a trace.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2175 - Rank Two Half Martial Ancestor**

“Exactly who was that person?” Chu Feng’s gaze grew complicated.

Even though he didn’t know who that old monk was, Chu Feng had decided to follow his advice, and began to put forth great effort to pacify the grief and indignation he was feeling.

Chu Feng had to do his best to comprehend the way of martial cultivation so that he could break through to rank two Half Martial Ancestor as soon as possible.

As long as he became a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng would be able to take care of the Cao and Tang Families. Even if he were to encounter that Elder Yuan Zhen again, Chu Feng would also not be afraid.

However, there was one thing that Chu Feng did not listen to the advice of the old monk on; he did not leave the Darknight Ghost Forest.

Wang Qiang had died by the hands of that demonic woman. Chu Feng absolutely could not leave the matter at that. In fact, Chu Feng was unable to wait; he was impatient to kill that demonic woman. Else, the regret and hatred in his heart would not be alleviated.

Thus, Chu Feng set up many layers of spirit formations around the residence of that demonic woman. As long as the demonic woman returned, Chu Feng would be able to discover and track her.

Simply put, Chu Feng was planning to ambush her.

While Chu Feng was hiding in the Darknight Ghost Forest, training and lying in wait for the demonic woman, Luyang's Pavilion had already gained news of what had happened in the Tang Family.

In a certain sleeping chamber in Luyang's Pavilion, Elder Yuan Zhen was kneeling on the ground. In the direction that he was kneeling toward was a large bed.

The square-shaped bed was over a hundred times the size of an ordinary bed. Special gauze cloth dangled on the four sides of the bed.

Within the gauze cloth, one could not clearly see what was happening on the bed even when using world spirit techniques to do so.

Although one could not see what was happening on the bed clearly, one could faintly see through the gauze with one's naked eye that there were several tens of women absolutely naked on the bed. They were all serving a single person. As for that person... he was the Luyang's Pavilion Master.

“If he’s dead, then let it be. After all, I have only ever taken on three personal disciples because of a sudden urge.”

“Merely, that fellow by the name of Chu Feng absolutely cannot be allowed to escape. I must let the people of the world know that, not to mention a disciple of mine, a disciple of this Chu Luyang, even if it’s a dog of mine, no one can be allowed to kill them,” From the bed sounded the voice of the Luyang’s Pavilions Pavilion Master, Chu Luyang. [1. The name Luyang... lu → land. Yang → as in yin and yang. Yang is the male/positive/hot principle.]

“Merely, Lord Pavilion Master, since that Chu Feng is surnamed Chu, could he be from your Chu Heavenly Clan?” Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

“Chu Feng? I do not recall there being a person by that name in our Chu Heavenly Clan,” After Chu Luyang said those words, his tone suddenly changed. He added, “No, there seems to have been one by such a name.”

“There is someone by the name of Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, Elder Yuan Zhen’s expression changed enormously. At that instant, he was covered with sweat as fear and nervousness filled his face.

The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were not people that a minor character like himself could afford to offend. If Chu Feng was truly someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, he feared that even his Lord Pavilion Master would not be able to protect him.

“Indeed, there is a fellow by that name. However, he has long since died. Furthermore, even if he were alive, it would be useless. The reason for that is because he was trash that did not even possess a Heavenly Bloodline.”

“Hahahaha...” Chu Luyang burst into sudden laughter, “If you hadn’t mentioned it, I would’ve forgotten about that father and son. They are the greatest joke to our Chu Heavenly Clan. Hahahaha.”

Chu Luyang laughed frantically. It was as if he had truly recalled a very funny joke.

However, Chu Luyang’s laughter caused Yuan Zhen to feel completely baffled. He truly did not understand how a single person would make Chu Luyang indulge in such laughter.

“Lord Pavilion Master, even if that Chu Feng is not a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he is most definitely someone from another Heavenly Clan.”

“For him to have escaped, I fear that there will be trouble in the future,” Elder Yuan Zhen said worriedly.

“Oh Yuan Zhen, I have nurtured you for this long, how could you not even understand something as simple as this?” Chu Luyang said.

“Please forgive this subordinate for his ignorance,” Elder Yuan Zhen lowered his head.

“Let me ask you, if you were someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, would you not declare the name of the Chu Heavenly Clan should you encounter trouble?”

“Even if you are not from the Chu Heavenly Clan, but instead from another Heavenly Clan, you would still declare your Heavenly Clan’s name should you encounter trouble, no?” Chu Luyang said.

“Lord Pavilion Master is very wise. This subordinate would indeed do so,” Elder Yuan Zhen nodded.

“It would not only be you, any normal person would do so. However, did that Chu Feng ever mention his clan?” Chu Luyang asked.

“He did not,” Elder Yuan Zhen replied.

“There you go. Why did he not mention his clan?” Chu Luyang asked.

“Could it be, that even if he declared his clan, his clan would not help him?” Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

“That’s right. If his clan would protect him, why would he not bring forth his clan’s name?”

“Thus, do not tremble with fear whenever you encounter someone with a Heavenly Bloodline.”

“There are a lot of people in the Heavenly Clans. As for bastards that possess Heavenly Bloodline but not the acknowledgement of their clans, they are even more numerous,” Chu Luyang said.

"This subordinate understands," Elder Yuan Zhen came to a sudden realization. His expression turned to one of joy.

At that moment, he finally realized why Chu Feng had the name Chu Feng even though he was not part of the Chu Heavenly Clan. The reason for that was because he simply did not belong to any Heavenly Clan. Instead, he was a bastard renounced by his Heavenly Clan.

"It's good that you understand. Furthermore, remember this: even if he is someone from a certain Heavenly Clan, my Luyang's Pavilion will still have no fear."

"You can withdraw now," Chu Luyang said.

"This subordinate shall take his leave," Elder Yuan Zhen bowed respectfully. Then, he turned to leave.

"Wait," Suddenly, Chu Luyang's voice sounded.

"Woosh~~~"

Then, a title plate flew out from the bed and landed in Elder Yuan Zhen's hand.

"Lord Pavilion Master, this is?" Upon receiving that title plate, Elder Yuan Zhen immediately revealed an overjoyed expression on his aged face.

That was a title plate that allowed one to mobilize Luyang's Pavilion's elders. In other words, it was an emblem of power. With that title plate in hand, even those with strength greater than Elder Yuan Zhen would have to follow his orders obediently.

"After you capture that Chu Feng, do not kill him immediately. You must properly torture him," Chu Luyang said.

"Lord Pavilion Master, could it be that you know who he is?" Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

"Know who he is?"

"How could I know some trash like him? I merely dislike his name. That's why I will not let him have a comfortable death. This is the price he must pay for having the wrong name," Chu Luyang said.

“This subordinate understands. I will definitely not disappoint Lord Pavilion Master,” Elder Yuan Zhen vowed.

.....

Chu Feng had no idea what had happened in Luyang’s Pavilion. The entire time, he had been in the Darknight Ghost Forest waiting for the return of the demonic woman while painstakingly training.

Just like that, several more days passed in a flash...

Although the demonic woman had never returned, Chu Feng’s training had not been in vain.

Currently, Chu Feng was sitting in a concealment formation. He was concentrating fully.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, a boundless aura spread out from Chu Feng’s body. If it wasn’t for the fact that his spirit formation had stopped the spreading of the aura, it would definitely have created a huge commotion.

The very next moment, Chu Feng opened his eyes. Not only were his eyes brightly spirited, they were also sharper than before.

However, at the same time, ice-cold killing intent emerged in Chu Feng’s eyes.

He slowly clenched his right fist and sensed the surging power in his body. Suddenly, he looked to the direction of the Tang Family and declared with a low voice, “Tang Family, it is time for you all to pay.”

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shifted. His speed was many times faster than before.

It turned out that Chu Feng’s current cultivation was no longer that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, he had become a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

After several days of laborious training, Chu Feng had finally managed to break through the barrier, and become an actual rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2176 - Lingering Fear**

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared in the place near where Chu Feng was previously meditating.

It was actually that mysterious old monk.

At that moment, the old monk's gaze was fixed to the sky. Astonishment filled his deep gaze.

If others were to look at the sky that he was looking at, they would not discover anything special about it. However, the old monk saw a scene, a scene that surprised and even astonished him as he looked to the sky.

“That seemed to be the legendary Divine Tribulation.”

“But, ninety percent of its power is still lingering in the sky. Such a frightening power, but only a tenth actually descended?”

“Could it be that it's because only a tenth of its power descended that the might of the Divine Tribulation did not appear?”

“How did he accomplish that? Not only does he train in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, he also managed to make the legendary Divine Tribulation weaken its power to use only a tenth of its power to punish its cultivator?”

Suddenly, the old monk turned his gaze toward the direction that Chu Feng had left in. His gaze remained in that direction for a very long time. He had started to ponder.

“That child, exactly what is his origin?”



“Chu Feng; could it be that he’s from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The more he pondered, the more complicated the old monk’s gaze became.

If someone who recognized this old monk saw his current gaze, they would definitely feel disbelief.

The reason for that was because very few people had ever managed to make him reveal that sort of gaze, let alone a young man.

.....

“Father and grandfather are truly amazing. If it wasn’t for the experience that they have imparted me with, breaking through would definitely be as difficult as scaling the heavens.”

Chu Feng was concealed in the void as he flew toward the direction of the Tang Family. Even though he was already a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, he was feeling lingering fear.

The reason for that was because while his breakthrough appeared to be normal, it was anything but normal. It was not as simple as Chu Feng having reached a breakthrough from rank one Half Martial Ancestor to rank two Half Martial Ancestor. In addition to that, he had also experienced the cleansing process of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Merely, the first cleansing process was not as world-shaking as the legends had it. In fact, it could be said that it did not cause any change to the world.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still felt as if he had just survived a calamity.

When Chu Feng first broke through his bottleneck, before he even broke through in cultivation, Chu Feng sensed a very frightening power appearing in the sky. Furthermore, that power was aimed at him. That was the power of the Divine Tribulation.

Chu Feng felt that if all of the power of the Divine Tribulation were to land, he would definitely die without even his soul remaining.

However, the power of the Divine Tribulation did not all descend upon him. In the end, only a tenth of its power descended upon him.

As for the reason why this was the case was all thanks to his father Chu Xuanyuan and his grandfather Chu Hanxian.

At the same time when Chu Feng's father had imparted the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique to Chu Feng, he had also imparted to him the method to handle the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

After all, the power of the Divine Tribulation was capable of causing massive destruction. The higher a cultivation one tried to reach a breakthrough in, the more frightening the power of the Divine Tribulation. Although one needed a very powerful willpower when facing the Divine Tribulation, it would simply be impossible for one to withstand the power of the Divine Tribulation should one try to meet it head-on.

Thus, if one wanted to withstand the might of the Divine Tribulation, there needed to be a certain method of doing so. The easiest method of doing so would be to temper oneself. Through the power of the Divine Tribulation, one could cleanse one's body so that it could adapt to the power of the Divine Tribulation.

With each breakthrough, one could gradually increase the strength of the cleansing process so as to be able to take on an even more powerful Divine Tribulation.

However, it remained that the Divine Tribulation was extremely frightening. If one did not undergo any treatment before receiving all of the Divine Tribulation's powers, not to mention adapting to it, one might directly be killed by the Divine Tribulation.

As for this time, Chu Feng had received the Divine Tribulation's first cleansing. The reason why he had only received a tenth of the Divine Tribulation's power was precisely because of that concealment formation.

No one would've thought that a mere concealment formation would be able to misguide the Self-punishment Mysterious Formation and let the legendary Divine Tribulation only descend with a tenth of its power.

However, Chu Feng knew about it. As for the reason why he knew, it was all thanks to his father and grandfather.

"The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique truly possesses a well-deserved reputation. It would appear that my future cultivation journey will be

very difficult,” Chu Feng frowned slightly. After the Divine Tribulation’s first cleansing, the always confident Chu Feng was no longer that confident anymore.

Although a tenth of the Divine Tribulation’s power might not appear to have created any commotion, to the point where even the grasses and trees in the surrounding region were unaffected, that didn’t mean that a tenth of the Divine Tribulation’s power would be extremely weak.

On the contrary, the power was not weak at all. In fact, it was much more frightening than the complete power of the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

The reason for that was because all one-tenth of the Divine Tribulation’s power had struck Chu Feng. Not a single bit was wasted.

Even though Chu Feng had managed to withstand it without suffering any injuries, he had done so with great difficulty. Thus, this allowed him to know that what had happened here today was merely the beginning, that his next breakthrough would definitely be even more challenging.

The reason for that was because even if he were to use a concealment formation when attempting his next breakthrough, it would be impossible for the Divine Tribulation to only descend with a tenth of its power.

The power of the Divine Tribulation that would strike him the next time would be twenty percent.

Furthermore, the power of the first Divine Tribulation would be incomparable to that of the next one. After all, the stronger one’s cultivation was, the more powerful the Divine Tribulation would be.

Most importantly, when the power of the Divine Tribulation that descended upon Chu Feng surpassed fifty percent, it would no longer be formless. Instead, it would become visible to everyone.

At that time, not only would its power be boundless, it would also have enormous momentum.

In other words, if Chu Feng did not wish to create a grand commotion when attempting to break through to rank six Half Martial Ancestor, he must find a hidden location to conduct his breakthrough.

Else, he would most definitely create an enormous commotion.

Furthermore, when Chu Feng attempted to break through to rank two Martial Ancestor, the concealment formation will lose its effectiveness.

At that time, what Chu Feng would have to withstand would be the entire power of the Divine Tribulation.

Thus, before that, Chu Feng must grow accustomed to the boundless power that the Divine Tribulation possessed. Else, he would definitely be killed.

All of those things combined to determine that Chu Feng's future path of martial cultivation would be filled with difficulties.

"This Tang Family truly did not place me in their eyes."

In merely a blink of an eye, Chu Feng had arrived at the Tang Family. He discovered that the Tang Family had not even activated their defensive formation, and their security was extremely lax. Compared to the time when they had fought against the Cao Family, it could be said to be a difference of heaven and earth.

"Could it be a trap?" Chu Feng's gaze changed. In the end, he decided to conceal his aura and secretly infiltrate the Tang Family.

Because what the Tang Family did to him was truly too excessive, no matter what, Chu Feng was unable to contain the anger and hatred he held toward them.

At the beginning, Chu Feng was very cautious after infiltrating the Tang Family. However, he soon discovered that he was overthinking things. There was simply no trap at all. Rather, the Tang Family truly did not place him in their eyes.

The reason for that was because not only was the Tang Family's security extremely lax, none of the experts had remained in the Tang Family. Of the people from the Tang Family that remained, there was actually not a single Half Martial Ancestor.

Suddenly, Chu Feng saw a servant girl. Chu Feng recognized that servant girl. It was the same servant girl that had secretly reported to Tang Ying that

her two older brothers were planning to marry her off to the Cao Family.  
n(.o//v/(ε/-ℓ--B-)1-.n

Chu Feng felt that this servant girl could be considered to be Tang Ying's trusted aide. Thus, he captured her when she was off guard and brought her to a secluded area.

"Lord Chu Feng, it's you?!"

To Chu Feng's surprise, the frightened servant girl's fear disappeared the moment she saw Chu Feng. Furthermore, she even revealed a delighted expression.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2177 - The Pitiful Tang Ying**

"Don't address me as 'Lord,' merely Chu Feng will do," Chu Feng said with a light smile.

"Lord Chu Feng, d-did you return with reinforcements? Have you come to eliminate our Tang Family?" That servant girl asked.

"If you're talking about the group of people in the Tang Family now, then no, I, Chu Feng, will not kill them. I, Chu Feng, am not one who kills the weak," Chu Feng shook his head. To Chu Feng, the people remaining in the Tang Family right now were all powerless individuals. As such, Chu Feng would not kill them.

"Lord Chu Feng, you are truly a good man. I-In that case, can you save our Young Miss?" The servant girl begged Chu Feng.

"Your Young Miss? Are you talking about Tang Ying?" Chu Feng asked.

"Yes, it's our Young Miss Tang Ying," That servant girl said.

"What happened to Tang Ying? Quickly, tell me about it," Chu Feng asked.

The servant girl did not conceal the matter from Chu Feng, and began to inform him of everything that had happened.

“Tang Haichuan, you are truly bold. For the sake of preserving your Tang Family, you actually refuse to let off even your own daughter,” Fury immediately emerged in Chu Feng’s eyes after knowing what had happened.

It turned out that after Chu Feng escaped, although Elder Yuan Zhen was furious that the Tang and Cao Families allowed Chu Feng to escape, he did not violate his promise, and really made the Tang and Cao Families reconcile with one another. Furthermore, at the same time, he made the Cao Family compensate the Tang Family for their loss. He also made them hand over many territories to the Tang Family.

After that battle, although the Tang Family’s loss was great, the benefits they had obtained were much greater than their losses.

To the Tang Family, this was truly a profit from a disaster. However, Elder Yuan Zhen had a demand. That was, he wanted the Tang Family’s Family Head to marry his youngest daughter Tang Ying to the Cao Family’s Family Head’s youngest son, that retard.

Faced with that decision, the Tang Family’s Family Head chose the interests of the Tang Family without the slightest hesitation, and sold his own daughter to the Cao Family.

When speaking of that matter, it was quite a coincidence. The Alliance Ceremony between the Tang and the Cao Families was to be held in several days’ time. At that ceremony, Tang Ying would officially be married off to the Cao Family.

“Lord Chu Feng, the reason why Elder Yuan Zhen disliked our Young Miss is precisely because she pleaded for you that day.”

“Right now, our Young Miss can be said to be completely isolated; the people that were closest to her have betrayed her.”

“Right now, the only person that could save our Young Miss would be you, Lord Chu Feng.”

“Lord Chu Feng, I beg of you, please, please save our Young Miss.”

“If our Young Miss is truly to be married off to the Cao Family, she might end up dying there. That Cao Family most definitely plans to torture our Young Miss.”

“After all, Cao Yuxuan was killed by you, and all the people in the Cao Family know that you possess an extraordinary relationship with our Young Miss. They will definitely aim their hatred for you at our Young Miss,” When she spoke to this point, the servant girl fell to her knees before Chu Feng. Her cheeks were already covered in tears.

“You are very loyal to your Young Miss. Rest assured, I will save her.”

“However, do not mention that you have seen me to anyone. Pretend like I never appeared, because it will only serve to harm you.”

Hearing Chu Feng’s words, the servant girl raised her head and planned to express her thanks. However, to her surprise, she discovered that Chu Feng was already gone. Furthermore, there was a floating Cosmos Sack where Chu Feng had previously been standing.

After receiving that Cosmos Sack, the servant girl’s expression immediately turned sluggish. The reason for that was because the riches and treasures contained in the Cosmos Sack were things that she would find very difficult to obtain in her entire lifetime.

.....

Chu Feng traveled rapidly. He managed to arrive at the Cao Family before the Alliance Ceremony of the Tang and Cao Families.

For the sake of the marriage, the Cao Family had invited a vast amount of guests. Not only had the nearby powers arrived, even some of the people from Luyang’s Pavilion had arrived. Elder Yuan Zhen was naturally among their ranks.

Tomorrow was the day of the Tang and Cao Families’ Alliance Ceremony. It would also be the day that Tang Ying would be married into the Cao Family.

Chu Feng planned to save Tang Ying beforehand. He absolutely could not allow Tang Ying to undergo that marriage ceremony with the Cao Family’s youngest son.

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, the Tang Family had already handed Tang Ying to the Cao Family at an earlier date. They had truly and completely sold Tang Ying away. n(.o//v/(ε/-ℓ--B-)1-.n

After a series of inquiries, Chu Feng finally found out where Tang Ying was located. Not only did she not receive the treatment of a bride, she was even imprisoned in an underground prison.

The prison was very heavily guarded. It would simply be impossible for ordinary people to enter it. However, this posed no threat to Chu Feng.

In order to not alarm anyone, Chu Feng did not kill anyone. Instead, he used a special technique to render the people inside the underground prison unconscious. It was only then that he entered the prison.

Before Chu Feng even reached the cell that Tang Ying was held in, Chu Feng was already able to see Tang Ying being held inside the prison.

At that moment, Tang Ying was tightly bound by spirit formation ropes. Not to mention moving, she was unable to even speak.

Although Tang Ying was not crying, her reddened eyes were already swollen. This meant that she had cried for a very long time before.

Her eyes were dispirited. It was as if she had no more longing for living anymore; it seemed she was determined to die.

The way Chu Feng saw it, if it wasn't for the fact that her movements were restricted by spirit formation, she would've likely killed herself by now.

After all, she had been betrayed by her closest people, her family.

When Chu Feng saw the scene in the underground prison, what emerged in his heart was not only pain, but also anger.

The reason for that was because Tang Ying was not the only person in that prison cell. Standing before her was a woman.

That woman was quite good-looking, and was dressed quite gorgeously. In a revealing outfit, she appeared very alluring.

However, although this woman might appear to be young, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that she was at least a thousand years old.

"Why aren't you speaking? You damned bitch, tell me why you decided to break the promise of marriage, why did you refuse to marry my son? Is it because of that Chu Feng?"



“Speak, speak! Oh, I nearly forgot, you are unable to speak. Even your ability to speak has been taken from you by your family members.”

“However, you cannot blame your family. After all, you are so shameless.”

“Hehe, I might as well tell you this. Cao Yuxuan’s death by that Chu Feng’s hand is also related to you. Cao Yuxuan’s mother will definitely not spare you. Sooner or later, you will die.”

“However, there is simply no need for Cao Yuxuan’s mother to take care of you. The reason for that is because I will not spare you. Your decision to break the marriage with my son before is simply an insult to my son.”

“Thus, don’t you think that you will really become our Cao Family’s daughter-in-law because we allowed you to be married to my son.”

“After the marriage ceremony tomorrow, it will be the time of your death, Tang Ying. However, I will not let you die easily. I will make you first wish that you were dead.”

“I have already gathered a hundred homeless wanderers, as well as a hundred of the ugliest monstrous beasts. I will have them rape you in succession.”

“You want to remain chaste? You want to look down upon my son? I’ll have you suffer torment, pain and ruin before you die!!!” That woman pointed to Tang Ying and said fiercely.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng knew that this woman was most definitely the Cao Family’s youngest son’s mother.

Being insulted like that, Tang Ying would naturally also be furious. However, as she was unable to speak, she could only glower at the retard’s mother.

“Bitch, you dare glare at me?!” The retard’s mother was immediately furious. She raised her hand and made to swat Tang Ying’s cheek.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

**Chapter 2178 - Friends**

“Paa~~~”

After a crisp sound, that woman’s expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because not only did her slap not land on Tang Ying’s face, it was instead caught by someone.

Naturally, the person who had blocked her slap was Chu Feng.

“W-Who are you?” Evidently, this woman did not know who Chu Feng was. She had an extremely startled expression.

“I am Chu Feng,” Chu Feng declared.

“What, y-y-you are Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, that woman immediately turned around to flee. However, her hand was still in Chu Feng’s grasp. As such, how could she possibly escape?

“Men! Help! Chu Feng is here!” In panic, the woman started to shout for help.

“Humph,” However, Chu Feng merely snorted coldly. Then, with a flip of his sleeve, he knocked that woman into the corner of the prison.

Then, with another flip of Chu Feng’s sleeve, he undid the spirit formation sealing Tang Ying.

“Punish her however you wish. For someone like her, there is no need to show any mercy,” Chu Feng said as he pointed to that woman.

“No, don’t!” Upon hearing that, the woman immediately screamed in terror. However, her voice grew weaker and weaker. It was not only her voice that became very weak; even her aura became very weak. She was completely restricted by Chu Feng.

“Who are you calling a bitch?! If you want to talk about bitches, you’re the bitch. Who doesn’t know about your actions of inciting the Cao Family’s Family Head?”

“In order to be married to the Cao Family’s Family Head, you even killed your twin younger sister. You are simply inhuman!”

Tang Ying was finally able to unleash her anger now. Unrestrained, she started to beat up the woman, leaving her face completely bruised and lacerated.

Tang Ying beat her unconscious.

After seeing that she had lost consciousness, Tang Ying finally ceased her attacks. Her anger seemed to have been alleviated, as the anger that she had shown previously was substituted by nervousness.

“Chu Feng, why would you be here? The Cao Family and the Tang Family are searching for you all over,” Tang Ying said to Chu Feng nervously.

“I have naturally come here to save you. Don’t forget, I am your bodyguard,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“But...”

“There’s no but. I’ll ask you this: if I were to bring you away, would you be willing to leave with me?” Chu Feng asked.

“The current Tang Family is no longer my, Tang Ying’s, family. As for the people in the Cao Family, they are determined to torture and humiliate me. I would naturally want to leave. But...”

“There’s no but. If you wish to leave, I can bring you away now. Although you will have no relatives from this point on, you will have friends,” Chu Feng said to Tang Ying with a smile.

“But...” As Tang Ying spoke, she looked to the place where she had been tied up earlier.

Her intentions were very clear. If she were to leave, the Cao Family would definitely discover that she had escaped. If that were to happen, the situation would be bad.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly extended his finger and pointed at that woman.

With each flick of his finger, a strand of spirit power entered that woman’s body.

In the blink of an eye, an enormous change occurred to that woman's body. Not only did her facial appearance turn into Tang Ying's appearance, even her clothes turned into Tang Ying's clothes.

Then, with a wave of Chu Feng's sleeve, that woman ended up at the place where Tang Ying had previously been tied up. Even the spirit formation that had been restraining Tang Ying, that had been canceled by Chu Feng, once again reemerged.

Merely, the spirit formation ropes were no longer tying up Tang Ying. Instead, they were tying up that woman.

However, to others, it appeared just as if the ropes were tying up Tang Ying.

"Chu Feng, you couldn't possibly..." Seeing this scene, Tang Ying immediately thought of something. She was both startled and delighted.

"That's right. I'm going to have that retard marry his deranged mother. I'll completely humiliate the Cao Family," Chu Feng declared.

"I truly never expected for you to be this malicious," Although Chu Feng's plan was extremely crazy, Tang Ying supported it absolutely. Just thinking about the expression the people from the Cao Family would have caused Tang Ying immense satisfaction.

"Malicious? When facing good people, I, Chu Feng, will be the best person. However, when facing bad people, I, Chu Feng, will be the worst person."

"Perhaps I will not be able to compare to others in terms of goodness, but in terms of evilness, I, Chu Feng, will not lose to anyone," Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Tang Ying felt warmth in her heart. This was especially true as she had just been betrayed by her family, by the people that she had trusted most in her entire life. She felt so extremely warm that tears began to roll down her eyes.

"Hey, hey, hey, stop crying. This is the way life is. This is the nature of your family. Although it might be cruel for you to see their true nature today, it remains a good thing. As for why, you will understand in the future," Although Chu Feng's words were a bit harsh, he had also raised his hand to personally wipe away Tang Ying's tears.

At that moment, Tang Ying felt extremely glad. She was glad that she had decided to go to the Radiance Immortal Mountain that day. She was glad to have met Chu Feng.

Before, she felt that there was nothing left for her in this world. However, she now discovered that that wasn't the case.

At the very least, she had a true friend. As for that person, it was Chu Feng.

Although she and Chu Feng had only known one another for a short time, Chu Feng was willing to brave dangers for her.

Then, Chu Feng brought Tang Ying out of the Cao Family.

As for the guards of the underground prison, Chu Feng naturally woke them back up. The guards did not know that they had lost consciousness earlier. However, they felt that something was amiss. Thus, the first thing they did was to run to the prison cell that Tang Ying was imprisoned in to survey her.

It was only after they opened the prison cell and discovered that Tang Ying was still there that the guards breathed a sigh of relief.

Suddenly, the warden asked. "Eh, this is strange, when did the Sixth Madam leave?" He only remembered when the Sixth Madam arrived at this place, and did not remember the Sixth Madam leaving.

"She should have just left, right?" In response, the various guards started to hurriedly lie.

Naturally, they would not dare to say that they did not know when the Sixth Madam had left.

The reason for that was because if they said it like that, it would mean that they had neglected their duty, something that they would be punished for.

"Mn, it's good that that's the case. Sixth Madam has been in a bad mood recently. We cannot afford to offend her," As the warden spoke, he began to lead the guards out.

"Wuu!"

"Wuu!!"

“Wuu!!!”

Right at this moment, that woman suddenly regained consciousness. When she saw the prison guards, she tried to cry for help. However, she was surprised to discover that not only was she unable to speak, she was also unable to move in the slightest. All she could do was let out muffled groans.

In panic, tears started to roll down her cheeks.

“Damned bitch, the fuck are you shouting about?!” The warden walked into the prison cell, raised his hand and ruthlessly slapped that woman.

“Milord, is this really fine? After all, she is to be married off to our Young Master tomorrow,” The other guards were all startled to see this.

“The hell are you all afraid of? Do not forget that I, your lord, know world spirit techniques,” The warden said. As he spoke, he began to use his world spirit techniques to heal that woman. Soon, the cheek with the bloody handprint was healed.

“Haha, Milord, you’re truly amazing,” In response, the guards started to flatter their warden.

“Of course,” The warden had a proud expression. As he spoke and laughed, he walked out of the prison cell.

However, he had no idea that the woman he had hit earlier was not Tang Ying. Rather, it was the Sixth Madam that he did not dare to offend.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2179 - Retarded Sex Fiend**

At that moment, Chu Feng had already brought Tang Ying to a place far from the Cao Family. Not only did he prepare sufficient travel expenses for Tang Ying, he had also used his world spirit techniques to help her alter her appearance.

Unless one was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it would simply be impossible for anyone to see through Tang Ying’s altered appearance.

“From today on, your name can remain Ying. However, your full name cannot be Tang Ying, understand?”

“Furthermore, I can only bring you here. You will have to travel the rest of your journey yourself. Get as far away from here as you can and do not return here,” Chu Feng instructed Tang Ying.

“Chu Feng, will we be able to meet again in the future?” Tang Ying asked.

“If fate wills it, we will definitely meet again,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, will you eliminate all the people of our Tang Family?” Tang Ying asked.

“It would be best that you do not ask about this matter. I fear that the answer will make you feel uncomfortable,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, Tang Ying grew silent. She knew that Chu Feng would definitely not spare the people of the Tang Family.

Even though the people from the Tang Family had betrayed her, it remained that they were her relatives. The affection of many years was not something that could be erased so easily.

Upon thinking that her father and old brothers would all be killed, she felt very pained and reluctant.

However, she did not know how she could persuade Chu Feng to spare them. After all, the Tang Family had indeed wronged Chu Feng enormously.

Furthermore, she owed Chu Feng enormously.

“No matter what, I must still thank you,” Tang Ying said to Chu Feng.

“Stop acting this foolishly. In the future, you must make sure to not believe people that easily. Remember, you must take care of yourself,” Chu Feng said to Tang Ying with a smile.

“Mn,” Tang Ying nodded.

“Go on, I’ll see you off from afar,” Chu Feng said.

Tang Ying smiled sweetly. She did not wish for Chu Feng to see a sad expression on her during their separation; she wished to leave behind a good impression for Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because she knew that this separation might be a separation of a lifetime.

Tang Ying walked away. Gradually, she disappeared from Chu Feng's line of sight.

As for Chu Feng, he felt even more sadness in his heart. In one's life, one would meet many people that would end up separating. Tang Ying was one such person for him.

However, he wished that Tang Ying would be able to live a better life in the future. The reason for that was because Chu Feng could imagine how painful it must be for her to be betrayed by the family that that she loved the most.

After silently looking at the direction in which Tang Ying had left for a very long time, Chu Feng turned around and began to proceed toward the direction of the Cao Family.

Tang Ying's guess was correct, Chu Feng would spare neither the Tang Family nor the Cao Family.

Tomorrow, at the Alliance Ceremony held at the Cao Family, it would be the time for Chu Feng to dispense justice on the Tang and Cao Families.

.....

The next day, the Alliance Ceremony between the Tang and the Cao Families began as scheduled. All of the people who were able to enter this place could be considered famous and powerful existences in the area.

Even though both the Tang Family and the Cao Family were actually unwilling to enter this alliance - the two families were, after all, killing one another not long ago, and both had suffered casualties in the process - they had to appear very merry, as there were this many guests, and even Luyang's Pavilion's Elder Yuan Zhen and many other experts present.



After seeing the merry appearance of the Tang and Cao Families, the guests that had arrived were all quite surprised. After all, they had heard that the Tang and Cao Families were at each other's throats not long ago.

Originally, many people were skeptical when they heard the news that the Tang and Cao Families would be allying with one another. They had come here with doubt in their hearts. However, to their surprise, the Tang and Cao Families were actually really going to become allies.

Even though they had questions in their hearts, it remained that people from Luyang's Pavilion were present. As such, the guests did not raise any mood-dampening questions. Instead, they all pretended to be very happy.

With this being the case, this Alliance Ceremony naturally became even livelier. It had reached what the Tang and Cao Families had hoped for.

During the lively excitement, no one noticed that an uninvited guest had infiltrated this Alliance Ceremony. This person was naturally the person that the Tang and Cao Families were secretly searching for, Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had been surveying the strength of the people from Luyang's Pavilion the entire time.

The reason why Chu Feng was only surveying the strength of the people from Luyang's Pavilion was because he was already capable of ignoring the Tang and Cao Families' forces.

The reason for that was because even their strongest Family Heads would not be a match for Chu Feng now.

Chu Feng also did not place that Elder Yuan Zhen in his eyes. Between those with the same battle power, Chu Feng did not fear anyone.

However, Chu Feng knew that the power of Luyang's Pavilion was most definitely not limited to this. Although Elder Yuan Zhen's status might be high in Luyang's Pavilion, his strength was definitely not overly strong.

Thus, Chu Feng was focused on surveying the others from Luyang's Pavilion. After surveying the others from Luyang's Pavilion, Chu Feng felt relief.

The reason for that was because of the people from Luyang's Pavilion that had come to this Alliance Ceremony, the strongest person was actually Elder

Yuan Zhen. The others were weaker than even Yuan Zhen. As such, Chu Feng would naturally not have to be afraid of them.

However, even after he determined that the people present in the Alliance Ceremony would pose no threat to him, Chu Feng did not act immediately. The reason for that was because he wanted to enjoy a great show first.

As for that, it would be the scene of the Cao Family's Family Head's Sixth Madam being married to the Cao Family's youngest son.

From Tang Ying, Chu Feng came to find out that even though the Cao Family's youngest son was retarded, he was extremely perverted, and had defiled many women.

In fact, even many children had ended up being captured by his vile hands. Most disgustingly, he would even defile boys who were young and tender-looking.

Furthermore, many of the children were killed by him from the rape due to being too young. He was most definitely an animal.

As for that animal's mother, that so-called Sixth Madam, she was not a good person either.

Originally, the person the Cao Family's Family Head had grown fond of was actually the Sixth Madam's twin sister. However, for the sake of position and wealth, the Sixth Madam had personally caused the death of her twin sister.

The Cao Family's Family Head also knew about this matter. However, it remained that the dead could not be brought back to life. Furthermore, the Sixth Madam's appearance was exactly the same as her twin sister's. Thus, not only did the Cao Family's Family Head not kill her, he instead took her as his wife.

After the Sixth Madam married into the Cao Family, she immediately started to incite trouble. Any servant she was not fond of was killed by her immediately. She was extremely cruel.

Thus, Chu Feng did not feel any sense of guilt when doing such a thing to that mother and son. Instead, he felt that it was what they deserved. After all, he felt that what he schemed could be said to be helping the heavens do a good deed.

Moreover, his actions would completely disgrace the Cao Family, and also humiliate the Tang Family. As such, this could be said to be killing three birds with one arrow.

The Alliance Ceremony continued without a hitch. It was merely a ceremony that caused one to feel sleepy.

After the Alliance Ceremony ended, Chu Feng's highlight of the day, the marriage between Tang Ying and the Cao Family's youngest son, finally appeared on stage.

When Cao Yu appeared on stage, many people wanted to laugh. That fellow was extremely ugly. It was as if he was soft in the head. His mouth was crooked, and his eyes were slanted. Furthermore, saliva was dripping from his mouth nonstop.

His appearance resembled neither the Cao Family's Family Head nor his mother.

However, if that was all there was to it, the crowd would not have wanted to laugh. Most importantly, he was being helped up to the stage by two servant girls.

Furthermore, as he walked, his eyes were fixed onto the servant girls' chests nonstop. The more he looked, the more saliva he began to drool. His pervertedness was extremely obvious.

Seeing Cao Yu acting like this, the rumors of his outrageous lust were verified. When thinking of a retard that lacked intelligence and did not even know who his parents and siblings were, yet would have such lust and think about doing perverted things all day, how could one not feel the urge to laugh?

[1. Chinese people are not PC at all. They would only be PC if the person is in front of them or the person is of a higher status than them. So yeah... when judging this from a Western POV, what Bee wrote is definitely not something publishable in the 21st century. But China? Still there.]

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2180 - Outrageous Boldness**

### **- Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2180 - Outrageous Boldness**

#### **Chapter 2180 - Outrageous Boldness**

“Hey, what’s going on with the Cao Family? It’s Young Master Cao Yu’s happy occasion, why are his hands and feet bound?” Right at this moment, a voice sounded from a seat afar. This voice caught the attention of the crowd.

Naturally, it was Chu Feng who spoke. However, no one knew that it was Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng had disguised his appearance.

“What’s going on? Did the Cao Family really bind Cao Yu’s limbs? Why did they do that?!”

Hearing those words, the crowd were all surprised. However, upon closer inspection, they noticed that while Cao Yu’s hands were covered by his special groom’s outfit, they were completely motionless. It seemed as if they were truly bound.

At this moment, the crowd finally realized why Cao Yu did not do anything even though he was nearly driven mad with lust by the two servant girls supporting him.

It turned out, his hands were bound. Even if he wished to move... he would not be able to.

“Haha, my youngest son was inattentive when he was training a martial skill several days ago. It led to his hands being injured. That is why his arms are not moving,” The Cao Family’s Family Head explained.

“So Young Master Cao Yu also knows martial skills. This is the first time I’ve heard of that, hahaha!!!” Chu Feng laughed mockingly. Furthermore, his laughter was very loud. It practically filled the entire Cao Family.

While others might be scared of the Cao Family, Chu Feng was not afraid of them.

After Chu Feng said those words, many people present also had the urge to laugh. The reason for that was because they all knew that even though Cao

Yu possessed cultivation, it had been instilled in him by the Cao Family using special methods, that he simply did not know how to cultivate.

Thus, it was most definitely utter nonsense for the Cao Family's Family Head to declare that Cao Yu had injured his hands because he was training in a martial skill.

Furthermore, upon thinking that the Cao Family's Family Head lied because he was trying to conceal the fact that his son was too perverted, the people present felt it to be even more laughable.

However, out of respect for the Cao Family, not a single person dared to laugh. One by one, they all swallowed their laughter.

"Hahaha, little friend, you truly know how to crack jokes. There is no one in our Cao Family who does not know how to train in martial cultivation, let alone when it's my son," The Cao Family's Family Head said with a beaming smile. Although he spoke pleasantly, the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng contained a trace of killing intent.

He was using his killing intent to threaten Chu Feng. Furthermore, voice transmissions were entering Chu Feng's ears.

Those were voice transmissions from the people of the Cao Family. Some were asking who Chu Feng was, and others were telling Chu Feng to watch his words. In short, like the Cao Family's Family Head's gaze, they were all threatening Chu Feng.

All the things that were happening right now were things that had Chu Feng anticipated.

Of course, Chu Feng was not afraid of this sort of situation. The reason for that was because even if the Cao Family did not try to do anything to him, he would still not spare them.

In fact, it was not only the people of the Cao Family who disliked Chu Feng, the people from Luyang's Pavilion also felt disdain for Chu Feng.

No matter what, the Cao Family was a subsidiary power to Luyang's Pavilion. For Chu Feng to incite troubles for the Cao Family like that meant that he also did not place their Luyang's Pavilion in his eyes.

However, to Chu Feng, he did not care about any of this. The reason for that was because he was not planning to spare either the Cao Family, the Tang Family or Luyang's Pavilion today.

"Go and invite the bride out. Do not hold up this ceremonious occasion," Elder Yuan Zhen said. He spoke those words in order to alleviate the awkward situation.

"Yes," The people from the Cao Family understood Elder Yuan Zhen's kind intentions. Without hesitation, they soon brought the other main character today, Tang Ying, onto the stage.

When Tang Ying was brought to the stage, her head was covered by a veil. The veil was very special, and capable of blocking all sorts of observation methods. Thus, no one was able to see her facial appearance.

Actually, even if the veil was removed, no one would be able to discover that it was not Tang Ying. After all, the facial alteration spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up was still there. Only Chu Feng was able to lift that spirit formation.

Thus, at this moment, the person that was doing the ritual kneeling and bowing to heaven and earth with Cao Yu, the person that was marrying him, was not Tang Ying. Rather, it was Cao Yu's biological mother.

"First bow to the heaven and earth!!!"

"Second bow to one's parents!!!"

"Husband and wife, bow to one another!!!"

When the marriage director shouted the final instruction, Cao Yu, with the assistance of the servant girls, bowed to Tang Ying.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that Tang Ying was being supported by a strong Cao Family servant girl during the kneeling and bowing ceremony.

The reason for this was naturally because they were afraid that Tang Ying would refuse to do the ceremony. However, no one would've expect that the person kneeling and bowing with Cao Yu was simply not Tang Ying at all. Rather, it was Cao Yu's own mother.

"Woosh~~~"

Chu Feng waved his sleeve. Suddenly, a surge of wind suddenly swept forth and moved directly toward the wedding stage.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In response, the Cao Family’s Family Head who sat on the stage also waved his sleeve, and unleashed his aura of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. He planned to use his own strength to suppress that wind.

“Huu~~~”

However, the wind suddenly accelerated. Even though the majority of the wind was suppressed by the Cao Family’s Family Head, there was still a gust of wind that reached the bride on the stage. That wind blew away the red veil covering the bride’s face.

When the red veil was lifted, the expressions of the crowd all changed to ones of shock. This was especially true for the people of the Cao Family. They stood there as if petrified; they were completely stunned. Soon... their complexions turned ashen.

“That... that seems to not be the Tang Family’s Young Miss, right?”

Tang Ying could be considered to be a celebrity in the surrounding region. Thus, many people recognized her. When they discovered that the woman on stage was not Tang Ying, they were all surprised. After all, today was the wedding ceremony between Tang Ying and Cao Yu.

Suddenly, a cry of surprise sounded from the crowd. “I-I-Isn’t that the Sixth Madam?”

“What? The Cao Family’s Sixth Madam? Isn’t she Cao Yu’s biological mother?”

The crowd were all shocked upon hearing those words. Although not many people had met the Cao Family’s Sixth Madam before, a lot of people knew that the Cao Family’s Sixth Madam was Cao Yu’s mother.

“Heavens! It really is the Sixth Madam! This means that Cao Yu has undergone a marriage ceremony with his own mother!”

“Heavens! Exactly what is going on here?! Why would the Cao Family’s Family Master betroth his own wife to his son?!”

The crowd were all stunned and confused as to what the Cao Family was thinking.

As for the people of the Cao Family, they felt that they were completely disgraced. This was especially true for the Cao Family’s Family Head; his complexion turned from blue to purple, and then from purple to green. He was nearly driven insane.

“Tang Haichuan, what is the meaning of this?!” In anger, the Cao Family’s Family Head looked to the Tang Family’s Family Head. He thought that this was caused by the Tang Family.

“Why are you shouting at me?! Didn’t I already hand my daughter to your Cao Family? Why are you demanding things from me now?” The Tang Family’s Family Head immediately shifted responsibility away from himself.

“Yoh, yoh, yoh, what’s this? Before the marriage even began, you’ve already sent your daughter away? What is the meaning behind that? Family Heads, why am I confused?” Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded again.

“Insolent! The person that caused the wind earlier was you! Exactly who are you?! You dared to come stir up troubles in my Cao Family?!” The Cao Family’s Family Head pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

At this moment, the crowd present all turned their gazes to Chu Feng.

From the very beginning, Chu Feng had been creating troubles for the Cao Family. The people present also wanted to know exactly who this outrageously bold man was.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2181 - Merely A Single Sword Strike**

“Cao Family’s Family Head, what’s wrong? How could you have forgotten about me this quickly?” Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he flipped his sleeve and removed the clothes he wore.



At this moment, not only did Chu Feng reveal his true appearance, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings also covered his entire body.

“It’s you?!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, not only were the people from the Tang and Cao Families shocked, even the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Elder Yuan Zhen was shocked.

His expression changed enormously as he stood up nervously.

“Those Thunder Wings and that Thunder Armor...”

“He... he... he is someone from the Heavenly Clans!!!”

“Heavens! Judging by his age, he should be a member of the younger generation. A member of the younger generation actually possesses this level of cultivation, exactly which Heavenly Clan managed to nurture such a genius?”

In addition to the people from the Tang and Cao Families, many of the people that did not know who Chu Feng was also revealed shocked expressions. In fact, they were much more astonished than the Tang and Cao Families.

Many people did not know about the conflict between Chu Feng and the Tang and Cao Families. That said, it didn’t change the fact that they revealed astonished expressions upon seeing Chu Feng.

The reason for that was not only because Chu Feng had revealed that he had a Heavenly Bloodline, the cultivation that he had obtained at his young age also caused countless people to gasp with admiration.

“Everyone, I bet you all do not know who I am.”

“To make a long story short, I am called Chu Feng. Days ago, when the Cao Family was attacking the Tang Family, I received a request from the Tang Family’s Young Miss Tang Ying and fought for the Tang Family.”

“In that battle, in order to save the Tang Family, I killed the Cao Family’s Third Young Master, Cao Yuxuan.”

“Precisely because of that, Luyang’s Pavilion decided to interfere in this matter, and demanded that both the Tang and Cao Families to lay down their personal grudges to join hands and take care of me.”

“As for the Tang Family, for their own interests, they decided to break faith and aim their weapons at me, who had been helping them the entire time.”

“Everyone, I ask of you all, is this the way one should act?” Chu Feng spread his hands and asked the crowd.

At this moment, the crowd had burst into an uproar. The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had said was truly too astonishing.

Merely his declaration that he had killed Cao Yuxuan caused the crowd to gasp in surprise. After all, Cao Yuxuan’s reputation had not been falsely obtained.

Chu Feng had helped the Tang Family kill Cao Yuxuan. Yet, the Tang Family instead kicked their benefactor in the teeth. This came as an even greater disbelief for the crowd.

“Chu Feng, never would I have expected that you would dare to come here alone,” Suddenly, Elder Yuan Zhen laughed and walked out.

When he first saw Chu Feng, he was frightened. He became extremely nervous because he feared that Chu Feng had brought reinforcements.

However, after he observed his surroundings, he discovered that Chu Feng had not brought any reinforcements with him. Instead, he had arrived by himself. Upon discovering that, his nervousness was immediately cast away, and replaced with a mocking smile.

The reason for that was because he was able to ascertain that Chu Feng was a so-called ‘bastard child’ that Chu Luyang spoke of. All of the Heavenly Clans had a lot of bastard children. As for those bastard children, they simply did not have any backing.

Right after Elder Yuan Zhen said those words, the expressions of the surrounding crowd changed once again. After all, Elder Yuan Zhen did not declare what Chu Feng had said to be false. Since he did not deny it, it indirectly verified what Chu Feng had said.

Upon thinking that Chu Feng had actually killed the Cao Family's genius Cao Yuxuan, and that the Tang Family were actually ingrates, the crowd became even more astonished.

"Haha..." At this moment, Chu Feng laughed. He said, "Taking care of you bunch, I myself will suffice."

"What shameless boasting," Elder Yuan Zhen snorted coldly. Then, he said to the Cao and Tang Families' Family Heads, "Tang Haichuan, Cao Kuofeng, I will present you two with an opportunity to redeem yourselves. This time, do not let him escape."

"Elder, please rest assured. We will definitely not give him the opportunity to escape again."

"Woosh~~~"

"Woosh~~~"

As they spoke, Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng unleashed their respective Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and charged to attack Chu Feng.

Their actions immediately caused their Ancestral-level martial power to scatter in all directions.

At the same time, two enormous surges of power surged toward Chu Feng.

They were extremely powerful, and definitely not ordinary martial skills. They had already surpassed Heaven Taboo Martial Skills.

Being utilized with their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, they turned into two sinister and enormous ferocious beasts. The two ferocious beasts roared nonstop. It was as if they were going to devour everything. Their might was simply unstoppable.

Those were two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills. As Chu Feng had anticipated, the two Family Heads really had grasped Emperor Taboo Martial Skills. Although their mastery over their Emperor Taboo Martial Skills was not comprehensive, it remained that they were actual Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

"This sort of sensation!!!"

“Could those be legendary Emperor Taboo Martial Skills?!”

The expressions of many people changed enormously. Astonishment filled their eyes.

From the two martial skills’ might, they were able to determine that those were Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

However, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, his battle power remained only at the level of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor after he used his various abilities. The crowd truly did not understand why the two Family Heads, two rank seven Half Martial Ancestors who could clearly kill Chu Feng effortlessly, would have to unleash such powerful attacks against him.

Why would they use their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and Emperor Taboo Martial Skills? Even if their opponent was someone from the Heavenly Clans, wouldn’t this be too excessive still?!

“Today, you will undoubtedly die!”

When the two Family Heads successfully unleashed their Emperor Taboo Martial Skills and sealed off Chu Feng’s path of escape with their Emperor Taboo Martial Skills, they revealed complacent smiles.

The way they saw it, they had allowed Chu Feng to escape last time out of carelessness.

However, this time around, they had unleashed their strongest attacks right away. As such, there was no way for Chu Feng to escape.

However, they had no idea that even though Chu Feng appeared to still be a rank one Half Martial Ancestor that had increased his battle power to that of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor through his various techniques, Chu Feng’s actual cultivation was already that of a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

After using his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, Chu Feng’s cultivation had already increased to that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Adding on his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, Chu Feng’s actual battle power was equal to that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was practically unrivaled among those of his same level of battle power. Even though the two Family Heads had unleashed their strongest attacks, Chu Feng still possessed no fear of them.

Merely, Chu Feng had deliberately concealed a level of cultivation. His intention was precisely to make the two Family Heads become careless.

“Rumble~~~”

At this moment, the Emperor Taboo Martial Skills the two Family Heads unleashed with their Incomplete Ancestral Armament struck from the sky.

Before the two martial skills actually reached Chu Feng, they had already caused space itself to rumble nonstop. The might of these attacks were simply akin to the arrival of doomsday.

Merely sensing their might could cause one to feel enormous fear. Their frightening might was fixed onto Chu Feng.

“Heh...”

However, even though he was faced with such a frightening might, Chu Feng smiled and stood there motionlessly. It was as if he was waiting for death.

“Rumble~~~”

Finally, the two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills struck Chu Feng. They turned into two violently surging energy ripples that began to sweep out in all directions.

At this moment, the entire region was engulfed in primal chaos. Countless innocent people met their miserable deaths in this place. They were utterly destroyed by the energy ripples.

At the same moment, Chu Feng’s aura also disappeared.

“Haha...”

The Tang Family and Cao Family’s Family Heads, the two former enemies, were unable to contain themselves, and started laughing.

The way they saw it, Chu Feng would definitely be killed by them this time around. Finally, they had eliminated a hidden danger.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, the sound of wind began to be heard from the frightening energy ripples.

A great wind swept forth. In an instant, it completely dispersed the frightening energy ripples.

At the same time, five elemental energies of wind, lightning, water, fire and earth started to rapidly fly toward the two Family Heads.

“What is that?!”

Seeing the bodies of elemental energies, the expressions of the two Family Heads changed enormously. The reason for that was because they sensed fatal danger from the five elemental energies.

Furthermore, the speed of those five elemental energies was extremely fast, so fast that they were simply impossible to dodge.

“Woosh~~~”

When the five bodies of elemental energy managed to approach the two family heads, they actually began to condense together.

At this moment, enormous shock appeared in the two Family Heads’ alarmed gazes.

The reason for that was because those five bodies of energies fused together into a humanoid shape. Furthermore, that person was Chu Feng.

At the time when Chu Feng regained his body, he was less than three meters from the two Family Heads. He slashed with the Incomplete Ancestral Armament Magma Emperor Sword that he held in his hand.

“Boom~~~”

A blaze of fire swept forth through the air. Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng, the Family Heads of the Tang and Cao Families, were chopped in two.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## Chapter 2182 - Massacring The City

With merely a single strike, the two Family Heads' bodies were hacked in two from the blazing slash.

The two bodies were destroyed. However, the two Family Heads were not actually dead. Instead, they turned into two spirit bodies and flew to escape.

However, Chu Feng spread open his hand, and a boundless attractive force spread forth.

The two spirit bodies were rapidly sucked toward Chu Feng's palm. Furthermore, they were rapidly decreasing in size. Finally, like two rats, they were being firmly held by Chu Feng.

At this moment, the two Family Heads were struggling nonstop. However, they were simply unable to escape Chu Feng's grasp. This caused their faces to be filled with panic.

"Tang Family's Family Head, when you decided to kick your benefactor in the teeth and attack me that day, did you think that you would see this day?" Chu Feng asked with a cold voice. Dense killing intent emerged in his eyes.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please spare me, please spare me. Please take Lil' Ying into consideration and spare my life," The Tang Family's Family Head began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness nonstop.

"You still have the nerve to mention Tang Ying to me?" Upon hearing him mention Tang Ying, the killing intent in Chu Feng's eyes increased instead of decreasing.

"Elder Yuan Zhen! Elder Yuan Zhen, save me!!!" Sensing that the situation was amiss, the Tang Family's Family Head immediately turned to plea Elder Yuan Zhen for help.

"Today, no one will be able to save you."

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he clenched his fist. "Puchi," Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng's spirit bodies were smashed to pieces. They had been utterly killed.

Seeing this scene, many of the surrounding people were startled. None of them expected Chu Feng to be this powerful, for him to be able to easily kill the two Family Heads.

“So you were hiding your cultivation.”

At this moment, Elder Yuan Zhen’s eyes were shining. He had noticed that Chu Feng’s cultivation was that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor after activating his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. However, he had clearly only been a rank three Half Martial Ancestor earlier. This made him realize that Chu Feng had deliberately hidden his cultivation earlier, that he had intentionally let the two Family Heads become careless.

“You only realized that I had concealed my cultivation now? I’m afraid that it’s already too late,” Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then, he swept his gaze over his surroundings and said to the people present, “Today, I, Chu Feng, will massacre this city. Those of you who are unrelated to this, leave immediately.”

Once Chu Feng finished saying those words, surging killing intent sprang forth. The boundless killing intent flowed into the air and turned into black clouds that filled the sky. The black clouds resembled savage ferocious beasts that galloped in the sky. Their frightening aura filled the region.

“Run away!”

Sensing the killing intent and seeing Chu Feng’s abilities, the crowd all realized that Chu Feng was not joking around. Thus, many people began to soar into the sky and fly far away to escape this place. They were deeply afraid that they would be implicated in the battle that was about to take place.

After all, the attacks the Tang and Cao Family Heads had unleashed at Chu Feng earlier had already killed many innocent bystanders.

Although the people had escaped from the Cao Family, they had not actually escaped from the city. After all, they were all curious, and fond of watching lively excitements.

Although this lively excitement could not be viewed from nearby, these people felt that they must still view it from afar.



“People of the Tang and Cao Families, listen up. If you all wish to get away, you can still do so right now.”

“Else, do not blame me, Chu Feng, for being ruthless later. If you must blame someone... you all can only blame yourselves. I have given you all the chance to escape, it is only you all that refused to take it,” Chu Feng said coldly. There was not the slightest trace of emotion in his words.

“You have killed our Family’s Family Head, we will definitely not leave the matter at that. Chu Feng, we will take your dog life!”

“Chu Feng, you son of a bitch, you damned animal, I will dismember your body to ten thousand pieces, I will destroy you!”

“Chu Feng, I will excavate your ancestral tomb and kill all of your descendants! I will end your family line!!!”

As the Family Heads of the Tang and Cao Families had just been killed by Chu Feng, the people from both families were filled with fury. As such, how could they be afraid of Chu Feng? Many among them were pointing their fingers at Chu Feng as they rained curses upon him. Their curses were more and more vulgar and offensive.

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly waved his sword. Immediately, a slash swept through the void and landed on a group of people that were cursing at him.

Immediately, as the blazing slash flew past, blood sprayed in all directions. The people that were cursing at him earlier were all killed by Chu Feng. Not a single person survived his attack.

“Truly, you are people who refuse the face that is given to you,” After killing those people, Chu Feng snorted coldly. He did not feel the slightest sympathy for them.

Although Chu Feng was not a cold-blooded murderer, he was not a overly-sensitive individual either. He would give people a choice before killing them. However, if his opponents refused to escape, Chu Feng would definitely not spare them.

At this moment, even though there were still a lot of people from the Tang and Cao Families that felt endless hatred for Chu Feng, they were also afraid of Chu Feng after seeing how he had massacred so many of their clansmen.

At this moment, the countless people from the Tang and Cao Families present all turned mute. Very few among them dare to insult Chu Feng again.

In fact, many of them were shivering from fear. Before, they had yet to discover, had yet to realize, that this gentleman-like young man was actually a cold-blooded demon.

His declaration of massacring this city seemed to not be just a farce.

“Chu Feng, did you really think that you would be able to kill everyone present just because you were able to kill Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng?” Elder Yuan Zhen asked with a cold, mocking laugh.

Although Chu Feng had unleashed his overwhelming might earlier, Elder Yuan Zhen still felt Chu Feng to be nothing than a joke.

“I, Chu Feng, am always one who can do what I say. I declared that day that if I, Chu Feng, survived, I would definitely eliminate the Tang and Cao Families,” Chu Feng said.  $n-\text{o})-\vee//\mathcal{E}(-\mathcal{L}(-b))\text{l.}/n$

“Ignorant fool who doesn’t know the immensity of heaven and earth. While you can behave atrociously toward the Cao and Tang Families, our Luyang’s Pavilion will not allow for it,” After Elder Yuan Zhen said those words, he flipped his wrist and revealed an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

It was a giant blue ruler. It was a very good quality Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Compared to the Incomplete Ancestral Armaments that the two Family Heads had, it was much better.

There was no need to mention how powerful that weapon was. Once that weapon was unleashed, it immediately affected the weather with strong wind that moved the clouds.

“Roar~~~”

After the enormous blue ruler appeared, Elder Yuan Zhen tossed it toward the sky. A roar was heard, and then an enormous wave surged into the sky. The wave began to spiral in the sky. Soon, it turned into an enormous water beast.

That monster resembled a giant turtle. However, its size was truly enormous; it was as if it could support both the heavens and the earth. As it lay horizontally in the sky, it was like a Divine Beast had descended upon the world.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, that enormous water beast opened its mouth and shot out a stream of water toward Chu Feng. The might of that attack was very powerful.

“Buzz, buzz, buzz~~~”

Seemingly sensing the provocation of that Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the Magma Emperor Sword Chu Feng held in his hand actually began to tremble nonstop.

That was right, it was trembling in excitement to battle. It was impatient to fight against that enormous water beast. It was as if the Magma Emperor Sword was unwilling to allow two tigers to live on the same mountain.

“Go ahead, Magma Emperor.”

Seeing that, Chu Feng lightly tossed the Magma Emperor Sword. “Boom!” The Magma Emperor appeared.

“You dare to hoot before this Emperor? Today, this Emperor shall teach you a proper lesson, you damned turtle bastard.”

The Magma Emperor was like an unchained fierce tiger. It was extremely ferocious, and managed to actually split apart the ferocious stream of water with its body. Then, it began to attack that enormous water beast.

That enormous water beast was not to be outdone. It opened its mouth and began to bite at the Magma Emperor. At the same time, it used its claws to claw at the Magma Emperor.

At this moment, two huge monsters were fighting in the sky. As water and fire were incompatible with one another, the two huge monsters were fighting to determine a victor and loser.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## Chapter 2183 - All Shall Be Killed

The two Incomplete Ancestral Armaments fought busily in the sky.

As for Chu Feng and Elder Yuan Zhen, they started to observe the battle like spectators.

The two of them both had the intention to have their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments fight by themselves to determine which among them was stronger.

After all, the strength of one's weapon would also represent the strength of the weapon's master.

"It's useless, water is the antithesis of fire to begin with. Furthermore, Elder Yuan Zhen's Wave-calling Heaven-piercing Ruler is a very high quality Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Thus, it is impossible for ordinary Incomplete Ancestral Armaments to contend against it."

"That's right. After all, Elder Yuan Zhen is a trusted aide to Lord Pavilion Master. That Wave-calling Heaven-piercing Ruler was personally bestowed to Elder Yuan Zhen by Lord Pavilion Master. That weapon is definitely not something ordinary Incomplete Ancestral Armaments could compare to."

"That Chu Feng actually dares to fight against Elder Yuan Zhen? He is most definitely one who does not know the immensity of heaven and earth."

At this moment, although the other experts from Luyang's Pavilion did not join Elder Yuan Zhen in fighting against Chu Feng, their tongues were wagging. At the same time, they revealed confident gazes.

They were confident in Elder Yuan Zhen. Even though Chu Feng had managed to easily kill the two Family Heads who possessed the same level of cultivation as Elder Yuan Zhen, they knew very well that even though Elder Yuan Zhen was also a rank seven Half Martial Emperor, his strength was not something that Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng could compare with.

According to what they knew, Elder Yuan Zhen was practically unparalleled among those with the same battle power.

Thus, they felt that even though Chu Feng was powerful, he would absolutely be no match for Elder Yuan Zhen.

Furthermore, Elder Yuan Zhen was an actual rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, whereas Chu Feng was only someone who had increased his battle power to that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor after using his various abilities and adding his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. They felt that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to be a match for their Elder Yuan Zhen.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at this moment, roars, screams and anguished wailing suddenly sounded from the sky.

When they looked up, not to mention the people from Luyang’s Pavilion, even the people from the Tang and Cao Families were stunned.

In the sky, the battle between the two huge monsters had come to an end. The outcome of the battle had been determined. *noVel/b)*In

Merely, the outcome was something that people found difficult to accept. The reason for that was because the Magma Emperor was currently violently beating up that enormous water beast. Its beating was causing that enormous water beast to howl in grief nonstop. Waves of water were spraying from its body like blood.

“It would appear that your Incomplete Ancestral Armament is the same as you, completely useless,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Humph, a comparison of weapons cannot be regarded as one’s true ability. Since you’re a martial cultivator, if you wish to compete, you should naturally use your own strength to do so,” Elder Yuan Zhen snorted coldly. Then, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. The enormous water beast immediately turned back into that enormous ruler and returned to his hand.

“Heeaahh!!!” Then, he shouted loudly and unleashed a slashing attack at the Magma Emperor.

That attack was no ordinary attack. The power of that attack was much more powerful than that of the Incomplete Ancestral Armament itself. The speed of that slash was so fast that the Magma Emperor was simply unable to dodge it.

“Boom!” A loud explosion. With that slash, that Elder Yuan Zhen actually managed to hack the Magma Emperor back to its original form, back to that enormous fiery sword.

Seeing this scene, the people from Luyang’s Pavilion were immediately overjoyed. However, before they could cheer for their Elder Yuan Zhen, they were shocked to discover that a figure had appeared before that Magma Emperor Sword and grabbed it.

The very next moment, that figure turned into a flash of light and rapidly charged toward Elder Yuan Zhen.

“You’ve finished your slash. It’s my turn now.”

Chu Feng held the Magma Emperor Sword and raised it up high. Then, coldness flashed through his eyes as he unleashed the overhead slash at Elder Yuan Zhen.

“Boom~~~”

A flame strike was unleashed. Like the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head, that Elder Yuan Zhen was hacked into two.

The only difference was that those two Family Heads were separated at the waist, whereas Elder Yuan Zhen was separated from head to groin.

“How could this be?!?!”

Seeing this scene, the people present were all terrified. None of them expected that Chu Feng would be this powerful. After all, Elder Yuan Zhen was no ordinary rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

“Damn it!” Even though his physical body was destroyed, Elder Yuan Zhen had yet to die. Instead, he had escaped to a distance as a spirit body.

His current appearance was simply exactly the same as that of the Tang and Cao Family’s Family Heads. As for his end, it would naturally also be the same.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng opened his hand. Immediately, a frantic attractive force was shot forth. Then, Elder Yuan Zhen's spirit body, like the two Family Heads before him, was sucked into Chu Feng's grasp.

However, his spirit body did not shrink. Instead, he was captured by Chu Feng in his normal state. Thus, Chu Feng's hand was grabbing him by the neck.

At this moment, Elder Yuan Zhen was struggling violently and attacking Chu Feng's hand.

However, as his physical body was already destroyed, and his dantian alongside it, even though his cultivation and soul had fused together to form this spirit body, he was much weaker than before.

Thus, not to mention struggling free from Chu Feng, even his attacks at Chu Feng were unable to cause any harm.

"Chu Feng, release me! I am the trusted aide to the Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master! If you release me right now, I can let bygones be bygones!"

"However, if you do not release me right now, I'll definitely make you suffer the consequences of your actions! I will make you wish you were dead! I'll make you regret all that you've done today!" Although Elder Yuan Zhen was captured by Chu Feng, he did not admit defeat. Instead, he began to fiercely threaten Chu Feng.

In response, Chu Feng lifted his other hand and gave Elder Yuan Zhen's spirit body two resounding slaps.

The two slaps left Elder Yuan Zhen's head completely distorted. Even though he was already a spirit body, he still grimaced in pain from the slaps.

"What makes you think that you're qualified to threaten me now?" Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, if you dare, then go ahead and kill me! You damned son of a bitch! You bastard child of the Heavenly Clans!"

"If you dare, then go on, kill me! I will make you know what the consequences of killing me are!" Elder Yuan Zhen snarled angrily.

"I have already heard those words from Cao Yuxuan."

“As for you, your end will be the same as his. You will also be killed by me, like that Cao Yuxuan.”

After Chu Feng finished those words, a surge of boundless martial power was emitted from his palm. “Bang!” Elder Yuan Zhen’s spirit body exploded.

After killing Elder Yuan Zhen, Chu Feng retrieved Elder Yuan Zhen and the two Family Heads’ Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and Cosmos Sacks. Then, he turned his murderous gaze toward the people present.

“Run away!” Regardless of whether they were people from the Luyang’s Pavilion, the Cao Family or the Tang Family, they all immediately turned around and began to escape.

The person that they were relying on had been killed. At this moment, if they did not escape, what awaits them would only be death. They... did not want to die.

“I have declared that I will massacre this city. Did you all think that I was joking?”

As he looked to the fleeing people, the killing intent in Chu Feng’s eyes grew more and more concentrated. Then, he began to swing with the Magma Emperor Sword in nonstop succession. Fiery slashes began to drop from the sky in all directions.

Although the slashes were formed with flames, they were extremely sharp, and simply unstoppable. Not only were the people sliced through by them, many buildings were also sliced apart.

At this moment, as if it was raining, blood was sprinkling down all over the Cao Family. The buildings were all destroyed and collapsing.

Miserable screams resounded nonstop. A tragic sight filled one’s line of sight.

However, to Chu Feng, he felt that all these people deserved to die.

Chu Feng had already presented them the opportunity to escape earlier. However, they had not escaped. The reason for that was because they felt that Chu Feng would not be able to win. In other words, they were looking down on Chu Feng.



Yet now, after Elder Yuan Zhen was killed, they actually turned around and started fleeing right away. This meant that they simply did not have any moral backbone or spirit of loyalty at all. Their so-called declarations for revenge were nothing more than empty words.

If there were people that dared to stand and fight Chu Feng without escaping at such a time, Chu Feng might actually have spared those people out of consideration for their loyalty.

Unfortunately, there was no such person in the enormous Cao Family. This was equally true for all the guards from the Tang Family. Even the grand and powerful Luyang's Pavilion did not have one such individual.

They all say that birds of a feather flock together. In this place ruled by Luyang's Pavilion, what Chu Feng saw was lamentable.

At the very least, the people following Luyang's Pavilion that Chu Feng had encountered thus far were nothing more than scum.

The way Chu Feng saw it, powers like them were no different from demon sects. It would be better to kill them than to leave them alive.

As he thought of it, Chu Feng grew more and more ruthless in his killing. It was as if the people that he was killing were scum rather than people.

He felt as if he was not massacring, but rather helping the world eliminate evil.

Chu Feng had kept his word, and ended up killing a lot of people.

Not a single person from Luyang's Pavilion was spared. The elites from the Tang and Cao Families were also all killed.

However, the old, weak, young and disabled were all kept alive. The way Chu Feng saw it, this battle was simply unrelated to them. Although they were part of the Cao Family, Chu Feng felt that they were no different from the group of weak people left behind in the Tang Family; he felt that they were all innocent.

Chu Feng was not afraid that the people from the Cao and Tang Families that he spared might come to retaliate against him in the future.

If these people were capable of retaliation against him, it would only mean that he was too weak. In that case, he would deserve the retaliation.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2184 - Loss**

At the time when Chu Feng began his massacre, the innocent people had already escaped the city.

It was only after the rumbling stopped that the people dared to venture back into the city.

After the people saw that Chu Feng dared to kill even the people from Luyang's Pavilion, they were stunned by Chu Feng's boldness to make Luyang's Pavilion his enemy.

However, when the crowd saw that Chu Feng left many alive even after killing all of the Cao Family's elites, and that many of those that he left alive were children and members of the younger generation, the crowd's astonishment surpassed their astonishment toward Chu Feng's massacre.

After all, in the world of martial cultivators, massacres were common occurrences. If one didn't kill another, one would instead be killed by others. To be lenient toward one's enemy would be equivalent to being cruel to oneself.

That was why massacres were such a common occurrence. Killing all of one's enemy's family was nothing extraordinary either.

However, what Chu Feng had done, leaving people alive after a massacre, was something very rarely seen.

After all, if one did not eliminate the roots, it would cause no end to future trouble.

However, it was precisely because Chu Feng decided to spare the roots that he caught the attention of a group of people.

At this moment, those people were secretly following Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng who was walking in the sky suddenly turned around and shouted with a cold voice, "Who is it?!"

After his shout left his mouth, from the seemingly empty sky behind him appeared thirteen silhouettes.

There were men, women, old and young among these people. However, they all possessed a common feature; that was, they all had very ordinary appearances.

They were the sort of people who would be very hard to notice when placed in a crowd of people.

As for their cultivation, they were not very strong either. The weakest among them were Martial Kings, while the strongest were only Half Martial Emperors.

However, it would be impossible for them to tail Chu Feng with their cultivation. This meant that these people had used special methods to conceal their cultivations.

Their actual cultivations were definitely not as simple as what Chu Feng could determine.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had a sensation that the gray-clothed old man who led that group of thirteen was definitely capable of killing him instantly, that he was an absolute peak expert.

“Little friend, please don’t misunderstand. We are from the Red Butterfly Society. Thus, we hold absolutely no malice toward you,” That leading gray-gowned old man said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. His attitude was very amiable.

“Red Butterfly Society?” Chu Feng revealed a confused expression.

“You don’t even know about the Red Butterfly Society?” Seeing that Chu Feng actually did not know about the Red Butterfly Society, a young man from the group revealed a displeased expression.

Although that man appeared to be around Chu Feng’s age, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that he was at least ninety years old.

Although someone at that sort of age would still be considered a member of the younger generation in the world of martial cultivators, he would be a dying old man when considered among ordinary commoners.

As the attitude of that man was nasty, Chu Feng would naturally not respond with amiability. Thus, he asked disdainfully, "Must I know about the Red Butterfly Society?"

"You bastard, you truly do not know the immensity of heaven and earth!!!" Seeing Chu Feng's attitude of disdain, that young man immediately revealed an ominous glint.

In response, that gray-cloaked old man shouted, "Zhao Xiao, do not be rude!"

"Lord Elder, I..." Being shouted down by that old man, that man by the name of Zhao Xiao was very displeased. However, in the end, he did not try to refute him, and instead moved to the side and spoke no more. It could be seen that he deeply feared that old man.

With a smile on his face, the old man asked Chu Feng, "Little friend, your name is Chu Feng, right? May I address you by your name?" His attitude was still very courteous.

"Of course, a name is meant to be addressed. Senior, how should I address you?" Chu Feng asked courteously.

"This old man is surnamed Liu, and named Chengkun. I am one of the Red Butterfly Society's management elders."

"As for the Red Butterfly Society, it could be considered a special power. Our existence is so that we can confront the vicious powers that take advantage of their position to prey on the weak."

"As for Luyang's Pavilion, it is our main target. I can tell that you, Chu Feng, seem to have conflict with Luyang's Pavilion."

"Thus, I have come with the identity of the Red Butterfly Society's management elder to invite you to join our Red Butterfly Society so that you can confront Luyang's Pavilion together with us," Elder Liu Chengkung said to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's tensed heart was set at ease. Although he did not know what the Red Butterfly Society might be, it remained that they were, at the very minimum, not his enemies.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still shook his head apologetically and said, "Thank you for your kind intentions. However, I do not plan to join any power."

This was a decision that Chu Feng had already made at an earlier time. He did not want to join any power because he did not wish to repeat the past and bring about harm to any power he joined.

He knew that he would definitely make enemies in the future. In fact, he had already made enemies.

Thus, he does not wish for any power he joined to be targeted after he escaped from his enemies.

"Chu Feng, are you truly not planning to consider it? Luyang's Pavilion is very powerful. As for that Yuan Zhen, he is Chu Luyang's trusted aide. Although his cultivation was not strong, he held a very high status that few in Luyang's Pavilion could match. He was definitely not something that Cao Yuxuan could compare to."

"Perhaps you might have still had a way out after killing Cao Yuxuan. However, after killing Yuan Zhen, Chu Luyang will definitely come for revenge even if he must dig three feet underground to find you."

"In this sort of situation, it will be truly too dangerous for you to take on Luyang's Pavilion alone."

"However, if you are to join us, we can guarantee your safety," Elder Liu Chengkun said.

"Elder Liu, I am truly sorry," Chu Feng shook his head. He was able to tell that Elder Liu Chengkun held good intentions. However, Chu Feng was determined. Thus, he would not accept the invitation.

"You are truly one who cannot tell good from bad!" In response, that man by the name of Zhao Xiu pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

"Zhao Xiao, shut up!" In response, Elder Liu Chengkun once again shouted at Zhao Xiao.

Furthermore, he fiercely stared at Zhao Xiao. Then, he turned back around and said to Chu Feng, "People have their own ambitions. Since little friend

Chu Feng does not wish to join our Red Butterfly Society, I will also not force you to do so.”

“Merely, I hope that little friend Chu Feng will not mention the fact that we have come to find you today.”

“Rest assured, I understand these sorts of things. Merely, Elder Liu, you really should properly discipline your subordinate,” As Chu Feng spoke, he looked to Zhao Xiao. Then, he added, “His manners are truly lacking. You must know that not everyone will not bicker with him like the way I am.”

“You!!!” Zhao Xiao wanted to say something. However, after sensing Elder Liu Chengkun’s gaze, he swallowed the words that he wanted to say. That said, he was so furious that his complexion turned deep red and an unconcealed hostile coldness filled his eyes.

“Haha...” Faced with Zhao Xiao’s fierce and malicious gaze, Chu Feng laughed disdainfully. If Elder Liu Chengkun wanted to do something to him, Chu Feng would definitely be scared. After all, there was an enormous difference in strength between them.

However, someone like Zhao Xiao was nothing more than a minor character. Chu Feng simply did not place him in his eyes at all.

“Elder Liu, farewell. I hope that you all will stop following me,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around and left.

“Little friend, take care,” This time around, Elder Liu Chengkun did not continue to follow Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng left, that Zhao Xiao said, “Lord Elder, that man by the name of Chu Feng simply did not place us in his eyes. We must teach someone like him a lesson. How could we let him leave like that?”

“Firstly, it is us who decided to invite him. As such, he had the right to refuse us.”

“Secondly, our Red Butterfly Society is very low-profile to begin with. Furthermore, that Chu Feng is obviously not someone from this region. Thus, it is normal for him to not know about us.”

“Lastly, we are not Luyang’s Pavilion. The objective of our Red Butterfly Society is to get rid of evil for the people of the world, and attack those vicious powers that bully the weak.”

“If we are to attack Chu Feng just because he refused to join us, how will we be different from Luyang’s Pavilion?” Elder Liu Chengkun asked.

“...” Hearing that question, Zhao Xiao became speechless. Thus, in the end, he could only nod in an ashamed manner. “Elder, I was foolish.”

Even though he appeared to have admitted to his wrong, it could be seen from the expression in his eyes that Zhao Xiao did not feel that he was wrong.

As for Elder Liu Chengkun, he was looking at the direction that Chu Feng had left in the entire time. It was only after a long time passed that he shook his head and said, “That child is most definitely not an ordinary person. In the future, his achievements will be inestimable. It is the loss of our Red Butterfly Society to fail in inviting that child into our Red Butterfly Society.” *noVe/l/b*)In

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2185 - Treasure**

“Loss?” Hearing that word, the expressions of the people present changed.

“Lord Elder, is that Chu Feng really that powerful?” A yellow-haired man asked in a very astonished manner.

“There’s no mistake. That child will continue to mature. His future accomplishments will be immeasurable,” Elder Liu Chengkun said.

Hearing those words, the rest of the crowd all revealed astonished expressions. The reason for that was because Elder Liu Chengkun rarely praised someone in such a manner. However, since he praised Chu Feng like that, it meant that Chu Feng was definitely extraordinary.

“Lord Elder, are you not overestimating that Chu Feng? Why is it that I am unable to see anything exceptional about him?” Zhao Xiao said with an unreconciled expression.

Elder Liu Chengkun smiled lightly. Then, he said to Zhao Xiao, "Without mentioning cultivation, in terms of one's temperament, you are much inferior to that Chu Feng." After he finished saying those words, Elder Liu Chengkun waved his sleeve, entered the void and left.

Seeing that, the expressions of the crowd all turned sluggish. They were all able to tell that their Lord Elder was truly angered.

"Zhao Xiao, although we were unable to personally kill Yuan Zhen and the others because of that Chu Feng, it remains that Yuan Zhen and the others have died. Thus, it could be said that we have accomplished our mission."

"I will give you a month of vacation. Go and properly rest yourself," The yellow-haired man said to Zhao Xiao.

After he finished saying those words, he also entered into the void. Following after him, the others also began to enter the void and leave.

After everyone left, Zhao Xiao revealed an incomparably furious expression. He looked to the direction that Chu Feng had left in and started to gnash his teeth with a murderous gaze.

.....

Cao Family. At this moment, a large group of people had arrived.

They were not only limited to the experts from Luyang's Pavilion, they were actually being led by the Pavilion Master of Luyang's Pavilion, Chu Luyang.

Chu Luyang was wearing golden armor with a black cloak. He appeared extremely domineering and gave off extraordinary airs.

However, Chu Luyang had an extremely ugly expression on his face.

Rolling black clouds and flickering lightning filled the dark sky. It was a frightening doomsday-like sight. It was caused by the influence of Chu Luyang's mood.

It turned out that Chu Luyang had just so happened to pass by this area today. He recalled that Yuan Zhen was here, and decided to come to this city to have a look while also demonstrating his might to the Tang Family, the Cao Family and the others present.



Unfortunately, he had come a step too late. He had arrived right after Chu Feng massacred the people of the Cao Family.

As for Chu Feng, he had just left not long ago. It was precisely because of that moment of difference that caused Chu Luyang to feel enormous fury.

One must know that Yuan Zhen was able to become his trusted aide even though his cultivation was weak was because the two of them possessed a special relationship.

Thus, Chu Luyang possessed special sentiments for Yuan Zhen. Else, it would have been impossible for Yuan Zhen to have such a high status in Luyang's Pavilion.

Yet, someone as important as Yuan Zhen was actually killed by Chu Feng. How could Chu Luyang possibly accept this?

"Lord Pavilion Master, our Family Head has died miserably. Please, you must uphold justice for us."

The people from the Cao Family that survived the massacre were all kneeling all around Chu Luyang and lamenting nonstop.

Suddenly, Chu Luyang shouted, "All of you, shut up!"

"Wuaah~~~"

The people from the Cao Family that surrounded him were all knocked flying. Those that suffered light injuries ended up vomiting blood, whereas those that suffered heavy injuries died on the spot.

"A bunch of useless trash. If it wasn't for you all, how could Elder Yuan Zhen have died?"

After Chu Luyang said those words, he waved his sleeve. Immediately, his oppressive might surged forth and engulfed his surroundings. "Bang, bang," sounds of firecracker-like explosions began to be heard in succession.

When the explosions ended, all of the people from the Cao Family, regardless of age or gender, were killed.

It turned out that those explosions were the sounds of people from the Cao Family exploding.

Vicious. Compared to Chu Feng, Chu Luyang was truly ruthless. He was someone who viewed human lives like grass, someone who would kill whoever he wanted to kill. Even if they were his subordinates, he would still show no mercy.

However, when faced with this scene, the experts from Luyang's Pavilion did not show any change in expression.

They had already seen too many of such scenes. It was already a common occurrence to them.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, several figures flew over from all directions. They all landed onto the ground and then kneeled around Chu Luyang.

All of those people were experts from Luyang's Pavilion. Among them, the person with the lowest cultivation was a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

“Lord Pavilion Master, we are incompetent; we were unable to find traces of that Chu Feng,” An old man that lead the group of experts said while trembling with fear.

“Trash!!!” Hearing those words, Chu Luyang was immediately furious. His gaze shone, and his oppressive might was unleashed once again. Before his oppressive might, the Half Martial Ancestor-level experts were blown away like leaves. When they crashed into the ground, they were all seriously injured.

“Lord Pavilion Master, the dead cannot be revived, please restrain your grief and accept what has happened,” A fair-skinned man sporting a head of long, blazing hair stepped forward and tried to console Chu Luyang.

“Hong Xi, do you know why I am this furious?” Chu Luyang turned to that man called Hong Xi.

“Elder Yuan Zhen was your competent subordinate. For him to be killed, you should naturally be furious,” Hong Xi said.

“That is only part of the reason, but not all. In addition to that, it is because everyone in this world knows that I regard Yuan Zhen highly. Yet, that Chu Feng still killed him. He simply does not place me in his eyes at all.”

"I am not furious only because Yuan Zhen was killed. More than that, it was because someone dared to not place me in their eyes in my territory," Chu Luyang spoke in an extremely furious manner.

"That man indeed deserves to die. If he is to end up in my hands, I will definitely make him wish he was dead," Hong Xi said.

"Hong Xi, I will hand that Chu Feng to you. Even if you have to dig three feet underground, you must still find him."

"Remember, I want him alive. I will make him personally kneel before me. Then, I shall personally pull out the tendons of his hands and feet before crippling his cultivation. I will torture him and make him wish he was dead," Chu Luyang spoke with fuming rage between gritted teeth.

"Lord Pavilion Master, please rest assured, this Hong Xi will definitely capture that Chu Feng alive for you," That man by the name of Hong Xi spoke very confidently.

"You have never disappointed me," Chu Luyang nodded. He knew Hong Xi's abilities very well.

"Oh, that's right, eliminate that Tang Family for me too. After all, Yuan Zhen's death is also related to them," After Chu Luyang finished saying those words, his body shifted, and he soared into the sky.

Following closely behind him, the rest of the experts from Luyang's Pavilion all soared into the sky in succession. In the rolling black clouds were many enormous palace-like war chariots of Luyang's Pavilion.

Leading his peak experts, Chu Luyang left. However, that man by the name of Hong Xi and his subordinates remained in the Cao Family. They were still kneeling on the ground.

It was only after Chu Luyang left far away with his subordinates that they stood back up.

"Milord, what should we do?" An old man walked forward to ask Hong Xi for instructions. Even though he was a rank eight Half Martial Ancestor, he was extremely respectful toward Hong Xi.

"Go to the Tang Family first. There are definitely clues there," Hong Xi said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Once he said those words, wind immediately appeared under his feet. Then, he disappeared. Following closely behind him, those subordinates of his also disappeared.

.....

As for Chu Feng, he did not know about what had happened in the Cao Family.

After he left the Cao Family, he returned to the Darknight Ghost Forest.

He had not forgotten about Wang Qiang. He was determined to avenge him.

As he did not know the demonic woman's whereabouts, Chu Feng felt that guarding and waiting in the Darknight Ghost Forest for her appearance would be his best option.

Unfortunately, after Chu Feng had painstakingly waited for several days, there was still no fruit.

At the same time, Chu Feng did not make any headway in terms of his martial cultivation either.

Even though he was racking his brains to comprehend the way of martial cultivation day and night, he was unable to break through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng felt increasingly vexed, and even a bit at a loss.

At this moment, the sky had already darkened. He was standing on the peak of a black tree as he looked to the night sky.

As he looked to the many stars in the sky and the beautiful scenery, Chu Feng revealed an increasingly worried expression.

“Eggy, if you were here, then perhaps I would not be this distressed,” Chu Feng took a deep sigh. His longing for Eggy was growing more and more.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Chu Feng's expression changed. Standing high up, he looked downward and discovered a trace of strange motion.

There was no sign of that motion. However, Chu Feng was able to sense it with his intuition as a world spiritist. Sensing that something was amiss, Chu Feng unleashed his Heaven's Eyes.

Once he unleashed his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng's expression revealed deep shock.

A faintly visible abnormal sign was forming in the direction in which Chu Feng had noticed the motion. That place was most definitely extraordinary. Chu Feng felt that even if there wasn't a Natural Oddity there, there would definitely be some sort of treasure present.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2186 - Immortal-cloak World Spiritist**

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng's body shifted as he rapidly rushed toward that place. After he descended to the ground, he discovered that there didn't seem to be anything abnormal on the surface.

However, Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were not deceiving him. Thus, Chu Feng used special methods to enter deep underground.

After passing through layers of soil, it was as Chu Feng had anticipated, he discovered an entrance to a tunnel with his Heaven's Eyes deep underground.

Chu Feng passed through the entrance, and discovered that even though the tunnel was very well-hidden, it was also very crudely made. It was as if it was a hole dug by an enormous mole, without any sign of being polished.

Although it was not polished, this place was sealed off by a layer of powerful and invisible spirit power. The only way to enter would be through the entrance that Chu Feng had discovered; it was impossible to enter this place by digging directly underground.

In short, this place was most definitely not formed by nature. Else, this place would not have been sealed off by such a powerful spirit formation.

Furthermore, even though the spirit power in this place was invisible, Chu Feng was able to sense that it was very strong and ancient.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to see the spirit power, Chu Feng knew that the spirit formation here was most definitely not created by a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Instead, this should be the work of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“This is strange.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

As that place was created by someone, there should naturally be a lot of hurdles. However, Chu Feng had been completely unhindered in his journey so far.

The reason for that was not because there were no hurdles set up in this place. Instead, Chu Feng could tell that there used to be a lot of hurdles here. Merely, they were all broken through by someone.

Furthermore, the hurdles were only just recently broken through.

“Someone has come here before me?”

“Who could it be?”

Chu Feng revealed a doubting gaze. Even though the hurdles were broken through, he became increasingly cautious.

He felt that it was very possible that someone had been to this place before. It might even be possible for that person to still be in here.

However, faced with the enticement of treasures, Chu Feng was unwilling to let such an opportunity slip by him so easily. Thus, he decided to gamble, and chose to continue onward.

Finally, Chu Feng reached the end of the tunnel. His surroundings were no longer the narrow tunnel. Instead, it was a vast space.

There was a coffin in the center of that place. Surrounding the coffin were all sorts of treasures. Not only were there a lot of cultivation resources, there were also a lot of treasures useful for world spiritists. All of those things were useful for Chu Feng.

Merely, surrounding the coffin and the treasures was an ancient grand formation.

That spirit formation was extremely dangerous. The way Chu Feng saw it, it was simply an impregnable fort. Not to mention undoing that formation, Chu Feng believed that he would be instantly killed by that spirit formation should he approach it.

However... to Chu Feng's greatest surprise there was a person before that grand formation. That person was the old monk Chu Feng had met before.

At that moment, that old monk had also set up a spirit formation. He was using his spirit formation to undo the ancient spirit formation surrounding the coffin and treasures.

"Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?"

As Chu Feng looked at the spirit power composed of gold and red colors, that spirit power that seemed like the multi-colored twilight of a sunrise or sunset, he was able to determine that the old monk was definitely an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

The reason for that was because the spirit power that he was emitting was something that Chu Feng had never seen before. Furthermore, merely by sensing it, Chu Feng was able to tell that that spirit power was many times more powerful than his own Dragon Mark Royal-cloak world spirit power. In fact, the two spirit powers were simply incomparable to one another.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that it was most definitely Immortal-cloak world spirit power.

"That veined pattern, it's Dragon Mark. He's... actually a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?"

Upon closer inspection, Chu Feng was even more shocked. Dragon Marks filled that sunset-colored world spirit power.

This meant that the old monk was not only an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he was also a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt something that he rarely felt - lingering fear. After all, when he had first encountered the old monk, Chu Feng had attacked

him. However, looking at it now, he was merely trying to strike a stone with an egg.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally understood the words spoken by the old monk that day. That day, he truly had been foolish.

“Scram!”

Right at that moment, a boundless killing intent appeared. Following that, a hundred enormous figures appeared before Chu Feng.

Those... were actually a hundred world spirits from the Demon Spirit World. Merely, these hundred world spirits from the Demon Spirit World were much more powerful than all the world spirits Chu Feng had seen before.

They were all wearing armor, and appeared very ferocious. Any one of them would possess sufficient power to kill Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was unable to sense the cultivations of those world spirits. However, he was able to guess that those hundred world spirits were all Martial Ancestor-level experts at the very minimum. In fact, he felt that they might even be existences that surpassed Martial Ancestors.

The reason for that was because the oppressive might and killing intent they emitted made Chu Feng feel as if he had stepped into the gates of hell.

With a single thought, Chu Feng would be killed instantly.

Standing before Chu Feng, they simply did not appear like ordinary world spirits. Instead, they appeared more like a hundred Grim Reapers.

“Do not be rude.”

Suddenly, that old monk’s voice sounded. He did not look in Chu Feng’s direction, and instead continued to wholeheartedly set up his spirit formation. However... it was evident that he had noticed Chu Feng’s arrival.

“Buzz~~~”

After the old monk said those words, the hundred Demon Spirit World’s world spirits all disappeared.



Chu Feng was able to tell that the hundred Demon Spirit World's world spirits had not actually disappeared. Instead, they had just concealed themselves, and were still in the surroundings.

"Senior, this is..." Chu Feng wanted to ask.

"Hush, speak later. I'm about to succeed," As the old monk said those words, he still did not look at Chu Feng.

Chu Feng understood the old monk's intentions. Thus, he moved to the side and spoke no further. Instead, he began to carefully observe the old monk's spirit formation.

The more Chu Feng observed, the more afraid he became. The spirit formation this old man was setting up was simply too exceptional. It was a spirit formation that had surpassed Chu Feng's understanding of spirit formations.

That was a grand spirit formation that Chu Feng had never seen before. As he observed the spirit formation, Chu Feng grew obsessed with it.

To world spiritists, a powerful spirit formation was akin to a work of art.

Not only was it capable of fascinating others, one would also be able to obtain many benefits should one possess a good sense of comprehension.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt an unprecedented sensation from the spirit formation. Chu Feng faintly felt that a new gate was appearing in his world spirit space.

That was a gate that could connect to Immortal level world spirit power. Merely, even though the gate had appeared, it had yet to open.

This was the same as how Chu Feng had gathered sufficient Natural Energy to break through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor, but was unable to do so due to the bottleneck blocking his path.

However, Chu Feng was still overjoyed. Even though he was unable to open the gate leading to Immortal level spirit power, he was, at the very least, able to sense that gate. Before... he was unable to even sense it.

"Rumble~~~"

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. Surging spirit power began to engulf the surroundings like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses.

Suddenly the impregnable tunnel started to shake nonstop. Even Chu Feng was forced back repeatedly by that violently surging spirit power.

“Success? That ancient spirit formation was actually broken through?”

Even though Chu Feng was blown away by the surging spirit power, he still revealed a joyous expression. The reason for that was because he was able to sense that the ancient grand spirit formation that sealed the mysterious coffin and treasures had been broken.

The mysterious old monk had broken through the ancient spirit formation.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2187 - Demonic Woman's Origin**

After the ancient spirit formation was broken through, the old monk stood up.

After he stood up, a total of a hundred world spirit gates appeared beside him.

The next moment, the hundred Demon Spirit World's world spirits that had concealed themselves all started to appear. They began to enter the world spirit gates in succession.

After he finished doing those things the old monk walked toward the coffin. After the coffin was opened, Chu Feng discovered that a woman was lying in the coffin.

This woman was very pleasant and sweet-looking. She was wearing a red muslin skirt, and appeared very natural, unrestrained and gave off a refined air. She was a rarely-seen beauty. However, she was already dead.

Even though her corpse was undamaged, Chu Feng was able to tell that she had been dead for a very long time, completely dead.

However, compared to the woman, Chu Feng was more surprised by the pearl she held between her hands.

That pearl was very large and could only be carried with two hands. That was also the reason why Chu Feng was able to notice it immediately.

The outside of the pearl was transparent. However, inside the pearl was a vortex.

That vortex was slowly revolving. It was somewhat strange. Furthermore, it was emitting an incomprehensible aura.

Although Chu Feng was unable to determine the usage of that pearl, Chu Feng was able to ascertain that the pearl was a treasure, a treasure more precious than all of the treasures outside of the coffin.

“Do you wish to know who she is?” The old monk asked Chu Feng.

“Who is she?” Chu Feng asked.

“She is the demonic woman that you want to kill,” The old monk said.

“How could that be? She has clearly died a long time ago,” Chu Feng said while pointing to the corpse in the coffin.

“Indeed, she has died a long time ago. However, that does not mean that she is not the demonic woman that you want to kill,” The old monk said with a smile.

“Senior, exactly what is going on?” Chu Feng asked.

“You wish to know?” The old monk asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded.

“This demonic woman is called Zhao Hong. She is the daughter of the Reincarnation Sect’s Sect Master, the ruler of the Reincarnation Upper Realm. She was a rarely seen martial cultivation genius.”

“When she was only twenty years old, she replaced her father, who was over ten thousand years old, and became the new Sect Master of the Reincarnation Sect. At the same time, she also became the number one expert in the Reincarnation Sect.”

Upon hearing that, Chu Feng felt shock. The Reincarnation Sect was actually the ruler of a world, and that Zhao Hong was actually the number one expert

in the Reincarnation Sect. In other words, this meant that this woman by the name of Zhao Hong was an Upper Realm's strongest expert.

She was someone who became the strongest expert of an Upper Realm at the mere age of twenty. Oh how powerful of an existence she must be.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally realized what it meant to be a genius. When compared to an actual genius, he was simply not worth anything.

"As Zhao Hong possessed outstanding talent, she would naturally also be proud and arrogant. As such, not a single man in the Reincarnation Upper Realm was able to catch her eyes."

"However, by coincidence, she arrived at the All Heaven Upper Realm, and got to know the strongest genius of the All Heaven Upper Realm, Liu Shou."

"Zhao Hong and Liu Shou were the ideal couple. Furthermore, they fell in love at first sight. Soon, the two of them entered the river of love."

"However, Zhao Hong was taught by her father since she was a child to be wary of outsiders. As such, she was not someone who would trust easily."

"Even though she knew that her love for Liu Shou was real, she was still on guard against him the entire time."

"It was only on the day of their marriage that Zhao Hong completely lowered her guard against Liu Shou. However, she never would've thought that she would end up being poisoned by Liu Shou on the night of their marriage."

"It turned out that Liu Shou possessed exuberant ambitions, and was never truly in love with Zhao Hong. He had approached her all for the sake of obtaining the Reincarnation Pearl."

"Zhao Hong was in enormous grief after discovering the truth. She felt enormous hatred toward Liu Shou's deceit. Thus, she refused to tell Liu Shou the whereabouts of the Reincarnation Pearl."

"With that being the case, that Liu Shou decided to use all means to obtain his goal. He began to cruelly torture Zhao Hong's family members in front of her, leaving them in miserable states, yet not allowing them to die."

“Finally, enraged by the lack of results, Liu Shou decided to kill all of Zhao Hong’s family members right in front of her. His method were so very cruel that one’s hackles would rise just by thinking about it.”

“At the moment when Zhao Hong’s father was killed, Zhao Hong’s bloodline suddenly exploded. She managed to overcome the poison that had erased her strength, and destroyed the spirit formation that had sealed her cultivation.”

“However, that Liu Shou was very powerful. Even though Zhao Hong had managed to overcome the poison, she was still only equally matched with Liu Shou. In the end, it concluded with both fighters injured and no victor to be seen.”

“Zhao Hong knew that this tragedy was caused by the Reincarnation Sect’s Sect Protection Treasure, the Reincarnation Pearl.”

“She did not wish for the Reincarnation Pearl to cause more harm. Thus, while she was still barely alive, she disappeared with the Reincarnation Pearl and concealed herself in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“In the end, Zhao Hong ended up dying. She died here. However, the power of the Reincarnation Pearl caused her to rise from the dead.”

“Zhao Hong was reborn with grievances. After she was reborn, she lost all her memories, and her appearance became extremely ugly, resembling that of a monster.”

“It is because the grievances of her past life are too strong that she began to detest men like she does now. She began to take joy in killing men, and started to eat their flesh.”

“Strangely, as Zhao Hong ate more men, her cultivation began to subsequently increase. Even though it was only her first resurrection, she had already reached a state where no one could stop her.”

“Fortunately, an expert from an Upper Realm passed by this region by coincidence and beheaded her.”

“However, after killing the demonic woman, that expert was also seriously injured, and ended up dying. However, before dying, he used a special

formation to turn his body and remaining power into a spring with water specializing in curbing evildoers.”

“As for that... it became the Radiance Immortal Mountain’s Demon Subduing Spring Water.”

“However, the demonic woman possessed the Reincarnation Pearl on her actual body. Thus, after her death, she was reincarnated. It could be said that she possessed an undying body.”

“Although she did end up losing all of her power with each resurrection, and had to cultivate all over again, her talent remained the same. This made it so that her cultivation speed was extremely fast.”

“Furthermore, even though she forgot everything about her previous life with each resurrection, she still possessed the same sort of grievance. Thus, after she gained a certain amount of cultivation, she would start to instinctively hunt men, and repeat what she did in her previous lives,” The old monk explained.

“In that case, that means that the demonic woman cannot be killed?” Chu Feng asked.

“She can. As long as I take away that pearl, she will not be able to resurrect after she is killed again,” As the old monk spoke, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. The Resurrection Pearl entered her hand.

“Crash~~~”

After the Resurrection Pearl entered his hand, the demonic woman’s undamaged body instantly turned into dust. Not even her bones remained.

“With this, she will no longer be able to resurrect,” said the old monk.

Then, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “That demonic woman could be considered to be a pitiful individual. However, she is also abominable. If you plan to kill her, I will not stop you. Merely, your current strength is greatly insufficient.”

“Thank you, senior, for your advice,” Chu Feng clasped his fist and expressed his thanks.

“You do not have to thank me for this. For the two of us to be able to meet twice here, it can be considered fate,” The old monk said with a light smile.

“Senior, since you are a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, might you be willing to help this junior with one thing?”

“Although this junior is unable to repay senior now, as long as you are willing to help me, this junior will definitely repay you in the future,” Suddenly, Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” The old monk asked.

“I possess a special world spirit in my body that has been sealed with a special formation. I have attempted to help her undo that spirit formation. However, she has entered deep sleep ever since.”

“I do not know when she will be able to wake up. However, I am very worried, since she has been asleep for so long. If possible, I hope that senior could help me attempt to remove that seal, help me wake her up,” Chu Feng said.

“That is an insignificant matter. I am able to help you. Furthermore, I do not need you to repay me. I merely want you to answer a question of mine. However, you must answer truthfully,” The old monk said.

“Senior, please ask away,” Chu Feng said.

“You are most definitely not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Exactly which Heavenly Clan are you from?” The old monk asked.

“Senior, if I were to say that I do not belong to any Heavenly Clan, would you believe me?” Chu Feng asked.

“I would,” The old monk smiled lightly. Then, he said, “In that case, let me rephrase my question; which Heavenly Clan does your Heavenly Bloodline belong to?”

“The Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng did not conceal the matter. After all, he had a request for the old monk. Thus, since the old monk had only asked such a simple question, he would definitely answer honestly.

“So it was the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Hearing Chu Feng’s answer, the old monk nodded. Then, he said, “It is the loss of the Chu Heavenly Clan to not treat you well.”

This old monk was very intelligent. Merely from Chu Feng’s answers, the old monk had determined that even though Chu Feng had come from the the Chu Heavenly Clan, he should be someone abandoned by them.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2188 - Bad News**

“May I ask another question? If I can, I am willing to give all those to you,” The old monk pointed to the treasures surrounding the coffin.

Chu Feng started to think about it. In the end, he nodded and said, “Senior, please ask away.”

He was able to sense that the old monk does not seem like a bad person. At the very least, he did not possess any malicious intentions toward him. If he did, he could simply force Chu Feng to tell him what he wanted to know. There was no need for him to conduct an exchange with Chu Feng.

Furthermore, there were a lot of treasures that Chu Feng did not possess among the treasures there. Those were treasures that would be useful for Chu Feng to set up spirit formations, refine weapons and concoct medicinal pellets with.

Most importantly, there were a lot of cultivation resources among the treasures. Should Chu Feng refine all of the cultivation resources, he would definitely benefit from them. It might even be possible for him to gather sufficient Natural Energies in his dantian to break through to rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

“Is your father called Chu Xuanyuan?” The old monk asked.

“Senior, how did you manage to guess that?” Chu Feng’s expression changed. After all, he had never mentioned this matter to anyone.



“Haha, there are a lot of people that knew of Chu Xuanyuan. However, only a few people knew that Chu Xuanyuan is someone that trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Coincidentally, I happen to be one of those few people.”

“As for you... you are someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, and also someone who trains in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Thus, the greatest possibility would be that you’re Chu Xuanyuan’s son.”

“After all, it is impossible for others in the Chu Heavenly Clan to be qualified to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique,” The old monk said with a light laugh.

“Senior, could it be that you are my father’s friend?” Chu Feng asked.

“Friend?” Hearing that question, the old monk actually revealed a wry smile. He said, “I do wish to become your father’s friend. Unfortunately... this old monk is not qualified.”

Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. He was able to tell that the old monk was not joking around.

Yet, an expert as powerful as him was actually not qualified to become his father’s friend? Then, how powerful must his father be?

“Forget about it, let me have a look at that world spirit,” The old monk said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and immediately brought out the sleeping Eggy.

“It’s actually an Asura World Spirit?” After seeing Eggy, the old monk revealed a surprised expression. Then, he smiled and said to Chu Feng, “You are truly extraordinary. Not only do you train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, you’re also an Asura World Spiritist.”

“Merely in terms of world spirit techniques, you will be stronger than your father. However, it will likely be extremely difficult for you to reach your father’s heights. The path of martial cultivation is not something where one’s accomplishments will be determined by mere talent alone.”

“Haha, I’ve spoken too much,” The old monk laughed. Then, he waved his sleeve and Immortal-level spirit power flowed from him. His Immortal-level spirit power covered Eggy.

“This?!” However, after the old monk’s world spirit power came into contact with Eggy, his expression changed.

Chu Feng noticed an awkward expression in the old monk’s deep gaze.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the old monk waved his sleeve repeatedly. He actually withdrew his spirit power that covered Eggy. After his spirit power returned to his body, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “This old monk owes you a favor. I can only help you in the future.”

“Senior, what do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am powerless against the spirit formation that has sealed your world spirit,” The old monk said.

Actually, Chu Feng had anticipated that the old monk might be unable to remove the spirit formation sealing Eggy the moment he saw the old monk’s reaction. Merely, when it was determined that that was truly the case, Chu Feng still felt very disappointed.

However, even though that was the case, Chu Feng still smiled as he said to the old monk, “Senior, you are being too courteous. I cannot thank you enough for being willing to help me.”

The old monk sighed in embarrassment. Then, with a shift of his body, he disappeared.

“Senior?!”

“Senior?!” Chu Feng called out for the old monk repeatedly. However, there was no response. From that, Chu Feng knew that the old monk must’ve left.

Merely, Chu Feng had never expected that old monk to leave so hurriedly, so hurriedly that he did not even bother to bid farewell.

Suddenly, Chu Feng looked at Eggy. At that moment, he seemed to have realized something.

He determined that the old monk must've left so hurriedly because he was embarrassed that he had agreed to remove the spirit formation sealing Eggy, only to discover that he would not be able to do so after attempting to do so.

"Mother, it would seem that your world spirit techniques must be above those of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist," Thinking of that, Chu Feng revealed a smile on his face. It was a smile of pride.

Even though that monk was extremely mysterious, so much so that Chu Feng didn't even know his name, Chu Feng had a faint sensation after chatting with the old monk that his father and mother were both extremely powerful.

throughout the world, how could there be people that did not want their parents to be powerful? Chu Feng was naturally no exception.

After that, Chu Feng returned Eggy to his world spirit space. Then, he went and gathered all of the treasures around the coffin.

Of course, the cultivation resources were an exception. Chu Feng did not take them into his Cosmos Sack. Instead, he directly refined them.

To Chu Feng's surprise, after he completely refined those cultivation resources, the amount of Natural Energies in his dantian were so abundant that he could reach rank five Half Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng was overjoyed such an outcome. After all, back when he was in the Holy Land of Martialism, it was very difficult for him to even gather enough Natural Energies to reach a single breakthrough in cultivation.

He had only been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for a short time. Yet, he had already gathered so much Natural Energy. This was truly something that he had never expected.

At the same time, it also allowed Chu Feng to realize the benefits of the Outer World.

Chu Feng continued to comprehend the way of martial cultivation over the following days. He wanted to reach rank three Half Martial Ancestor as quickly as possible.

After all, that old monk had clearly indicated to him that his current strength was insufficient to be a match against that demonic woman. Thus, if he wanted to avenge Wang Qiang, he had to increase his cultivation.

In the blink of an eye, several more days passed. Chu Feng was still unable to break through his bottleneck. This caused Chu Feng to realize the difficulty in martial cultivation that others had to go through.

After all, before he trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, Chu Feng was able to break through all bottlenecks and reach a breakthrough in cultivation should he simply possess sufficient cultivation resources.

“Ji, ji, ji~~~”

Suddenly, bird cries were heard. Furthermore, those cries were very ear-piercing.

Hearing the sound, Chu Feng immediately stood up and revealed a cautious expression.

After all, he was still in the Darknight Ghost Forest. The Darknight Ghost Forest was a place with no living creatures. As such, how could there suddenly be bird cries? *n0ve-Lb*(In

Confused, Chu Feng looked toward the direction from where the cries sounded. Upon looking, Chu Feng discovered that it was a special sort of bird. Although its cry sounded like that of a little bird, its voice was very loud and clear. Even though it was very far away, Chu Feng was able to hear it clearly. Furthermore, it was the size of a northern goshawk.

Most importantly, there was a spirit formation on the bird. Dandelion-like bodies of light were spreading from that spirit formation nonstop.

As that bird flew past rapidly, it spread those bodies of light all over the places it passed.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that those bodies of light contained a special sort of message.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng extended his hand and unleashed a suction force.

One such body of light that was over ten thousand meters away was sucked to Chu Feng's fingertips. Then, it merged into Chu Feng's fingertips.

"Damn it!" After Chu Feng received the message, he immediately revealed a furious expression.

The reason for that was because that message was related to him.

To put it simply, the message was meant to be passed to Chu Feng.

As for the reason why Chu Feng was furious, it was because it was not good news for him.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2189 - To Proceed While Braving Death**

The message was being spread by a person from Luyang's Pavilion by the name of Hong Xi.

It was unknown what sort of method that person had used. However, he had managed to capture Tang Ying, as well as that servant girl by the name of A'cai.

He wanted Chu Feng to show up at the Tang Family within ten days so that they could capture him. Should Chu Feng not appear in ten days' time, he would skin Tang Ying alive.

Furthermore, judging by the time, the time limit was about to arrive. If Chu Feng did not hurry to the Tang Family, Tang Ying's life would likely be lost.

However, Luyang's Pavilion had most definitely come prepared this time around. With Chu Feng's current strength, he would definitely be courting death should he go there.

"How did this happen? Could it be that servant girl by the name of A'cai led them to Tang Ying?"

"Truly foolish! Didn't I tell her to run far away? Why would she still be captured?"

Chu Feng was uncertain as to what sort of method Hong Xi had used to capture Tang Ying.

However, Chu Feng felt that the person called Hong Xi was most likely not lying.

The reason for that was because he was able to tell that there was more than a single bird spreading the message. Likely, there were a lot of them.

After that news spread, there would definitely be a lot of people that would proceed toward the Tang Family to watch the show. If Tang Ying was not present then, that Hong Xi would have humiliated himself and the people of Luyang's Pavilion would be looked down upon by others.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's body shifted and he began to fly toward the Tang Family.

Even though he knew that proceeding to the Tang Family would be disastrous...

Even though Chu Feng did not have a deep relationship with Tang Ying, and they were merely acquaintances...

Even though Chu Feng had already saved Tang Ying three times and had been meticulously virtuous and dutiful toward her...

Even though Chu Feng had only provoked Luyang's Pavilion because he had helped that Tang Ying...

For some unknown reason, Chu Feng was actually unable to contain his desire to save Tang Ying.

Thus, even though he knew that it was a trap, Chu Feng was still determined to go there.

The reason for that was because he was truly unable to abandon Tang Ying, he was unable to let her be killed because of him.

The reason for that was because there was something that flowed in Chu Feng's body that was haunting him.

As for that something, it was called the ‘unyielding and upright nature of a man’!!!”

.....

Chu Feng’s guess was correct. Tang Ying had indeed been captured. Furthermore, other than Tang Ying and that servant girl by the name of A’cai, the rest of the Tang Family had all been massacred by the people from Luyang’s Pavilion.

As for how Tang Ying was captured, it was more or less what Chu Feng had already deduced. Hong Xi had used the servant girl by the name of A’cai to find Tang Ying.

Currently, that servant girl and Tang Ying were both suspended atop a thousand meter-tall iron pole and tied with thorny vines.

The sharp thorns had already pierced through the two women’s tender flesh and blood was flowing from their skin nonstop, dyeing their clothes red. The health of the two women had become extremely poor.

“Young Miss, I have let you down. It is all my fault. I am the one that has harmed you. My death cannot atone for my crimes, my death cannot atone for my crimes.”

The servant girl was crying. Her tears were falling like rain. It was not because of the pain she felt. Rather, it was because she felt that she had implicated Tang Ying.

“A’cai, stop crying. This is not your fault. I have heard about that Hong Xi’s ability from father and the others. Practically no one could withstand his tortures. As such, it is natural for you to give in.”

“Furthermore, you only mentioned the location where my mother was buried.”

“Actually, it is all my fault. I was the one who did not listen to Chu Feng’s advice to quickly leave this place,” Tang Ying said.

“Young Miss, it is not your fault. After all, you just wanted to pay your respects to your mother before leaving,” The servant girl said.

"That's right. I decided to pay respects to my mother. However, because of this, I've implicated Chu Feng now," Tang Ying said.

"Could it be that Lord Chu Feng will really come?" The servant girl asked. She did not feel like Chu Feng would come. However, she wished that Chu Feng would come.

Even though she knew that Chu Feng would likely die should he come here, it remained that there would be a chance of survival for them should Chu Feng come. However, if Chu Feng were to not come, they would definitely be killed.

"I hope that he will not come," Tang Ying said.

"If he doesn't come, you will die. If he comes, you will still die," Suddenly, a man appeared out of thin air and stood before Tang Ying. This person was Hong Xi.

"Kill me!!!" Tang Ying shouted.

"Don't be in such a rush. I will soon let you reunite with your family. Merely... I'm afraid that your family will not treat you well even if you are to meet them in the netherworld. After all, you are a traitor to the Tang Family. Hahaha!!!" Hong Xi laughed frantically.

"You damned demon! You shall die miserably! Chu Feng will not spare you! He will definitely not spare you!" Tang Ying shouted furiously.

She knew that all the remaining people of her Tang Family were killed by that Hong Xi. He did not spare even the children. All those that he killed were innocent people.

"You couldn't possibly really be thinking that Chu Feng will show up, right? You're thinking that he will brave dangers for an insignificant nobody like you?" Hong Xi sneered.

Tang Ying grew silent upon hearing those words. Even though there was not much of a change to her expression, her heart was extremely hurt.

After her family betrayed her, she felt that there was only a single person she could rely on in this world--Chu Feng.



Merely, would Chu Feng really show up? Would Chu Feng throw his life away for her, someone that he barely knew?

Even though she did not wish for Chu Feng to come, she would still feel sad should Chu Feng really not show up.

“Truth be told, I never hoped that Chu Feng would come to save you. The truth is, he will absolutely not come,” Hong Xi said.

“Then why did you do this?” Tang Ying asked in confusion.

“I am doing this all to ruin that Chu Feng’s reputation. I will let everyone know that while you treat that Chu Feng as your friend, that Chu Feng will still refuse to come save you,” As Hong Xi said those words, he looked into the distance.

There were a lot of silhouettes in the distant sky. Those were all people that had received the message Hong Xi had spread, and arrived to watch the show.

After all, Hong Xi had let out more than a single bird to spread his news. Thus, practically everyone knew that Luyang’s Pavilion was planning to use the Tang Family’s Young Miss as a threat to make that Chu Feng show himself.

In the beginning, many people did not know what sort of grudges and grievances there were between Chu Feng and Luyang’s Pavilion. *no-1b*(In

However, it remained that there were no wind-proof walls in the world. Thus, as the crowd gathered, the people that knew about what had happened began to narrate the course of events to the crowd.

At that moment, practically everyone present knew about the grudges and grievances between Chu Feng and Luyang’s Pavilion.

Even though they had all come here for the sake of watching the show, the great majority of them did not feel that Chu Feng would really come for a mere Tang Ying.

“Woosh~~~”

Just then, a golden light flashed past the sky, and entered the city.

“Boom~~~”

After that golden light entered the city, it began to rapidly change, and turned into the figure of a man.

“Chu Feng?”

Seeing that person, Tang Ying’s expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because that person was none other than Chu Feng.

Merely, that was not Chu Feng’s actual body. Rather, it was a clone formed with a world spirit formation.

“Do not bother surveying your surroundings anymore. With merely the bits of perception that you all possess, it is simply impossible for you all to find my actual body,” Chu Feng said to Hong Xi.

He was able to tell that Hong Xi and the experts from Luyang’s Pavilion were all using their perception to try to find him. Merely, they were simply unable to find him.

“And here I thought that you would actually be daring enough to come. Turns out, you actually only dare to come forth with your clone. You couldn’t possibly be thinking that you would be able to kill all of us and save Tang Ying with that mere spirit formation clone, right?” Hong Xi laughed mockingly.

“Hahahaha!!!” The others from Luyang’s Pavilion also burst into loud laughter.

In fact, many of the bystanders unrelated to Luyang’s Pavilion also started to laugh mockingly.

Even though the clone Chu Feng had formed with a spirit formation was much inferior to his actual body, it still gave off the aura of his actual body.

Thus, everyone was able to tell that Chu Feng was only a rank two Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, even if he were to show his actual body, it would still be impossible for him to be a match for Hong Xi and the others. As such, how could a mere clone possibly be a match for them?

“Release Tang Ying and A’cai. If you are to do that, I will show myself immediately,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say?” Hearing those words, Hong Xi’s expression changed immediately.

In fact, the expressions of everyone present changed.

None of them had expected that Chu Feng would truly come to save Tang Ying.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 2190 - Whole New Level Of Respect - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2190 - Whole New Level Of Respect**

### **Chapter 2190 - Whole New Level Of Respect**

“I said, release Tang Ying, and I’ll show myself immediately,” Chu Feng repeated himself.

“Heh, do you take me as a fool? Do you think that I will be toyed around with by you that easily?” Hong Xi said mockingly.

“You have no other choice,” Chu Feng said.

“No other choice? I think you’re mistaken here,” Hong Xi laughed coldly. Then, he extended his palm and grabbed at Tang Ying. Immediately, a boundless oppressive might appeared out of nowhere, covering Tang Ying and the servant girl.

The moment Hong Xi acted, everyone was able to sense Hong Xi’s aura. He was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. In other words, he was a peak Half Martial Ancestor-level expert, someone only a step away from becoming a Martial Ancestor.

For someone as powerful as him, he would be able to kill Tang Ying and her servant girl with a single thought. There was simply no need for him to use his oppressive might to do so.

“Show yourself immediately. Else, I will kill them right now,” Hong Xi threatened fiercely.

“Hong Xi, I know that you possess Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists among your subordinates. However, you should also know that it would be simply impossible for you all to determine where I’m located with your strength.”

“If you dare to kill Tang Ying and A’cai, I will definitely not show myself. I dare to guarantee you that you will never be able to accomplish the mission that your master gave you.”

“However, if you are to spare them, I will immediately show myself. I will definitely keep my word.”

“Today, I have already given you the chance to kill me. The choice is up to you now.”

“Of course, if you choose to insist on killing Tang Ying and not spare them, then it would mean that you are extremely cowardly. The person that will be mocked and ridiculed by the people of the world would not be me, Chu Feng. Instead, it will be you, Hong Xi.”

“However, if I am to not show myself after you released Tang Ying, the person mocked by the people of the world will instead be me.”

“Furthermore, if you choose the former and make it so that you will never be able to capture me again, I believe your master will also not be happy with you.”

“Thus, you should know what to choose,” Chu Feng said confidently. It was as if he had already seen through Hong Xi.

“Heh... you are quite smart,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Hong Xi suddenly burst into laughter. He was no fool, and was naturally able to weigh the pros and cons.

In this sort of situation, he truly appeared to have no other choice but to release Tang Ying as Chu Feng had said. However, he was unwilling to do so. The reason for that was because it would mean that he had lost to Chu Feng in this contest should he do as Chu Feng wanted.

However, he also did not wish to let go of this opportunity to kill Chu Feng, nor did he want to be punished by his master and mocked by the people of the world for letting Chu Feng go.

Thus, in the end, he waved his sleeve and destroyed the thorny vines tying Tang Ying and the servant girl up.

At that moment, Tang Ying and the servant girl had regained their freedom.

“You can go,” Hong Xi said.

Tang Ying and the servant girl were both bewildered by this scene. They seemed to be at a loss as for what to do, whether to escape or not.

However, they then turned around and began to hurriedly flee toward the distance. Their rear views were very sorry in appearance.

“Tell your men to release their tracking,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, Hong Xi’s expression changed. However, in the end, he looked to the men beside him.

In response, the men’s expressions changed. Even though there was not a lot of change to their appearance, a lot of people present knew that those men were world spiritists.

As such, they must’ve used special techniques to lock onto Tang Ying and her servant girl’s aura. Thus, no matter where Tang Ying and her servant girl were to flee to, they would still be captured by Hong Xi’s subordinates.

However, their tricks were seen through by Chu Feng. Thus, at that moment, Hong Xi’s subordinates had no choice but to stop what they were doing. With that, as long as Tang Ying and A’cai fled far enough, it would be extremely difficult for Hong Xi to find them again.

Even though the people from Luyang’s Pavilion did not chase after Tang Ying and A’cai, and had also released their tracking of them, some of the bystanders began to have the idea of tracking them.

In fact, some people had already entered the void, and were tailing Tang Ying from the shadows.

After all, they all knew how powerful Luyang’s Pavilion was. If they were able to find Tang Ying to hand to Luyang’s Pavilion, they would definitely be able to gain many benefits.

“The people present, listen carefully: If any of you dare to think about doing anything to Tang Ying and her servant girl, I will definitely make you all wish you were dead,” Chu Feng’s voice sounded again. Even though it was only from his clone, his voice contained great killing intent, and was extremely chilly.

At this moment, the expressions of the people who thought about tailing Tang Ying all turned sluggish. They no longer dared to move.

Even though they all felt that Chu Feng was powerless to even protect himself now, they, for some reason, felt that Chu Feng’s words were no joke. It was as if he was truly capable of doing what he said.

They felt that if they were to do something to Tang Ying today, they might really end up dying by Chu Feng’s hands. As such, in the end, not a single person dared to tail Tang Ying from the shadows.

At that moment, many people started to have new opinions of Chu Feng.

His simple sentences had demonstrated his perceptive ability, as well as his careful frame of mind.

Even though it was a path to his own destruction for Chu Feng to come here, he had already planned everything out.

Before this, no one would’ve truly thought that a mere member of the younger generation would be able to accomplish all this against a major power with strength greatly surpassing his own.

In fact, many people felt that Chu Feng would not show up, that it would mean that Chu Feng was a fool should he show up, that not only would he die, but Tang Ying would also die.

However, looking at it now, the crowd felt that they had truly underestimated this Chu Feng before.

The current situation was that Tang Ying had been released. If Chu Feng were to not show himself, Hong Xi would have lost enormously.

In fact, many people felt that Chu Feng would not show himself.

The reason for that was because the people that he wanted to save today had already been saved. Furthermore, he was able to get away safely. Thus, Chu Feng had already won.

Most importantly, no one would give up their lives for the sake of their reputation. The crowd automatically felt that Chu Feng would not do so either.

“They have already gotten far away. They are safe now. You can show yourself,” Hong Xi said.

“Don’t be in such a rush. Wait a bit longer. The two of them have low levels of cultivation. You must give them a bit more time,” Chu Feng said.

“Could it be that you do not dare to show yourself?” Hong Xi said coldly.

“Are you afraid?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“Nonsense! Me, afraid?” Hong Xi started to frown as he replied with a cold voice.

“You fear that I will not show myself because you will end up losing enormously should that be the case. Furthermore, you will be ridiculed by the people of the world,” Chu Feng said.

“Ridiculous, even if someone is to be ridiculed, it will be you. You will be the one who will be ridiculed for breaking your promise. As for I... how could I possibly be ridiculed?” Hong Xi said.

“Indeed, I will be ridiculed. However, you will also be ridiculed. If people were to ridicule me for breaking my promise, they would also ridicule you for being extremely stupid.”

“You!!!” Hong Xi revealed a furious expression. He finally realized that he had been made a fool of. If Chu Feng were to really not show himself, he would end up losing enormously.

At that moment, Hong Xi was filled with regret. He regretted his impatience in wanting to kill Chu Feng that caused him to lose his calm and be exploited by Chu Feng.

“Look, didn’t I say that you were afraid?” Chu Feng laughed.

Suddenly, Hong Xi shouted, "Vile bastard!!!" Then, he raised his hand and shot out a palm strike. "Boom!" Chu Feng's clone was destroyed by him.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2191 - Chu Feng's Appearance**

Seeing Hong Xi destroying Chu Feng's clone caused the expressions of many people present to turn sluggish.

This ending seemed to represent that Chu Feng would truly not show himself.

Even though they had already anticipated this, the crowd were still disappointed to see that things would end this way.

After all, if this was truly the case, this show would truly have been too dull.

At the same time, it would also mean that Chu Feng was, like the great majority of people, a spineless coward.

"Everyone, you've all seen this. I, Hong Xi, am straightforward and upright. I have kept my word."

"As for that Chu Feng, he is extremely despicable; he is someone that goes back on his word."

"Actually, I, Hong Xi, already expected that he would not show himself. I also know that he is despicable and shameless."

"However, I still gave in to his demands. The reason for that is because I wanted everyone to see his true colors. I wanted everyone to know that there's a despicable man by the name of Chu Feng in our Luyang's Pavilion's territory."

"Everyone, you must be careful when you encounter that child. Do not be entrapped by him. The reason for that is because that child is a fully deserving vile bastard," Hong Xi feared that the people would truly think that he was stupid. Thus, he began to find excuses for himself.



Most ridiculous of it all, though it was unknown as to whether the crowd wanted to flatter Hong Xi or what, but many of them actually took what Hong Xi said to be the truth and began to nod.

In fact, many among them even started to applaud Hong Xi.

“Who said that I, Chu Feng, am someone who goes back on my words, that I will not dare to show myself?”

Suddenly, right at that moment, a figure flew over and entered Hong Xi and the others’ line of sight.

Upon seeing that man, the people present, including Hong Xi, were all startled. The reason for that was because that person was Chu Feng, the real Chu Feng and definitely not a clone.

“Chu Feng?!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, even Hong Xi revealed a surprised expression. He seemed to not dare to believe that Chu Feng would really show himself.

“What’s wrong? Hong Xi, as one of the six grand Vice Pavilion Masters of Luyang’s Pavilion, could it be that you cannot tell whether I am here with my actual body or as a clone?” Chu Feng mocked with a smile.

He was never one to do something without certainty of success. Before coming here, he had already thoroughly investigated that Hong Xi.

Hong Xi was not only a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, he was also one of the six most powerful individuals in Luyang’s Pavilion underneath Chu Luyang.

His strength was most definitely not limited to merely that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Reportedly, even ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors would not be a match for him.

It was not because he possessed heaven-defying battle power that surpassed ordinary people. Rather, it was because he was a special monstrous beast. He possessed a special Inherited Bloodline that could allow him to increase his cultivation by a level.

In other words, even though his actual cultivation was that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, his cultivation would increase to that of a rank one Martial Ancestor should he activate his Inherited Bloodline.

“Hahaha, I truly never expected this. Chu Feng, not only are you bold, you’re also very astute. You actually dared to appear by yourself.”

“You couldn’t possibly think that I wouldn’t dare to kill you, right?” After Hong Xi confirmed that it was Chu Feng’s actual body, he was immediately overjoyed. All of the displeasure that was on his face before disappeared, and was replaced with a sense of superiority.

The way he saw it, as long as Chu Feng showed himself, he would be the victor. The reason for that was because Hong Xi felt that Chu Feng would undoubtedly be killed by him because of the difference between their strengths.

Pleasure. He felt extreme pleasure. He felt so much pleasure, that Hong Xi actually forgot himself.

“Who told you that little friend Chu Feng came alone?” However, right at that moment, an old man’s voice sounded.

Following that, the space beside Chu Feng started to fluctuate like water. Soon, an old man appeared from that space and stood beside Chu Feng.

“It’s you?!”

Upon seeing this person, the expressions of the great majority of the people present changed. The reason for that was because this old man was one of the Red Butterfly Society’s management elders, Elder Liu Chengkun.

n(.o//v/(ε/-ℓ--B-)1-.n

Furthermore, Elder Liu Chengkun was not concealing his aura. Instead, he had unleashed his aura, his cultivation.

His aura greatly surpassed that of Half Martial Ancestors. Sensing that aura, people felt fear from it. The reason for that was because that Elder Liu Chengkun was actually a Martial Ancestor.

A rank one Martial Ancestor, an actual Martial Ancestor-level expert, an expert that had truly grasped the strength of Ancestral-level martial power.

However, compared to others, Chu Feng did not reveal any trace of surprise after Elder Liu Chengkun appeared.

The reason for that... was because before Chu Feng had appeared, he had already known that this Elder Liu Chengkun would come to help him.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you can rest assured. I have already ordered my men to receive Tang Ying and her servant girl. They are already safe now,” Liu Chengkun said to Chu Feng through voice transmission with a beaming smile.

“Thank you, Elder Liu, for your assistance,” Chu Feng replied through voice transmission. His tone was filled with gratefulness.

Actually, the reason why Chu Feng dared to show himself was precisely because he had discovered Elder Liu Chengkun after arriving to this place.

in the beginning, Chu Feng had merely sent a voice transmission to Elder Liu Chengkun to ask him whether or not he could help him get Tang Ying after they escaped.

At that time, he was uncertain of whether or not Elder Liu Chengkun would help him. After all, he had refused Elder Liu Chengkun’s invitation not long ago.

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, not only did Elder Liu Chengkun agree to help him without the slightest hesitation, he even told Chu Feng to not quietly leave, and instead show himself after Hong Xi released Tang Ying.

He told Chu Feng that his reputation would be ruined should he escape. At that time, it would become a stain throughout his life. Furthermore, he would be ridiculed all his life for it. Even if Chu Feng managed to obtain an extremely high level of accomplishment in the future, there would still be people that would dishonor him using that.

At that time, Chu Feng realized that Liu Chengkun would definitely show himself to help him should he show himself.

Actually, even if Liu Chengkun had not said such a thing to Chu Feng, Chu Feng had not planned to escape without a trace either.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that he not only carried his own reputation, he also carried his father Chu Xuanyuan and his grandfather Chu Hanxian's reputations.

Not only could he not afford to shame himself, he could not afford to shame his father and grandfather.

Thus, no matter what, Chu Feng would show himself. Even if he could not defeat Hong Xi, he would still fight him. He had decided to place all of his hopes onto his Evil God Sword.

However, as Liu Chengkun had decided to help him, Chu Feng felt more confident.

Merely, it remained that he did not have much of a relation with Liu Chengkun. They had only met each other once. Furthermore, Chu Feng had refused his invitation.

Thus, Chu Feng truly felt extremely grateful that Liu Chengkun was willing to help him unconditionally.

"So, Chu Feng was actually a part of your Red Butterfly Society? No wonder he's bold enough to go against our Luyang's Pavilion."

"This is the perfect opportunity. Liu Chengkun, I have yet to settle my debt with you from last time," Hong Xi said fiercely.

"I think you are mistaken. Little friend Chu Feng is merely a like-minded individual to us. However, he does not actually belong to our Red Butterfly Society," Elder Liu Chengkun explained on behalf of Chu Feng.

Liu Chengkun's simple explanation caused Chu Feng's impression of him to increase greatly.

Originally, Chu Feng had wanted to explain. However, it remained that Liu Chengkun had helped him like this. Thus, Chu Feng decided not to explain.

Yet, Liu Chengkun had actually decided to explain for him. This meant that Liu Chengkun was truly a good individual.

“Enough of your superfluous words. Today, both of you shall die,” Once Hong Xi said those words, his eyes immediately turned red as an overwhelming killing intent emerged.

Immediately afterward, Hong Xi’s face started to change. Crimson scales began to bore out of his skin. Soon, his clothes ruptured, and his body size increased by threefold.

Even though he still had the appearance of a human, his body was completely covered with crimson scales. Sharp and strong black fingernails appeared on his fingers and he looked very much like a monster.

Most importantly, his aura had increased. He was no longer a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, he had become a rank one Martial Ancestor.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2192 - Trapped In Danger**

“Come. Today, the two of us shall settle the grudges we have from the past.”

In response, Liu Chengkun waved his sleeve. Stepping on the air, he began to walk calmly toward Hong Xi.

At the moment he waved his sleeve, a little crystal bowl was tossed toward Chu Feng.

After that little crystal bowl approached Chu Feng, it began to rapidly increase in size. From the size of a palm, it increased to the size of a washbowl. In an upside-down manner, it hovered on top of Chu Feng’s head and spun slowly.

As it spun, a faint light began to sprinkle down from the bowl like a waterfall of light.

In the end, a defensive barrier was formed. That defensive barrier surrounded Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, your life is mine!!!”

At that time, the other experts from Luyang's Pavilion all rushed toward Chu Feng and surrounded him. They all unleashed their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and began to attack Chu Feng.

Ferocious martial skills and frightening blade rays, they were all incomparably powerful. To Chu Feng, all of those attacks were capable of taking his life should he be struck by them unprepared. Even if he managed to survive, he would be seriously injured.

However, being underneath the crystal bowl, Chu Feng was completely unharmed.

Regardless of how powerful their attacks were, regardless of whether they were the attacks of rank seven Half Martial Ancestors, rank eight Half Martial Ancestors or even rank nine Half Martial Ancestors, none of the attacks were capable of breaching the defensive barrier formed by the crystal bowl.

The crystal bowl was a defensive treasure. Chu Feng was absolutely safe should he stay inside it.

Unless that Hong Xi were to act, none of the current people from Luyang's Pavilion would be able to bring any harm to Chu Feng.

Unfortunately, that Hong Xi was simply unable to do anything to Chu Feng right now. The reason for that was because he was locked in a busy battle against Elder Liu Chengkun.

Hong Xi was holding a large crimson blade. That blade was ten meters long, and emitted a very strong bloody odor. It was as if the blade was made of blood.

With each movement, the blade would let out a frightening snarl. His weapon was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. However, it was an extremely powerful one.

From the discussion of the surrounding crowd, Chu Feng came to know that the crimson sword was an extremely famous Incomplete Ancestral Armament. It was called the Infernal Bloodsoul Blade.

It was indeed a blade formed by the condensation of blood. That was the reason why it reeked so strongly of blood, and emitted an intense killing intent.

Furthermore, the Infernal Bloodsoul Blade was forged by a demonic beast world spiritist. Thus, when it was being used by a demonic beast, the Infernal Bloodsoul Blade would be more powerful than when it was used by a human.

As for Elder Liu Chengkun, he had also unleashed his own Incomplete Ancestral Armament. When compared to Hong Xi's Incomplete Ancestral Armament, Elder Liu Chengkun's Incomplete Ancestral Armament looked even more special.

His Incomplete Ancestral Armament was actually a picture scroll. The picture scroll had a painting of a sea. That sea was so vivid and lifelike; it was actually surging in the picture scroll.

The picture scroll was not being held in Elder Liu Chengkun's hand. Rather, it was completely revealed. Like a special dragon, that picture scroll hovered around Elder Liu Chengkun to fight for him.

From the conversation of the surrounding crowd, Chu Feng found out that that picture scroll also possessed an extraordinary origin.

It was formed by refining a vast sea. Thus, the sea inside the picture scroll was not fake. Rather, it was an actual sea.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

At this moment, the battle between the two men grew increasingly more intense. Even though they were equally matched, Chu Feng started to frown.

With his sharp perception and intuition, Chu Feng felt that Elder Liu Chengkun was already going all out, and had unleashed his strongest strength in the fight.

However, as for Hong Xi, Chu Feng kept feeling that he still had hidden tricks up his sleeve. If he were to truly go all out, Elder Liu Chengkun would definitely be no match against him.

Suddenly, Hong Xi shouted, “Emperor Taboo: Blood Lizard Transformation!”

Then, crimson gaseous flames began to emit from his body. The gaseous flames started to rapidly transform. In the end, the gaseous flames turned into a giant thousand-meter-long red lizard. [1. Hong Xi's name literally means Red Lizard.]

The giant red lizard appeared to be a spirit body, as it was translucent. However, it was emitting an extremely powerful aura, and was controlled by Hong Xi.

At that moment, its bloody mouth was wide open as it moved to bite at Elder Liu Chengkun.

Before the mouth even arrived, the might of the attack was already extremely terrifying.

“Emperor Taboo: Great Tidal Wave!”

Elder Liu Chengkun was not to be outdone. He, too, unleashed a very powerful Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Immediately, violent waves of water that contained extremely powerful Ancestral-level martial power began to surge in the sky. It looked like a vast sea had appeared in the sky.

Elder Liu Chengkun was very experienced in battle. At the same time as he started to attack Hong Xi from afar with his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, he was also moving backwards and maintaining his state of superiority against Hong Xi.

“As expected of a Martial Ancestor. They are not people that can be compared with someone who obtained the cultivation of Martial Ancestor through abilities.”

Seeing the successive tidal waves swallowing the giant red lizard, the great majority of the people present, with the exception of Chu Feng, all felt that Elder Liu Chengkun was going to win.

“Old fart, quite a good technique you have there. However, do not think that you will be able to stop me with only this.”

Suddenly, Hong Xi's voice sounded from within the surging waves in the sky. Following that, Hong Xi's figure reappeared.



Merely, when Hong Xi's enormous figure reappeared, there was an enormous change when compared to before.

If the enormous lizard from before was only a phantom image, then the current Hong Xi's entire body was rapidly increasing in size.

Hong Xi's body was fusing with his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. As this situation continued, the aura that Hong Xi was emitting grew more and more powerful.

“Crash, splatter~~~”

At that moment, Hong Xi began to move forward while braving the waves. He had managed to withstand the overflowing giant waves from Elder Liu Chengkun, and was closing the distance to him. Furthermore, his speed was growing faster and faster. It seemed like he would be able to overtake Elder Liu Chengkun.

“Crap!”

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng started to frown even deeper. His ill premonition had happened.

Elder Liu Chengkun had already unleashed all of his power. And now, Hong Xi had unleashed his final trump card.

However, Hong Xi's trump card was yet to be completely revealed. If he were to reveal it completely, the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill that Elder Liu Chengkun had unleashed with his Incomplete Ancestral Armament would likely not be a match for Hong Xi.

Hong Xi had relied on his Inherited Bloodline and that Incomplete Ancestral Armament specialized for Monstrous Beasts. As such, his might surpassed that of Elder Liu Chengkun.

“How could this be? Hong Xi, he's actually this powerful? He was actually able to reverse the battle?”

At that moment, the people who thought that Elder Liu Chengkun was going to win all revealed expressions of shock. None of them had anticipated that Hong Xi would be so powerful, so powerful that he could reverse the situation.

“Reverse the situation? You all are overthinking it. Our Lord Hong Xi is someone unequalled among those with the same level of battle power to begin with. That Red Butterfly Society’s Liu Chengkun only managed to fight our Lord Hong Xi to a draw before because our Lord Hong Xi was deliberately going easy on him,” The people from Luyang’s Pavilion said proudly.

“So that was the case?! Lord Hong Xi is truly amazing!!!”

“In that case, it would seem that not only will that Chu Feng not be able to escape today, that Liu Chengkun will also end up meeting a calamity today?!”

At that moment, the crowd all cast glances at Chu Feng. Then, they looked back to Liu Chengkun. Inevitably, there was a slight amount of pity in their gazes.

After all, if Liu Chengkun hadn’t come for Chu Feng, he would not have involved himself with this mess. If he hadn’t involved himself with this mess, he would not have ended up in such a dangerous situation now.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2193 - The Power Of Asura**

“Senior Liu Chengkun, please do not worry about me. You should leave right now!” Chu Feng shouted. He did not wish to implicate Liu Chengkun.

However, Liu Chengkun smiled lightly at Chu Feng’s urge to leave. He said, “Little friend Chu Feng, a man should not give up so easily.”

“Although I, Liu Chengkun, am quite old, I am still a man. Furthermore, our Red Butterfly Society possesses numerous grudges and grievances with this Luyang’s Pavilion to begin with. Furthermore, I, Liu Chengkun, also possess a great personal hatred against this Hong Xi.”

“Thus, this is not simply a matter that concerns you alone. No matter what, I will not let this Hong Xi get away today. Even if it must end in mutual destruction, I must still kill him.”

After saying those words, Elder Liu Chengkun shouted loudly. After that shout, his Incomplete Ancestral Armament began to shine brightly. At the same time, Elder Liu Chengkun's aura also became much more powerful.

Subsequently, the Emperor Taboo: Great Tidal Wave unleashed by Elder Liu Chengkun also became much more powerful. Successive enormous waves shattered space itself. Once again, they began to drown Hong Xi, making it extremely difficult for him to continue onward.

Willpower and killing intent.

Elder Liu Chengkun had completely unleashed all of his power. He had already reached his limit. However, he was still able to increase his power. He had only managed to accomplish all that by relying on his willpower to kill Hong Xi.

"Humph," Hong Xi snorted mockingly. He seemed to have already seen through this fact. Thus, he sneered, "Merely an arrow at the end of its flight. I shall see how much longer you can persevere."

"Damn it. This wouldn't do if it is to continue like this," At that moment, Chu Feng was extremely nervous.

Even though Elder Liu Chengkun had declared that he possessed personal hatred with that Hong Xi, and that his death would be unrelated to Chu Feng, Chu Feng would still blame himself should Elder Liu Chengkun really die here today.

"I can only give it a try," Suddenly, a determined expression flashed through Chu Feng's eyes. He placed his palm onto his Cosmos Sack.

He was planning to use the power that he could not control, the Evil God Sword!!!

Even though the Evil God Sword appeared to only be an Imperial Armament, it was most definitely not a mere Imperial Armament. Else, it would be impossible for even his father to warn him about using the Evil God Sword.

The power of the Evil God Sword was extremely frightening. Chu Feng did not have the ability to control it. If things went wrong, Chu Feng might even end up being killed by the Evil God Sword.

However, that power that he could not control was the only thing that Chu Feng could rely on. After all, there was such an enormous difference in cultivation between him and that Hong Xi. It would simply be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat Hong Xi with his own strength.

“Chu Feng, don’t worry,” However, right at that moment, a soft and gentle voice entered Chu Feng’s ears, advising him against using the Evil God Sword.

Chu Feng’s body trembled upon hearing that voice. His heart tensed up. At that moment, he felt as if he had been struck by lightning.

However, the sensation he felt was not one of pain. Rather, it was one of immense joy. He was truly and immensely overjoyed. It was as if the greatest thing had happened in this world.

The reason for that was because that voice he heard sounded very familiar. It was Eggy’s voice, the voice of Her Lady Queen.

After hearing Eggy’s voice, Chu Feng immediately cast his awareness into his world spirit space. He wished to see what had happened there.

Upon reaching his world spirit space, he was even more incapable of controlling his emotions, and revealed an ecstatic expression.

Eggy, Her Lady Queen, had woken up.

Wearing a black dress, she was still as exceptionally beautiful as she always was. With a smile on her face, she looked at Chu Feng.

“Milady Queen, you’re finally awake.”

“Is it really you? I’m not dreaming, right?” Chu Feng was truly overjoyed. He did not expect that Eggy would wake up at such a time.

“Hey, hey, hey! Where are you touching? Are you deliberately taking advantage of this Queen?!” Eggy curled her lips and cast a disdainful gaze at Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was not behaving honestly at all. Not only had he hugged the little beauty into his bosom, he was also rubbing

her nonstop with his hands. He was so bold that he was using his hands to touch Eggy's exquisite and perfect cheeks.

However, even though that was the case, Eggy merely called Chu Feng out for his actions, and did not push him away.

"Haha, Eggy, it is truly you. Do you know how much I missed you?" Chu Feng said.

"Enough of this disgusting behavior. This Queen did not really fall asleep. I have heard all of your soliloquies throughout these days."

"In the future, if this Queen is not present, you must not say those sorts of things. Else, even if I am fine, I will be disgusted by your words to the point where I will not be fine," Eggy said with her lips curled.

Even though she revealed a disgusted facial expression, her beautiful eyes were displaying happiness.

"In that case, you know about all the things that happened?" Chu Feng asked.

"I remember them even better than you," Eggy raised her head and spoke proudly.

"Then, the spirit formation my mother placed on you, did you...!!!" Chu Feng asked.

"I know. Although your mother sealed my cultivation, that spirit formation was indeed beneficial to me. As such, I am unable to blame her."

"If you don't believe me, look," Eggy smiled sweetly, then unleashed her aura.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to clearly sense the cultivation of Her Lady Queen Eggy. She was many times more powerful than before. n)-0Vell1n

It was as his father had declared, Eggy was a Half Martial Ancestor now. Not only that, she had also surpassed Chu Feng's cultivation.

Chu Feng was merely a rank two Half Martial Ancestor. However, p Eggy was already a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

"Let's go. Let this Queen out. I will personally teach that ignorant stinky lizard."

“This Queen will make him know that not just anyone can be bullied by him. That you, Chu Feng, are under the umbrella of this Queen.”

Eggy waved her fists around angrily. Even though she had just regained consciousness, she knew all about what Chu Feng had experienced. Thus, she was impatient to teach that Hong Xi a lesson.

“Of course. No... wait.”

“Milady Queen, although your cultivation is strong, you are only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. That Hong Xi, on the other hand, is a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, he has reached rank one Martial Ancestor after using the power of his Inherited Bloodline. Would you... really be able to contend against him?” Chu Feng asked with a frown. He was worried for Eggy.

“Really be able to contend against him? What sort of words are those? Who are you looking down on? Are you looking down at Your Lady Queen, or are you looking down at me?” Eggy asked with a furious expression.

“This...” Chu Feng did not dare to answer.

“Haha, look at your expression. I am only toying with you,” Eggy smiled proudly. Her smile was extremely beautiful. Looking at that smile, Chu Feng was nearly intoxicated.

“Rest assured, regardless of how powerful that Hong Xi’s cultivation might be, his battle power is too weak. As for this Queen, my battle power is capable of surmounting seven levels of cultivation.”

“No, that’s wrong. If, according to what your father said, all Martial Emperors and Martial Ancestors possess battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, then this Queen’s battle power, when compared to theirs, is capable of surmounting four additional levels of cultivation.”

“However, even if it is only surmounting four levels of cultivation, the Queen is still able to contend against ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors. Furthermore, ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors are definitely no match for this Queen. Thus, you don’t have to worry.”

“This Queen will definitely teach that Hong Xi a lesson so bad that he will cry and go look for his mom,” Eggy said proudly.

“Heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Milady Queen, you are truly amazing,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression.

He knew very well that Her Lady Queen was someone that never lied. Since Her Lady Queen declared that she possessed a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, that meant that she most definitely did.

Before, Chu Feng had guessed that Her Lady Queen’s heaven-defying battle power would be much stronger than his own. However, it turned out that Her Lady Queen’s heaven-defying battle power was even more amazing than he had guessed it to be.

Chu Feng had only managed to obtain his current heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation after breaking through to the Half Martial Ancestor realm. However, Her Lady Queen’s heaven-defying battle power was even stronger than his still.

“This Queen was also only able to increase my battle power after my cultivation increased to the Half Martial Ancestor level. If this Queen is able to reach Martial Ancestor level, my battle power will increase by another level,” Eggy added proudly.

“Heh, since that is the case, it is time to let them experience how powerful Milady Queen is,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“No,” Eggy shook her head.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked in a surprised manner.

Eggy smiled sweetly. She said, “What this Queen will let them experience is the power of Asura.”

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2194 - Prepared To Kill You**

“Rumble~~~”

Explosions began to sound in the sky nonstop.

Following the rumbles, surging waves began to spray in all direction like ferocious waterfalls.

At that moment, torrential rain covered the sky. The rain shattered the mountain stone and destroyed the city. In fact, many of the cultivators outside the city were forced to retreat far away. They did not dare to involve themselves in the matter.

It was Hong Xi. At that moment, Hong Xi's body had completely fused with that martial skill. He had turned into an actual giant monster that reached the sky.

Even his Incomplete Ancestral Armament had changed. It had turned into a demon-like crimson giant creature that fought alongside Hong Xi.

The giant creature that the Incomplete Ancestral Armament had turned into did not possess a complete body, as its body was changing nonstop. However, one would be terrified with a single glance at its eyes streaming with killing intent.

Furthermore, that giant creature possessed a strength on par with Hong Xi.

At that moment, Hong Xi was simply unstoppable. He was suppressing Elder Liu Chengkun and forcing him into a state of constant retreat.

A difficult expression was clearly present on Elder Liu Chengkun's face.

Everyone could tell that Liu Chengkun would likely not be able to last for much longer.

"Emperor Taboo: Holy Spirit Army!"

Forced to such a situation, Liu Chengkun shouted. He had unleashed another Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Once that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was unleashed, a total of eight thousand bodies of light shot forth. Merely, those bodies of light did not fly toward Hong Xi to attack him. Rather, they flew toward Chu Feng.

"Heeaahh!!!"



After the bodies of light approached, they began to transform. One by one, they turned into armored soldiers three meters tall holding spears in their hands.

Those soldiers all possessed cultivations of rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Once they appeared, they immediately started to attack and kill the people from Luyang's Pavilion that surrounded Chu Feng.

This caught the people from Luyang's Pavilion that surrounded Chu Feng off guard. They were powerless to defend themselves. In fact, other than the rank nine Half Martial Ancestors, the rest of them were all killed by the Holy Spirit Army.

"Chu Feng, quickly, escape!!!"

Right at that moment, a voice transmission entered Chu Feng's ears. That voice transmission was from Liu Chengkun.

"Trying to let him escape? I'm afraid that you won't be able to do so."

Upon seeing that, Hong Xi sneered. He had already seen through what Liu Chengkun was planning to do. Thus, with a thought, the crimson monster formed by the Incomplete Ancestral Armament turned around and started flying toward Chu Feng.

"Rumble~~~"

The crimson monster broke free from the tidal waves and began to charge toward Chu Feng to attack him. Wherever it passed, the sky would turn crimson. It was as if a life-seeking demon was proceeding toward Chu Feng to demand his life.

"Crash~~~"

Before that crimson monster even managed to approach Chu Feng, an enormous sky-shadowing tidal wave came from behind it and trapped the crimson monster.

It turned out that enormous wave was unleashed by Elder Liu Chengkun's Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Not only did the wave arrive, Elder Liu Chengkun's Incomplete Ancestral Armament had also arrived. At that

moment, the two Incomplete Ancestral Armaments started fighting one another.

At that moment, Chu Feng had just returned his awareness to his body and was startled upon seeing the scene before him.

After Liu Chengkun let go of his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the might of his Emperor Taboo: Great Tidal Wave decreased enormously.

As for Hong Xi, even though he had also let go of his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, his strength was still as ferocious as before. At that moment, he had already managed to close a lot of the distance between them, and was less than a hundred meters away from Liu Chengkun.

“Heeaaahh!!!”

Liu Chengkun shouted. Then, he clenched his teeth and increased the strength of his waves, barely managing to stop Hong Xi’s incoming attack. However, anyone could tell that Liu Chengkun would not be able to last for much longer.

“Puu~~~”

Suddenly, Liu Chengkun sprayed out a mouthful of blood and stained the lapel of his clothes.

This scene verified to the crowd that Liu Chengkun was truly unable to persist for much longer.

“Chu Feng, escape now!!!” Liu Chengkun suddenly shouted.

This time around, he was no longer sending Chu Feng a voice transmission. Instead, he was shouting out loud at him. After all, everyone was already able to tell that he was planning to let himself be killed here in order to let Chu Feng escape safely.

Chu Feng was extremely moved by Liu Chengkun’s actions. Even though he was clearly powerless to defend himself, he was still thinking about Chu Feng’s safety.

It could be seen that Liu Chengkun was truly willing to give up his life for Chu Feng.

However, it was clear that he had only met Chu Feng once before.

Feeling extremely moved, Chu Feng said, "Senior Liu Chengkun, I have troubled you."

"Just leave the rest to me."

"What?!" The people present were all startled by those words. They all looked to Chu Feng with confused expressions. *One-Lb*(In

What was this?

Liu Chengkun had risked his life in order to obtain an opportunity for Chu Feng to escape. Yet, Chu Feng was not only not planning to escape, he even said those things. Could it be that he had gone insane?

"Chu Feng, what did you say? I dare you to say it again!" At that moment, Hong Xi, who had held absolute superiority, no longer continued to press on toward Liu Chengkun. Instead, he turned his gaze toward Chu Feng.

Merely, his current gaze could be said to be filled with mockery. His gaze simply did not appear to be a gaze of someone looking at another person. Rather, it was the gaze of someone looking at a fool, a moron, an idiot.

In his eyes, the current Chu Feng was a fool, a moron, an idiot.

"Say, what is coming up will be the time of your death," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Time of my death? Even the rank one Martial Ancestor Liu Chengkun is no match for me. You are but a mere rank two Half Martial Ancestor, where did you obtain your confidence from?"

"Oh, I nearly forgot. You are a possessor of Heavenly Bloodline. Your Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings are capable of increasing your cultivation to rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, compared to ordinary Half Martial Ancestors, you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation."

"After using all your various techniques, you will be able to fight against rank seven Half Martial Ancestors. Thinking of it, you are truly quite amazing."

“However, do not forget that I am an actual rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, after activating my Inherited Bloodline, my cultivation has increased to that of a rank one Martial Ancestor.”

“Not to mention activating my Inherited Bloodline, even if I do not use my Inherited Bloodline’s power, I will still be able to easily kill you.”

“Before me, you are nothing more than an ant,” Hong Xi said.

“Oh? You’re actually that powerful? In that case, why am I still alive?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“If it wasn’t for Liu Chengkun’s obstruction, you would already be dead,” Hong Xi said.

“Haha...” Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he looked to Liu Chengkun and said, “Since that Hong Xi is that confident, Senior Liu Chengkun, please do not stop him. We should allow that Hong Xi to reveal his might. I also want to see how he shall kill me.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, what are you...!?” Liu Chengkun was completely puzzled. He did not understand what Chu Feng was thinking.

“Senior Liu, I know that you possess many grudges and grievances against that Hong Xi. However, today is the day for me to settle my debt with that Hong Xi.”

“Thus, Senior Liu, please,” Chu Feng said to Liu Chengkun while clasping his fist.

Chu Feng’s intentions were very clear. He wanted Liu Chengkun to step aside. Regardless of what Hong Xi might do to him, he did not want Liu Chengkun to interfere.

“This... okay then,” Liu Chengkun had an expression of helplessness as he sighed. Then, he retrieved his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and actually moved to the side.

Even though he felt that Chu Feng’s request was very unfathomable, Liu Chengkun saw Chu Feng’s confident gaze and felt that he was truly able to contend against Hong Xi.

Thus, he also wished to see if Chu Feng truly had even more tricks up his sleeve.

At the same time Liu Chengkun moved to the side, Hong Xi also stopped his attacks and retrieved his Incomplete Ancestral Armament. However, he did not immediately attack Chu Feng. Instead, he looked to Chu Feng and said, "Old fart Liu, do not be anxious. After taking care of this little bastard that does not know the immensity of heaven and earth, I will come and take care of you."

Once those words were said, the expressions of the crowd present all changed. What Hong Xi inferred with those words was that it would only take him but a moment to take care of Chu Feng.

It was true that with the difference in strength between the two men, it would not take Hong Xi a lot of time to take care of Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, are you prepared to die?" Hong Xi held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and shouted at Chu Feng.

"Heh..." Chu Feng lightly laughed. He said, "I have not prepared myself to die. However, I have prepared to kill you."

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2195 - Asura World Spiritist**

"Senior Liu Chengkun, please take back this bowl. I plan to take care of this Hong Xi," Chu Feng said to Liu Chengkun.

Once Chu Feng said those words, not to mention Hong Xi, even many of the bystanders started laughing.

It would be impossible for a mere rank two Half Martial Ancestor, even if he was someone who possessed a Heavenly Bloodline, to be a match against Hong Xi. Exactly where did Chu Feng gain the confidence to say those sort of words?

However, even with this being the case, Liu Chengkun still retrieved his crystal bowl. He might be the only person present that still had some expectations of Chu Feng.

“You are truly one who will not shed a tear until you see your coffin. Originally, I had thought about giving you a straightforward death. However, it would appear that... I must teach you a lesson today.”

“Else, you will not know how frightening I, Hong Xi, am.”

Hong Xi began to attack. He unleashed a special sort of martial skill. His Ancestral-level martial power turned into countless crimson bats.

Those bats were very small. However, they possessed sharp teeth and claws. Furthermore, they were very powerful. It was impossible for anyone below the Martial Ancestor level of cultivation to withstand their attacks.

Most importantly, there were a lot of such bats. They covered the entire sky, and were simply capable of swallowing up a vast city.

At this moment, those bats were flying toward Chu Feng. They were going to devour all of Chu Feng’s flesh and drink all his blood!

That was not a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill, it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. In fact, it was not even a Taboo Martial Skill. Instead, it was a rank three martial skill.

“That is, the Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique!!!”

However, that mere rank three martial skill caused Liu Chengkun’s expression to change enormously.

He knew very well how cruel and ruthless of a person Hong Xi was. He was one of the most outstanding confessional, extortionist, homicidal demons in Luyang’s Pavilion, and possessed countless methods to torture others.

Although the Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique was only a rank three martial skill, it was one of the most powerful torture methods Hong Xi possessed.

In the past, there was a very unyielding rank nine Half Martial Ancestor-level expert from the Red Butterfly Society that ended up confessing to the location

of a Red Butterfly Society branch due to the torture from that Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique.

This led to the Red Butterfly Society's branch being completely wiped out.

From this, it could be seen how frighteningly powerful Hong Xi's Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique was. After all, that expert was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. When even he failed to withstand the torture, could Chu Feng really be able to withstand it?

Thus, after recognizing that it was the Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique, Elder Liu Chengkun prepared himself to act. The reason for that was because he was unable to watch as Chu Feng suffered torment before him.

"Buzz~~~"

However, right at that moment, a world spirit gate appeared before Chu Feng.

After that world spirit gate appeared, black gaseous flames began to billow from the gate. Soon, the black gaseous flames covered the sky, and turned into a wall that separated heaven and earth. The wall stood in front of Chu Feng.

"Ji, ji, ji~~~"

At the moment the black gaseous flames appeared, the bats of Hong Xi's Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique that previously covered the sky started to charge toward the black gaseous flames explosively.

Right at that moment, a shocking scene occurred. After the crimson bats entered the black gaseous flames, not the slightest amount of energy ripples appeared. As if they were sand and stones being tossed into the sea, they disappeared completely.

"Roar~~~"

Soon, a strange roar sounded from the black gaseous flames. After that, a frightening killing intent began to spread all over.

"This sort of sensation, what is going on?"

"Heavens! What is that? Why would that aura be so frightening?!"

Sensing the frightening killing intent, the expressions of the crowd all turned sluggish. In fact, some of the more cowardly individuals turned pale and started to shiver with fear.

The very next moment, the black gaseous flames that covered the sky began to condense together. Soon, a figure appeared.

“Wow! What is going on?!!!” none(1B)1n

Seeing the beautiful woman that had appeared before them, not to mention the men present, even many women’s eyes started to shine. In fact, many people were unable to contain themselves, and sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

Beautiful, truly too beautiful. The beauty of her Lady Queen was capable of attracting countless gazes, and causing people to drool regardless of where she might be.

“Who is that beauty?” The crowd began to discuss Eggy spiritedly. After all, no one had seen Eggy appear. Thus, they did not know where she had come from. In fact, they had all forgotten about the world spirit gate Chu Feng had opened.

“Asura World Spirit, Chu Feng... could it be that you’re an Asura World Spiritist?” At that moment, it was Liu Chengkun who spoke first. Furthermore, at that moment, Liu Chengkun was extremely emotional.

By chance, Liu Chengkun had met an Asura World Spiritist before. As such, he had also seen an Asura World Spirit.

Thus, at the moment when the black gaseous flames began to spread, he was extremely astonished. The reason for that was because the sensation he felt from the black gaseous flames greatly resembled that of the Asura World Spirit he’d seen before.

After seeing Eggy, he was even more certain that Eggy was an Asura World Spirit. As the world spirit gate was opened by Chu Feng earlier, Liu Chengkun became certain that Chu Feng was most likely an Asura World Spiritist.

At that moment, Liu Chengkun was truly overwhelmed with excitement. Before this, he had never thought that Chu Feng would be an Asura World Spiritist.



“Senior Liu, please excuse my humble performance. Indeed, this junior is an Asura World Spiritist,” Chu Feng smiled lightly and admitted his identity.

“For real?! Chu Feng... he’s actually an Asura World Spiritist? In that case, that beauty is not a human, but a world spirit? Furthermore, she is an Asura World Spirit, the most savage and cruel world spirits of the Seven Spirit Worlds?”

At that moment, the people present were all unable to remain calm. After all, even to them, Asura World Spirits were akin to legends.

In the Lower Realms, Asura World Spiritists were rarely seen. After all... Asura World Spiritists were the rulers among world spiritists. They were existences that all the powers wanted to recruit into their ranks.

“You’re actually an Asura World Spiritist?” At that moment, even Hong Xi started to frown.

As a Vice Pavilion Master of Luyang’s Pavilion, Hong Xi naturally knew about how powerful Asura World Spiritists were. Without mentioning their strength, merely their identity as Asura World Spiritists would cause countless powers to try to recruit them regardless of price.

Chu Feng was actually an Asura World Spiritist. To their Luyang’s Pavilion, this was not good news at all.

“Yoh, you’re already scared before the actual battle has even begun?” Chu Feng mocked with a smile on his face.

“Scared? It’s merely a rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level world spirit. She’s not much more powerful than you. Why would I be afraid?”

“Are you even capable of making me scared?” Hong Xi sneered disdainfully.

Even though Hong Xi was indeed a bit scared, he could not reveal his fear, because he was a Vice Pavilion Master to Luyang’s Pavilion. Otherwise, he would end up bringing shame to Luyang’s Pavilion.

In fact, Hong Xi knew very well that he was unable to stop now. Even if Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist, he must still kill Chu Feng. Else, Chu Feng would cause no end of trouble.

“Even if this Queen only possesses the cultivation of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, it will still be extremely easy for me to kill you,” Eggy said.

“Sure enough, like master like world spirit. Both of you only know how to boast shamelessly.”

“That said, you are quite attractive. Taking your beauty into consideration, I will not kill you. Instead, I will capture you alive and make you my plaything. Every night, you will serve me on the bed,” Suddenly, Hong Xi smiled viciously. Then, he prepared to attack Eggy.

“Courting death,” In response, coldness flashed through Eggy’s eyes. Then, as her skirt fluttered, boundless black gaseous flames erupted from her body like a volcanic explosion.

In the end, the black gaseous flames turned into an enormous black claw and grabbed at Hong Xi.

“Noo!!!” Seeing that scene, Hong Xi actually shouted.

The reason for that was because he was actually unable to move before the black claw. He could only watch helplessly as the black claw that held a fatal threat moved to grab him.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2196 - The Savage Queen**

The black sharp claw covered the sky. It was even more enormous than Hong Xi, who had turned into a giant monster.

Furthermore, even though the sharp claw was coming from the front, Hong Xi was unable to dodge it.

In the end, he was captured by the claw and tightly held by it. The sharp nails pierced through his enormous body, causing his monstrous beast blood to splatter all over.

“Ahhh!!!” After being captured by the sharp claw, Hong Xi let out a miserable scream.

At the beginning, the crowd was confused. It was merely being captured and injured by a claw, was there really a need for him to cry so miserably? For an expert of his level, there shouldn't be a reason for him to have such a low level of endurance, no?

However, upon closer inspection, the crowd discovered that they had wronged Hong Xi. The reason for that was because Hong Xi's current situation was truly extremely miserable.

Hong Xi's body was being torn apart. Piece by piece, his flesh was breaking away from his body.

As for the flesh that broke away from his body, it was immediately refined. The sight was truly too horrible to watch.

"Stop, stop!!!!" As Hong Xi screamed in pain, he shouted for Egg to stop.

However, how could Her Lady Queen possibly pay attention to him? Not only did she not stop, her attacks grew even more ferocious.

"Bang~~~"

Suddenly, an explosion sounded from Hong Xi's body. Hong Xi's instrument to pass on his lineage had actually exploded.

"Ahhh!!!!" At that moment, Hong Xi screamed even more miserably. Tears were even rolling out of his eyes.

It was not only him, all of the men present felt a pain in their lower parts upon seeing that scene.

At that moment, they all had the same sort of opinion. That is, one must not harass a beauty like that.

The reason for that was because if they were to encounter a celestial fairy-like beauty who was actually a ruthless demoness, they would definitely end up in the same sort of miserable state as Hong Xi.

"Damned bitch! You actually destroyed my little brother! I'll kill you! I'll kill you!!!" Hong Xi snarled with grief.

He knew very well that Eggy had used a special method to destroy his partner. Thus, his partner was completely destroyed. No matter what he did, he would not be able to restore it.

Not to mention that he would soon die, even if he were to somehow survive this ordeal, he would still not be able to pass on his lineage for the rest of his life.

As a man, as a male lizard, that was something that he could not accept.

“It would seem that the lesson that I gave you is still insufficient. In that case, I shall let you experience how frightening Asura is.”

Eggy smiled coldly. The coldness in her eyes grew stronger. Then, black gaseous flames began to appear from the black claw. The black gaseous flames were like sharp blades as they dug into Hong Xi’s body.

“Ahhh!!!” Under such a situation, Hong Xi’s screams grew more and more miserable. Hearing his screams, the bystanders felt their blood run cold.

Even though the crowd did not know exactly what those black gaseous flames that entered Hong Xi’s body were doing, they were certain that they could not imagine what sort of pain Hong Xi was suffering right now.

At that moment, many people started to sigh. Hong Xi had tortured people his entire life. Yet now, he ended up being tortured by another instead.

However, Eggy remained quite humane toward Hong Xi. After she tore apart Hong Xi’s body and refined his source energy all while he was still alive, she killed Hong Xi.

Actually, after Eggy refined his source energy, even if she didn’t kill him, Hong Xi would not be able to survive.

After ruthlessly killing Hong Xi, Eggy happily returned to Chu Feng’s world spirit gate. She did not bother to stay outside.

However, at that moment, the bystanders were all stunned. At that moment, the surroundings were absolutely silent. It was so quiet that it was frightening.

One-Lb(In

It was not that the people here did not wish to speak. Rather, they were truly scared after seeing Egg's ruthlessness and overwhelming might. They feared that Egg might start to dislike them and then leave them in a state the same as Hong Xi.

Asura. The legendary Asura World Spirit. Today, they had finally experienced one.

At this moment, they all understood why Asura World Spirits were said to be the most powerful and ruthless existences among the Seven Spirit Worlds.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you have truly broadened my horizons!!!" At the moment when the crowd were all stunned, Elder Liu Chengkun walked toward Chu Feng in midair. He had an excited expression on his face.

"It is all thanks to senior today. Else, I fear that I, Chu Feng, would have met my end here," Chu Feng clasped his fist to express his thanks. After what happened here today, Chu Feng had an extremely good impression of Liu Chengkun.

Liu Chengkun sighed. "Speaking of it, I am ashamed. Little friend Chu Feng never needed my assistance. However, I insisted on getting involved. I am truly ashamed," Elder Liu Chengkun said with an ashamed expression.

The way he saw it, with how powerful Chu Feng's world spirit was, even if he had not involved himself, Chu Feng would have still been able to kill Hong Xi. Instead, it was because he insisted on involving himself that he ended up delaying Chu Feng from killing Hong Xi.

"Senior, if it wasn't for you buying time for me, I would not have been able to defeat Hong Xi," Chu Feng said.

Liu Chengkun's expression changed. Curiously, he asked, "Oh? Why is that?"

"It is hard to explain with few words. Senior, let's leave this place first. I will slowly explain things to you after," Chu Feng said.

"Very well, let's go," Liu Chengkun nodded his head repeatedly. Then, his body shifted as he entered the void.

Chu Feng also entered the void and the two of them began to journey in the shadows to quickly leave that place.

“Heavens! Exactly who is that Chu Feng? How could he be so powerful?”

“Powerful, too powerful. He simply does not need to do anything. Merely a single world spirit of his was able to kill the renowned Hong Xi. One must know that Hong Xi is a Vice Pavilion Master of Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Isn’t that Asura World Spirit too frightening? She was clearly only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. How was it that she was able to kill a rank one Martial Ancestor?”

“Her heaven-defying battle power is truly too ridiculous. Wouldn’t this mean that she possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, more powerful than the people of the Heavenly Clans?”

“Four levels of cultivation? No, it should be more. Else, how could she kill Hong Xi that easily? The way I see it, she must have a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.”

After Chu Feng and Liu Chengkun left, the people present were like freed horses. Immediately, they let loose all their emotions and started to let their tongues run wild.

They had to speak and unleash all the words that they had contained in their stomach, and all the shock they had felt in their hearts. Else, they would stifle themselves ill.

The reason for that was because what had happened had truly broadened their horizons. Likely, they would remember a name for the rest of their lives. As for that name, it would be Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, he was also overjoyed right now. Eggy’s strength was too powerful. Even though she only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, rank one Martial Ancestors were simply unable to withstand Eggy at all.

Thus, even though Eggy was only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng felt that she would be able to fight against even rank two Martial Ancestors.

A rank six Half Martial Ancestor capable of fighting against a rank two Martial Ancestor? Likely, no one would believe that something like that was possible. After all, it was truly too heaven-defying.

“Milady Queen, exactly what sort of origin do you possess? Are you the only one that’s this powerful? Or could it be... that all of the Asura World Spirits are as powerful as you?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

[1.Xima: ... Feng’er, why didn’t you have Egggy wipe out everyone else and take in their source energy? That might have been enough for egggy to become rank 7...

YWL: Anyone below rank 9 HMA are killed already by Liu Chengkun. No idea how many rank 9 HMA there are and why Chu Feng didn’t kill them.]

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

### **Chapter 2197 - Not Killed By Me**

Egggy curled her lips and said, “You wish to know? Well, that’s simple. You merely need to summon a couple more Asura World Spirits. Wouldn’t that solve the problem then?”

“Forget about it. What use is there in summoning that many world spirits? Egggy, you alone are enough for me,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you serious or are you lying?” Egggy said with an expression of disbelief. However, she had a slightly delighted expression in her eyes.

“Of course it’s real. You are enough for me, my treasured Egggy,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Pah, enough of trying to take small advantages of me. Call me Queen,” Egggy said.

“Yes, Milady Queen,” Chu Feng hurriedly said.

“That’s more like it,” Egggy smiled sweetly. It could be seen that her mood was very good.

“Egggy, after refining a rank one Martial Ancestor, did you manage to make any progress in your cultivation?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Rank one Martial Ancestor? That guy’s actual cultivation was only that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Although rank nine Half Martial Ancestors

might appear to be decent, they are simply unable to increase this Queen's cultivation at all. After all, I killed him that easily. Thus, how could he possibly be able to help me increase my cultivation?"

"If you want me to increase my cultivation, you must seize the moment to quickly increase your cultivation. Only with you becoming stronger will I be able to become stronger. You don't want me to protect you all the time, right?" Eggy said with a beaming smile.

"Of course," Chu Feng nodded. Indeed, he did not want Eggy to protect him all the time. Instead, he wanted to protect her.

"Well then, concentrate on your journey, and chat with that old man a bit more. This Queen is going to rest now," After Eggy finished saying those words, she laid down in the world spirit space.

"Rest well," Although Eggy had gone to rest and refused to continue to chat with Chu Feng, the smile on Chu Feng's face did not decrease in the slightest.

The sensation of Her Lady Queen being here was completely different to the sensation of her not being here. As long as Her Lady Queen was there, Chu Feng's heart would not feel empty.

Actually, what Chu Feng had said to Her Lady Queen was said with sincerity. It was not that Chu Feng did not possess the capability to summon more world spirits. On the contrary, as long as he wished to summon more, not to mention a couple, even several hundreds of thousands would be of no issue to him.

However, Chu Feng did not wish to do that. After all, everyone knew that world spirits needed to refine source energies in order to increase their cultivation in this world. As for obtaining source energies, one must enter a path of constant killing.

Chu Feng would not go and kill people for no reason or cause. Killing powerful experts would be difficult. As for killing weak people, the world spirits would not be able to gain much of a benefit should he do that.

Thus, even though he only had a single Eggy, it was already very difficult for him to support her needs. If he were to summon more world spirits, there would be a problem when the time came to distribute the source energies



after killing people. As Chu Feng did not wish to treat Eggy unfairly, he wanted to give her all of the source energies.

However, if he were to summon more world spirits, it would be unwise for him to be too prejudiced. As such, Chu Feng decided that he might as well not summon any more.

Apart from that, there was another reason. Chu Feng felt that even though they might all be Asura World Spirits, they would likely be inferior to Eggy in terms of strength.

His mother had spent meticulous effort to seal only Eggy and that Xue Ji in his body. There was most definitely a reason for that.

Thus, rather than summoning world spirits inferior to Eggy, Chu Feng felt that he might as well not summon any world spirits.

It was just like Chu Feng's Five Elements Secret Skills. Should the Five Elements Secret Skills be summoned, they would come out with cultivations one level above Chu Feng's.

For example, Chu Feng was currently a rank two Half Martial Ancestor. Should he summon the Five Elements Secret Skills, they would come out as five rank three Half Martial Ancestors.

While this might make them appear to be more powerful than Chu Feng, it was actually not the case.

Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. With his cultivation of rank two Half Martial Ancestor, he would be able to easily kill rank five Half Martial Ancestors and even fight against rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

That was the power of his Heavenly Bloodline. Everyone with a Heavenly Bloodline possessed that heaven-defying strength.

However, the Five Elements Secret Skills were different. At the Half Martial Ancestor level, they did not possess any heaven-defying battle power that surpassed other Half Martial Ancestors. At the very most, they would only be able to fight against experts of their same level of cultivation. In fact, they might not necessarily be able to defeat those experts.

After all, no matter how strong they might be, they remained merely Secret Skills, whereas their opponents were actual martial cultivators.

Thus, at that moment, the Five Elements Secret Skills were only able to provide Chu Feng with an undying and indestructible body against those with a relatively same level of battle power as him. They had practically no use in actual battle.

Right at that moment, Elder Liu Chengkun who was traveling together with Chu Feng suddenly said, "Chu Feng, your Asura World Spirit is extremely powerful."

"Although her cultivation is not as strong as the Asura World Spirit I met before, for her to be able to kill Hong Xi that easily, her heaven-defying battle power is definitely at least capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, or even five levels of cultivation."

"As for the Asura World Spirit I saw before, he only had a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation."

"Senior Liu, you've met other Asura World Spirits before?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"I have. This old man was fortunately able to see an Asura World Spirit once. That Asura World Spirit was released by a certain Upper Realm's world spiritist, and was extremely powerful."

"However, I feel that you will one day become a world spiritist even more powerful than him. The reason for that is because you have your cultivation at such a young age. I have never seen someone as powerful as you at your age."

"Furthermore, your world spirit is also more powerful than that Asura World Spiritist's world spirit. At the very least, her battle power surpasses that of the other world spirit."

"Thus, I feel that your future accomplishments will definitely surpass that world spiritist's. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will not be able to contain you," Liu Chengkun said.

'Sure enough, Milady Queen is extraordinary,' Chu Feng smiled a brighter smile. What Liu Chengkun said had already verified Chu Feng's guess.

Among Asura World Spirits, Eggy was an existence more powerful than normal.

At that moment, the sweet voice of Her Lady Queen, who had clearly stated that she would be going to rest, suddenly sounded once again, “Never would I have expected that there would be Asura World Spiritists here too. Doesn’t this mean that I will have the chance to fight against the fellows of our Asura Spirit World again?”

“That’s true. I also wish to experience how powerful Asura World Spiritists might be,” Chu Feng said in anticipation.

As they spoke, Chu Feng and Elder Liu Chengkun arrived at a mountain range. This mountain range was not very large. However, both the mountain range and the surrounding several tens of miles were completely uninhabited.

However, hidden in the mountain range was an underground palace. Without even Liu Chengkun saying anything, Chu Feng already knew that this must be the Red Butterfly Society’s territory.

Merely, there was actually not a single person in the underground palace. It was as if this place was already abandoned.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, three figures suddenly flew out from the depths of the underground palace. n--Ovel**B**In

The person leading the group was a yellow-haired man. Chu Feng had met him before. He was also someone from the Red Butterfly Society. Back then, that man had used special methods to conceal his cultivation. However, he did not do so today. Thus, Chu Feng was able to sense that he was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Although his strength was inferior to Liu Chengkun’s, he was still extremely powerful.

As for the other two individuals, they were Tang Ying and her servant girl, A’cai.

Earlier, when Tang Ying and A’cai had escaped, Liu Chengkun had secretly dispatched his men to receive them. As for the person who had received them, it was that yellow-haired man.

Upon seeing Chu Feng, Tang Ying and A'cai both revealed pleasantly surprised smiles. Evidently, neither one of them had expected that Chu Feng would be able to survive.

"I pay my respects to Lord Elder!!!" After that yellow-haired man approached them, he immediately greeted Liu Chengkun respectfully. Then, he turned to Chu Feng and greeted him respectfully too, "It is a pleasure to meet you, little friend Chu Feng."

"Senior, you are being too courteous," Chu Feng hurriedly returned his greeting. He was able to tell that this yellow-haired man was much older than him. He, too, was someone who had lived for thousands of years.

"Chu Feng, let me introduce him to you. He is called Huang Luo. He is one of our Red Butterfly Society's elders," Liu Chengkun introduced.

"Chu Feng pays his respects to Senior Huang," Chu Feng clasped his fist again.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please don't. I, Huang Luo, am unable to bear your respect," Huang Luo laughed. It could be seen that he had a very good impression of Chu Feng. Else, he would not be this courteous.

"Lord Elder, it seems that you've succeeded in killing that Hong Xi?!" Huang Luo asked with an excited expression.

"He has indeed been killed. However, he was not killed by me. Instead, it was little friend Chu Feng who killed him," Liu Chengkun said.

"What?" Hearing those words, not to mention Huang Luo, even Tang Ying and A'cai revealed stunned expressions.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2198 - Not Wanting To Become A Burden**

"You all must still not know that little friend Chu Feng is an Asura World Spiritist, right?" Liu Chengkun said to the three people with a smile on his face.

“Asura World Spiritist?!!!” Sure enough, after hearing those words, Huang Luo, Tang Ying and A’cai were all startled.

If it were someone else that said those words, the three of them would definitely not believe it. However, Liu Chengkun was not someone who joked around. Thus, all of them believed him.

However, they still found it difficult to believe. After all, Asura World Spiritists were so very rare.

“Chu Feng, you’re too amazing, no? You’re actually an Asura World Spiritist? Why didn’t you mention it sooner?!” Tang Ying was wild with joy. She already knew that Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. However, she did not know that he was an Asura World Spiritist too.

One must know that Asura World Spiritists were no small matter. For example, if there were two Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, the value of the one that was an Asura World Spiritist would greatly surpass that of the other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“You never asked me about it,” Chu Feng smiled lightly.

“But, even if little friend Chu Feng is an Asura World Spiritist, it shouldn’t be possible for him to have defeated Hong Xi. Could it be that little friend Chu Feng, you’re concealing your cultivation?” Huang Luo asked curiously.

“You’re mistaken. Little friend Chu Feng’s Asura World Spirit is extremely powerful. With merely that one world spirit, little friend Chu Feng killed Hong Xi.”

“Furthermore, Hong Xi simply did not have the ability to fight back,” Liu Chengkun explained.

“Ssssss~~~!!!!”

Hearing those words, the three individuals were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

From what Elder Liu Chengkun said, they were already able to tell that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat Hong Xi by himself, and that it was Chu Feng’s world spirit that had killed Hong Xi.

However, generally, one's world spirits would always be weaker than oneself. At the very most, they would possess the same level of cultivation as their master.

However, Chu Feng's world spirit was actually even more powerful than him. This indirectly showed that Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were very strong. Else, how could he possibly be able to control a world spirit more powerful than himself?

"Tang Ying, A'cai, what do you two plan to do? Are you planning to leave this place of troubles, or do you two plan to join the Red Butterfly Society?" Chu Feng asked Tang Ying. He had actually only followed Liu Chengkun here for Tang Ying's sake.

"Join the Red Butterfly Society?" Hearing those words, Tang Ying and A'cai's eyes shone.

"I have consulted with Senior Liu. As long as the two of you are willing, the Red Butterfly Society is willing to offer shelter to you two," Chu Feng said.

"That is indeed the case. If you two are willing, our Red Butterfly Society shall become your home," Liu Chengkun nodded.

"Thank you, Senior, for your kind intentions. Also, thank you Chu Feng. However, the two of us really do not wish to trouble you all any further."

"Especially you, Chu Feng. We are but mere strangers that have only known one another for a short period of time. Yet, you've already saved me countless times. Furthermore, after you clearly instructed me that I must quickly leave this place, I still allowed myself to be captured by Hong Xi, and ended up implicating you. I truly..." As she spoke to that point, Tang Ying had an expression of guilt.

"Do not mention the things of the past anymore. Don't forget, we are friends. Furthermore, I am your bodyguard," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Chu Feng, thank you. You are the best person I, Tang Ying, have ever met in my life. However, I truly do not wish to trouble you anymore," Tang Ying said.

"In that case, it seems that you plan to bring A'cai far away from here?" Chu Feng already understood Tang Ying's decision.

“Mn,” Tang Ying nodded.

“If that’s the case, I’ll help change your appearances again. Remember, this time around, you must get further away from here,” Chu Feng said. Last time around, he had already altered Tang Ying’s appearance before parting with her. However, she was still captured by Hong Xi. Furthermore, her appearance was also transformed back.

Thus, this time around, Chu Feng prepared to take his time altering her appearance so that even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to see through her altered appearance.

“Chu Feng, change our appearances to ones that are more ordinary,” Tang Ying said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed. Although Tang Ying could not be considered to be an absolute beauty, she was still very good-looking. Even A’cai was quite good-looking.

As the saying goes, everyone loves beauty. As for women, it was even more so for them.

Yet, Tang Ying actually voiced such a request. This meant that she was truly prepared to live the rest of her life ordinarily.

“Okay then,” In the end, Chu Feng nodded his head. Then, he began to alter Tang Ying and A’cai’s appearances. Chu Feng was extremely meticulous this time around. Even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to see through their altered appearances.

Merely, the current appearance of the two girls was inferior to even a tenth of their original appearances. Chu Feng felt very sorry to look at them.

This was especially true for Tang Ying. After all, she was the Young Miss of the Tang Family, someone who had possessed both status and wealth before. She used to be blessed. Unfortunately... people were unpredictable.

“Chu Feng, thank you,” After seeing their altered appearances, neither Tang Ying or A’cai felt any sense of loss. Instead, they were very happy.

After all, to the two of them, this was equivalent to a chance for them to be reborn.

“Let’s go. I’ll see you two off,” Chu Feng said. He was still worried for Tang Ying and A’cai. Thus, he wished to personally escort them far away from the area controlled by Luyang’s Pavilion.

“Chu Feng, I truly do not wish to trouble you anymore,” Tang Ying shook her head. She added, “Let us leave alone.”

“Since that’s the case, allow me to see you two off then,” Huang Luo said.

“There’s no need, truly no need. I do not wish to trouble everyone. After all, I am also a martial cultivator. I was born into this dangerous world of martial cultivation. You all will be able to protect me for the time being, but will not be able to protect me forever. Let us leave by ourselves. It is also time for me to mature,” Tang Ying said.

Hearing Tang Ying saying it like that, Liu Chengkun and Huang Luo didn’t know what to say. The two of them both looked to Chu Feng. After all, Tang Ying... was Chu Feng’s friend.

“Very well. Tang Ying, A’cai, the two of you must take care of yourselves,” Chu Feng did not force Tang Ying.

“Chu Feng, seniors, I will forever remember your assistance to us. Farewell,” After saying those words, Tang Ying and A’cai both bowed to Chu Feng, Liu Chengkung and Huang Luo respectively.

Chu Feng and the others did not refuse them. They all knew that Tang Ying had a knot in her heart. Doing this would instead make her feel more comfortable.

After that, Tang Ying and A’cai left. Even though Tang Ying was hiding her state of mind, Chu Feng was still able to tell that she was feeling very reluctant to part.

She was reluctant, yet she still insisted on leaving. The reason for that was because she did not wish to become Chu Feng’s burden.

“Seniors, thank you two for your help today. I, Chu Feng, am unable to return the favor of your assistance today. Please accept these Incomplete Ancestral Armaments,” Chu Feng took out four Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. They were the weapons from the Tang Family’s Family Head, the Cao Family’s Family Head, Elder Yuan Zhen and that Hong Xi.



“Chu Feng, it is actually you who saved me today. I absolutely cannot accept those,” Liu Chengkun refused.

“Senior, we are but strangers who met by chance. Yet, you were willing to brave fatal danger to your life to rescue me. If you do not accept these, I, Chu Feng, will feel always feel uncomfortable,” Chu Feng said.

“If that really is the case, then you really do not have to do this. Little friend Chu Feng, I merely have a single request for you,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Senior, please speak,” Chu Feng said.

“Could you join our Red Butterfly Society?” Liu Chengkun said.

“...” Chu Feng revealed a difficult expression upon hearing those words. He really did not wish to join any power, because he possessed hidden difficulties.

“Haha, little friend Chu Feng, do not take it to heart. I was merely joking,” Seeing Chu Feng’s difficult expression, Liu Chengkun started to laugh as if he was joking.

However, as he laughed, Liu Chengkun’s complexion suddenly changed. Then, his mouth opened wide, and he sprayed out a mouthful of blood. The blood landed directly onto Chu Feng.

After vomiting that mouthful of blood, Liu Chengkun’s body started to twitch violently. Soon, he lost consciousness. However, even though he had lost consciousness, his body was still twitching nonstop.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2199 - Accidental Discovery**

“Senior!!!” Upon seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly set up a healing formation. He had Liu Chengkun lay onto the healing formation, and then began to infuse his spirit power into Liu Chengkun’s body to diagnose and heal him.

“Dang! That old man is truly too tired of living. You have merely refused him once more. Yet, he actually decided to mutilate himself?” Eggy said in a very surprised manner.

“No, he is not self-mutilating, nor is he injured. Rather, he is ill,” Chu Feng said.

“Ill?” Hearing those words, Eggy’s expression changed. She did not understand why Liu Chengkun would be ill all of a sudden.

“Yes, he is indeed ill. Furthermore, he is extremely ill. This should be a relapse of his illness,” After Chu Feng said those words, he grew silent, and started to set up another spirit formation to help Liu Chengkun treat his illness.

The spirit formation he set up this time around was very powerful. Chu Feng even added a lot of rare healing medicinal herbs into his spirit formation. He was planning to use that spirit formation to treat Liu Chengkun’s illness.

Unfortunately, that illness was truly too difficult to cure. It took an entire day and night of effort for Chu Feng to stabilize Liu Chengkun’s illness.

However... he had only managed to stabilize it. Chu Feng was shocked to discover that he was simply unable to cure Liu Chengkun’s illness. In fact, he was incapable of even helping Liu Chengkun regain consciousness.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you are truly amazing. Even our Society President needed at least two days and night to stabilize Elder Liu’s illness. Never would I have expected that you would be able to stabilize his illness in a single day,” Huang Luo stepped forward and said to Chu Feng.

“In that case, you all already know of Senior Liu’s illness?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I will not conceal this from you. What Elder Liu has is an incurable disease. Only Immortal-cloak World Spiritists would be able to treat his illness.”

“However, even for Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, they must still treat him on a daily schedule. Furthermore, they must continue to do so for an entire year in order to cure his illness.”

“For existences like Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, how could they possibly be willing to spend an entire year to treat the illnesses of people like us? That is why Elder Liu’s illness could be said to be an incurable disease.”

“In fact, Elder Liu’s illness has already entered the terminal stage. He will not be able to continue to live for much longer.”

“That is also the reason why his illness relapsed so quickly. His situation is truly becoming more and more unstable,” Huang Luo said in succession.

After knowing about that matter, Chu Feng’s heart sunk. Even though Chu Feng had not known Liu Chengkun for long, he greatly admired Liu Chengkun and felt indebted to him.

Upon thinking that a good man like him would not be able to live for long because of his illness, Chu Feng felt truly unreconciled.

“Chu Feng, it is actually not a coincidence that we appeared at the Tang Family. Rather, Elder Liu deliberately brought me there with him.”

“He had received the news, and deduced that you might go to save Tang Ying. That is why he wanted to help you.”

“Elder Liu truly thought very highly of you. He deeply hoped that you would be able to join our Red Butterfly Society. He even declared that it was the loss of our Red Butterfly Society for you to refuse to join us.”

“At the same time, he also declared that even if you were to refuse to join our Red Butterfly Society, he still did not wish for a talent like you to fall at the hands of Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Speaking of it, I am ashamed. After Elder Liu made that decision, I even urged him not to bear dangers because of you.”

“The reason for that was because I am very certain that even Elder Liu would not have certainty in being able to defeat Hong Xi. Merely... he refused to listen to my advice.”

“Thus, Chu Feng, Elder Liu was truly prepared to sacrifice himself to help you before he even left for the Tang Family,” Huang Luo said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt even more unwell.

“Chu Feng, I can tell that you are a passionate person. I also know that you will definitely feel uncomfortable after knowing about all this.”

“However, you actually do not have to feel too uncomfortable. The reason Elder Liu was willing to sacrifice himself for you is also because of the fact that he knew he would not be able to live for long.”

“Rather than being tormented to death by his illness, he was more willing to die with meaning. To him, dying to save you was something very meaningful,” Huang Luo said.

“Senior, you don’t have to say it like that. Since you said that his illness is curable by Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, it means that Senior Liu will not necessarily die,” Chu Feng said.

“While it is true that Immortal-cloak World Spiritists will be able to cure him, and we have also attempted to find him an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to heal him. But...!” Huang Luo did not finish his words, and started to sigh.

Chu Feng was actually trying to tell Huang Luo that he would one day become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. If Liu Chengkun was still alive then, he would be willing to treat Liu Chengkun’s illness.

Merely, Chu Feng did not wish to boast. After all, he was not yet an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. He also did not know how long it would take for him to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. That was the reason why he did not say those things.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the underground palace suddenly started to shake. A large motion came from the surface above.

“Crap! Could it be that people from Luyang’s Pavilion have pursued us here?” Huang Luo’s expression immediately changed.

“Senior Huang, wait here first. I’ll go out and have a look,” As Chu Feng spoke, he flew out of the underground palace. After concealing his aura, he soared into the sky.

Merely, after he soared into the sky and looked to the mountain forest down below, Chu Feng was unable to find any trace of people from Luyang’s Pavilion. In fact, he did not even discover any destruction to the mountain below.

Unable to find anything, Chu Feng decided to cast his gaze toward the direction where the quake originated from.

“That is?”

After using his Heaven's Eyes to observe his surroundings, Chu Feng was shocked to discover that a soft light had appeared at the location where the quake had originated from.

That light was very beautiful. However, he was only able to see it when using his Heaven's Eyes.

"That light is strange. I did not see it before I coming here. It is definitely man-made."

Chu Feng was unable to determine what that light was. However, he wanted to go and investigate it. Thus, he hid himself in the void, then began to carefully proceed toward the location that the light covered.

Finally, Chu Feng entered the location covered by the light. It was a lake in the mountain range.

That light invisible to the naked eye was covering the entire lake.

After entering the lake, the light grew more and more concentrated.

Inside the dense concentration of light, Chu Feng's spirit power actually lost its effectiveness. Likewise, his Heaven's Eyes also lost their effect.

"Could it be a treasure?"

At that moment, Chu Feng had a faint sensation that the light should be coming from some sort of treasure. Else, it would be impossible for it to isolate his spirit power and even his Heaven's Eyes' power of observation.

Although Chu Feng was unable to determine what sort of treasure it was, Chu Feng was certain that it was most definitely not caused by the people from Luyang's Pavilion.

'Who came here?'

'Who used this sort of treasure?'

'What is their intention? Could it be that there are treasures in the lake?'

With many questions in his mind, Chu Feng continued onward. However, the further he proceeded, the less Chu Feng could see.

In the end, Chu Feng was only able to see things within ten meters of him. For everything more than ten meters away, he could only see indistinct shadows.

In such a situation, Chu Feng did not dare to be careless. Although he had concealed his aura, he decided that he would take out his Magma Emperor Sword. After concealing the light emitted by the blazing Magma Emperor Sword, he proceeded onward even more carefully.

Chu Feng had a sensation that he was growing closer and closer to that treasure.

Finally, Chu Feng saw an indistinct silhouette. It was growing closer and closer, closer and closer. Finally, that silhouette came within ten meters of Chu Feng's line of sight.

"Sssss!!!"

Upon seeing that figure, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

He saw a woman. She was very beautiful. Although her beauty could not compare to Eggy's, she was definitely not someone that Tang Ying could compare with.

Her straight and lifted nose, her lush and soft lips, and that sexy oval face. It could be said that this woman's facial features were extremely good.

no ve(lb)In

Furthermore, in addition to her exquisite facial features, that woman also had an extremely good figure. She had curves all at the right places. It could be said that she possessed a demon-like figure.

Furthermore, that woman's skin was extremely good. Not only was her skin fair like snow, her skin was also sparking and translucent like a pearl.

Most importantly, such a beauty was actually wearing nothing right now.

Just like that... completely naked, she appeared before Chu Feng's line of sight.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to.**

**There will be early access to future chapters :).**

## **Chapter 2200 - Free Treatment**

She didn't seem to be bathing. Rather, it seemed like she was treating her injuries. The reason for that was because she was sitting in the water with her legs crossed. Surrounding her was a spirit formation. Furthermore, her eyes were tightly closed. Only her long eyelashes were trembling slightly.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, that woman's tightly closed eyes suddenly opened. When she saw Chu Feng, she immediately revealed an astonished expression.

Evidently, she was startled. However, immediately after that, her shock and astonishment were replaced with killing intent.

“Drop dead!!!”

Seeing Chu Feng, the woman shot forth a fist strike. As Chu Feng was within ten meters of her, that strike arrived instantly.

Rank one Half Martial Ancestor. This woman's age should be about the same as Chu Feng's. However, she possessed the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. That sort of strength at her age was truly not weak at all.

Furthermore, she possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. In other words, even though she was only a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, she actually possessed the strength of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Merely, although her strength was very strong for someone of her age, she could not be considered very strong for Chu Feng.

At the very least, she was simply unable to injure Chu Feng.

“Crash~~~”

With a single thought from Chu Feng, the incoming fist's power was neutralized.

“It was an accident,” After Chu Feng said those words, he immediately flew away and distanced himself from the lake.

Chu Feng had wanted to leave to avoid the problem. However, he kept feeling that it was inappropriate for him to do that. After all, he had managed to see a young girl's naked body.

Whether he did it intentionally or not, it remained that he owed her for seeing her naked body. As such, Chu Feng decided to stand at the surface of the lake and wait for the woman to appear.

“Buzz~~~”

Sure enough, the multicolored sunset-like light began to rush toward the lake. Soon, it completely disappeared.

“Splatter~~~”

Following that, a wave surged into the sky, and a figure appeared before Chu Feng.

It was that woman. She was wearing clothes now. Her long light green skirt made her resemble a spirite.

However, for some unknown reason, even though this woman was already wearing clothes, her completely naked appearance kept appearing in Chu Feng’s mind as he saw her.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, a sharp sword appeared in the woman’s hand. That sword was only a meter long. It was also light green in color. However, once the sword appeared, a boundless might appeared alongside it. That was not an ordinary sword. Rather, it was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Even if you are to use your Incomplete Ancestral Armament, you will still be no match against me. How about we solve this peacefully?” Chu Feng said.

“Bastard sex fiend, tell me your name!” That woman pointed her sword at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

“Sex fiend? I think you’re mistaken here. I did not look at you on purpose.”

“Furthermore, if I were truly a sex fiend, would there be a need for me to escape? Your strength is inferior to my own. I am completely capable of raping you. As such, why must I only look at your naked body?” Chu Feng said.

“You!!!” Hearing those words, the woman’s face turned deep red. However, she seemed to feel that what Chu Feng said was not without reason.

“Enough of your quibbling. If you did not do so for the sake of seeing my naked body, why did you appear here?” The woman asked.



"I was resting in the mountain, it was you who caused the mountain to shake. I thought something happened, and thus stepped into the sky to check things out."

"After seeing the light, I felt that something was strange. Thus, I came here to investigate what was going on," Chu Feng explained.

"You can see the light?" The woman asked.

"Yes," Chu Feng nodded.

"Then, how did you manage to break through the layer of light?" The woman asked.

"Break through? There was simply no obstruction. Thus, how could there be a need to break through it?" Chu Feng said.

"What? You did not encounter the defensive spirit formation?" The woman asked.

"Evidently not," Chu Feng shrugged.

"That damned old fart. He actually dared to deceive me," Suddenly, the woman became furious. As she spoke, she took out a crystal ball and tossed it far away.

In response, Chu Feng extended his palm and caught the crystal ball.

"The twilight that could seal off spirit power was released by this crystal ball?" After inspecting the crystal ball carefully, Chu Feng asked the woman, "Where did you obtain this?"

"Why do you care? Return it to me," The woman extended her hand.

"You don't even want it anymore. Thus, since I've picked it up, it's mine now," Chu Feng said jokingly.

"Who said I didn't want it? I was merely playing with it by tossing it around," The woman quibbled.

In response, Chu Feng smiled. Then, he tossed the crystal ball back to the woman. He said, "That crystal ball is indeed capable of spreading out a fluctuation capable of stopping spirit power. However, it simply does not contain any defensive formation."

"Damned old fart, he indeed deceived me," After hearing what Chu Feng said, the woman grew even more furious, and began to gnash her teeth angrily. However, she still put the crystal ball away.

Suddenly, the woman's expression changed. It turned fiery red. It was as if she was broiling. At the same time, heat began to spread from her.

At the same time, her body became incomparably weak. It was as if she would die in the very next moment.

"Damn it," The woman immediately turned around and rushed back into the lake.

In response, Chu Feng started to frown. His gaze began to change. In the end, he also entered the lake. He had decided to follow the woman.

"Why are you following me? Have you not seen enough?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, the woman asked in a displeased manner.

"With your world spirit techniques, even if you were to strip yourself naked and soak in the lake, you would not be able to cure your illness. I, on the other hand, am able to help you," Chu Feng said.

What Chu Feng said was the truth. He had already managed to discern the change that was happening to the woman's body, and determined that she had a special sort of illness.

Chu Feng was able to associate her being naked in the water to a sort of healing technique.

Unfortunately, that woman's world spirit techniques were insufficient; she was merely an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. For a world spiritist of her level, it would be very difficult for her to cure her illness in a short period of time.

"You've actually managed to discern that I am ill?" The woman revealed an astonished expression. At the same time, she was on guard against Chu Feng.

"I accidentally saw your body earlier. However, I most definitely did not do that on purpose. If you wish to blame someone or something for it, you can only blame your lousy crystal ball."

"If you didn't use it to let out a light that only a world spiritist could see, I might not have been able to find you. However, as you have used it, it attracted me toward it."

"However, regardless of how it came to be, it remains that I have seen your body. Thus, I feel that I must apologize to you for it. Furthermore, as a compensation, I am willing to stabilize your illness for free," Chu Feng said.

“Enough of your nonsense. My illness is something only a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist or those above them would be able to stabilize in a short period of time,” The woman said.

“That’s why I can,” Chu Feng said.

“Liar. At your age, how could you possibly be a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” The woman revealed an expression of disbelief. In fact, she even felt deep contempt toward Chu Feng. She felt that Chu Feng was boasting.

“Do you believe me now?” With a thought from Chu Feng, a strand of Dragon Mark Royal-cloak spirit power was emitted from his body and started to spiral around him.

“You’re actually really a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?!” Upon seeing that, the woman’s eyes opened wide as she revealed an astonished expression.

“So, do you want me to help? If I am to help you, you will not have to undress. However, if you plan to rely on yourself, I’m afraid you’ll have to undress again. Furthermore, you will not be able to stabilize your illness in a short period of time.”

“Furthermore, with how things are with you now, you will not be able to leave this place, and must stay in the lake to treat your illness.”

“If someone is to pass by this place and see you like I did, I wouldn’t dare to guarantee that they would be a man of honor like myself, and not do anything to you,” Chu Feng said.

“You!!!”

“I’ll tell you this, I am the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Management Elder Su Jingrui’s personal disciple.”

“If you dare to do anything to me, I will have you suffer the consequences of your actions,” The woman threatened Chu Feng fiercely.

**Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. There will be early access to future chapters :).**